# 加爾文,《基督教要義》 選錄: 中英對照讀本

卷一

SELECTIONS FROM JOHN CALVIN, INSTITUTES OF THE CHRISTIAN RELIGION (1559):

## A BILINGUAL READER

**BOOK ONE** 

Samuel Ling 林慈信

China Horizon 中華展望 April 2010

卷一 BOOK ONE

# 認識上帝,創造主 THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOD THE CREATOR

## 目錄 CONTENTS

加爾文的生平與教訓 The Life and Teachings of John Calvin
智慧:認識上帝 WISDOM: KNOWLEDGE OF GOD
真智慧就是:認識上帝,認識自己 True Wisdom: Knowledge of God, Knowledge of Ourselves 1.1.1-3(1.1.1, 1.1.3 修譯) 對上帝的知識: 我們應當認識的: 如何榮耀上帝;知識就是敬虔 Knowledge of God: What is Right and Proper to Know Knowledge Conducive to Glory of God, Piety 1.2.1-2
人對上帝自然的認識: 都是愚拙(乏味) All Man's Own Thoughts About God Are Foolishness (without Savor) From 1.13.3 (重譯)
不要好奇猜測: 只有上帝真正認識祂自己 DO NOT SPECULATE OUT OF CURIOSITY: ONLY GOD KNOWS HIMSELF BY HIMSELF
人應當默想上帝的作為,不要好奇地猜測上帝的榮耀 Meditate on God's Works, Do Not Speculate on God's Glory From 1.5.9(重譯)
只有上帝才能靠自己認識自己: 我們只知道上帝所宣稱的,所啓示的 Only God Knows Himself By Himself; We Know God as He Reveals Himself to Us From 1.13.21(重譯)
不要超越《聖經》,作哲學探究必須謙虛;人的思想不能衡量無限; 只有上帝能靠自己認識自己,爲自己作見證 Don't Go Beyond Bible; Play Philosopher Moderately; Human Mind Cannot Measure the Measureless; Only God Knows Himself in Himself, Witnesses to Himself 1.13.21

上帝的本質是不可知的;我們藉著上帝的話認識祂 God's Essence is Incomprehensible; We Know God as He Declares Himself Through His Word 1.14.1 ......

### 宗教的種子,普遍啓示 SEED OF DIVINITY, GENERAL REVELATION

對上帝的認識表現在宇宙的構造與繼續管理中
The Knowledge of God Shines Forth in the Fashioning of the
Universe and the Continuing Government of It 1.5.1
人類都有上帝的意識;「宗教的種子」
Men Have Sense of Divinity; "Seed of Religion"
1.3.1 (部份重譯)
上帝的啓示到處可見;上帝從來不會沒有見證者
God's Revelation Can Be Seen Everywhere; God Is Never Without a
Witness – From Preface to Bible of Olivetan (新譯)
(WIHT)
人一睜開眼就能看見上帝在大自然的啓示
When Man Opens His Eyes, He Cannot But See God's Revelation in
Creation – From 1.5.1 (重譯)
Cication – From 1.5.1 (重译)
無 地 貝 不 可 45 bb
無神是不可能的
Godlessness Is Impossible From 1.3.3

#### 人類對普遍啓示的回應:盲目,偶像敬拜,哲學猜測 MANKIND'S RESPONSE TO GENERAL REVELATION: BLINDNESS, IDOLATRY, PHILOSOPHICAL SPECULATION

人類的邪惡,歪曲,無知,忽略上帝在創造的榮美;
上帝賜真知識給人,可是人須要聖靈的光照,僅靠自然是不夠
Mankind is Wicked, Perverted, Ignorant; Neglect Glory in Creation:
God Grants True Knowledge, but Man Needs Illumination by Spirit;
Nature Not Sufficient Comm. Acts 17:27
人的傾向(異教徒): 敬拜偶像 Man's Tendency (Pagans): Idolatry Comm. Rom. 1:22; Heb. 11:6; Sermon Deuteronomy(新譯)
異教徒所敬拜的,都是自己所想像的

The Pagans Worship Their Own Imaginations 申命記講道第 55 篇 55 <sup>th</sup> Sermon on Deuteronomy
人文: 哲學家有對上帝的認識的開端;哲學家不一致,使人混淆; 上帝給人關於祂的香氣;人無可推諉 Humanities: Philosophers Have Beginning of Knowledge of God; But Inconsistent, Confuse Men; God Gives Them Savor of Himself, They Have No Excuse; What They See = Far from Truth From 2.2.18(部份重譯)
我們了解的有限 The Limits of Our Understanding 2.2.18
墮落之後: 認識上帝的意志有所缺欠,上帝只能咒詛人; 人沒有能力來親近上帝;爲自己的無能負責 我們看見到處上帝的咒詛,是公義的;我們心思意念蒙蔽,看不見真理 After Fall: Will to Know God = Deprived; God But Curses Man; Man Cannot Approach God; Responsible for This Inability God's Curse = Everywhere: God Justly Disowns Us; Our Blind Minds Do Not Perceive What Is True 2.6.1
上帝已經在《聖經》中說話: 祂賜給我們《聖經》有祂的理由; 我們要勤讀《聖經》,認識上帝 GOD HAS SPOKEN IN THE BIBLE, HE GAVE US BIBLE FOR GOOD REASON: KNOW GOD THROUGH THE BIBLE
我們要勤讀《聖經》,認識上帝 GOD HAS SPOKEN IN THE BIBLE, HE GAVE US BIBLE FOR GOOD REASON:
我們要勤讀《聖經》,認識上帝 GOD HAS SPOKEN IN THE BIBLE, HE GAVE US BIBLE FOR GOOD REASON: KNOW GOD THROUGH THE BIBLE  上帝賜《聖經》給我們,爲要教導美好的教義,安慰我們,勸誡我們, 使我們完全行各樣善事;《聖經》造就我們,要我們信靠上帝, 敬畏祂,認識祂-取自《日內瓦聖經》序言 God Gave Bible to Teach Good Doctrine, To Comfort, Exhort Us to Do Good, Edify Us to Trust, Fear, Know God

認識上帝 = 領受《聖經》所教導的; 聖靈爲《聖經》作見證,印證在我們心中 Knowing = Receiving What Scripture Teaches; Spirit Bears Witness, Seals Scriptures in Our Hearts 1.7.4 ......

## 基督是《聖經》的中心;來認識祂; 聖靈爲《聖經》作見證 CHRIST IS CENTER OF SCRIPTURE: KNOW HIM:

SPIRIT AUTHENTICATES SCRIPTURE

基督乃是《聖經》的目的與中心;我們只在基督裏認識上帝; 因此,要在《聖經》裏尋找基督;不然,有學問也不能找到真理 Christ = Aim and Center of Scripture; We Know God Only in Christ; Find Christ in the Bible; Otherwise the Learned Cannot Find Truth Comm. John 5:39 (新譯)..... 因爲基督是神人之間唯一中保;因此: 在基督(鏡子)裏尋找上帝; 上帝只藉著祂兒子顯明自己 Christ is the Only Mediator between God and Man; Thus: Seek God in Christ (A Mirror); God Only Manifests Himself by Christ 4.8.5 (新譯)..... 如何認識上帝?讓《聖經》教導我們;用新心,信心讀《聖經》 How May We Know God? Be Taught by Scripture, with New Heart, By Faith 1.6.1 ..... 《聖經》就是上帝的話語 The Word as Holy Scripture 1.6.2 ..... 《聖經》是自我證實的 Scripture Bears Its Own Authentication 1.7.5 ..... 胡亂思想的人拒絕「聖靈」的名的教義; 聖靈要我們了解上帝的話,不是叫人藐視上帝的話 Fanatic Minds Reject Doctrine in Name of the Holy Spirit; The Holy Spirit Leads Us Not to Despise, but to Understand God's Word 徒 16: 14 注釋 Comm. Acts 16:14 (新譯).....

> 《聖經》的用詞,神學的用詞;三位一體的教義 WORDS USED IN THE BIBLE, WORDS USED IN THEOLOGY:

#### THE DOCTRINE OF THE TRINITY

上帝遷就我們,用人的言語,好像乳母與嬰孩講話 God Accommodates Us with Language, as Nurses Lisp to Babes 1.13.1
神格裏的三位格 The Three Persons in the Godhead 1.13.2
「三位一體」與「位格」等詞匯幫助我們解釋《聖經》,可以使用 The Expressions "Trinity" and "Person" Aid the Interpretation of Scripture, are Thus Admissible 1.13.3
教會認爲,用「三位一體」,「位格」等詞匯, 對於揭露假教師是必需的 The Church Has Regarded Expressions Like "Trinity," "Person," etc. as Necessary to Unmask False Teachers 1.13.4
神學名詞的限制與必需性 Limits and necessity of theological terms 1.13.5
最重要觀念的意義: 「位格」 The Meaning of the Most Important Conception: "Person" 1.13.6
位格的分辨:不是分開; 不僅是上帝的不同頭銜,不僅是講論上帝不同方法 聖子的屬性(生存形式)與聖父不同,有分別; 聖子在上帝裏的道,與父有別 Distinction of Persons: Not Divisions; Not Just Titles, Not Just Different Ways of Signifying God; Son's Attributes (Subsistence) = Distinct from Father; Son = Word in God, Other than Father 1.13.16-20
位格的分辨:不是分開;不僅是上帝的不同頭銜, 不僅是講論上帝不同方法 聖子的屬性(生存形式)與聖父不同,有分別; 聖子在上帝裏的道,與父有別 Distinction of Persons: Not Divisions, Not Just Titles, Not Just Different Ways of Signifying God; Son's Attributes (subsistence) = Distinct from Father, Son = Word of God, Other than Father 1.13.16
位格之間有分辨,但不是分開;子的本性與父不同: 子「與上帝同在」,「另一位「作見證;

上帝的榮耀非天使所有 God's Glory Does Not Belong to the Angels 1.14.10
上帝使用天使,不是爲祂自己,乃是爲我們 God Makes Use of the Angels, Not For His Own Sake, But For Ours 1.14.11
天使不可使我們偏離注目仰望上主 The Angels Must Not Divert Us from Directing Our Gaze to the Lord Alone 1.14.12
魔鬼是真的;牠們成全上帝的旨意 《聖經》先裝備我們抵擋仇敵 Devils Are Real, Serve Purpose of God: Scripture forearms us against the adversary 1.14.13
黑暗的權勢 The Realm of Wickedness 1.14.14
戰爭到底,不可鬆懈 An Irreconcilable Struggle 1.14.15
魔鬼是上帝創造的被造物,墮落敗壞 The Devil Is a Degenerate Creation of God 1.14.16
魔鬼服在上帝的權柄之下 The Devil Stands Under God's Power 1.14.17
默想上帝在祂所創造的宇宙中的良善,會領我們感謝祂,信靠祂 The Contemplations of God's Goodness in His Creation Will

#### 人論:人的靈魂,上帝的形像 DOCTRINE OF MAN: THE SOUL, THE IMAGE OF GOD

人是屬靈的活物;靈魂=不朽,被造,人裏較高貴的部份

靈魂不朽: 靈魂有自己的本質; 不僅是「氣」

或身體另加的「力量」;罪人有「不朽的意識」;能意識是非;

知道上帝;夢:不朽的證據

Man Is Spiritual Being; Soul = Immortal, Created, Nobler Immortality of the Soul: Soul Has Essence of Its Own; Not Just "Breath" or "Strengthened" Added to Body; Sinner Has "Sense of Immortality"; Is Conscious of Good and Evil; Knows God; Dreams – Evidence of Immortality 1.15.2
上帝在人裏面的形像與樣式 God's Image and Likeness in Man 1.15.3
上帝的形像的真相:從《聖經》教導, 上帝的形像在基督裏更新的教義 The True Nature of the Image of God Is to be Derived from What Scripture Says of Its Renewal through Christ 1.15.4
靈魂與它的官能 The Soul and Its Faculties 1.15.6
護理的教義:上帝掌管宇宙 THE DOCTRINE OF PROVIDENCE: GOD RULES OVER THE UNIVERSE
上帝以祂的權能保存並支持宇宙,又按祂的旨意統治宇宙的一切 創造與護理不可分開 God By His Power Nourishes and Maintains the World Created By Him, And Rules Its Several Parts By His Providence Creation and Providence Inseparably Joined 1.16.1
沒有命運,沒有偶然的事 There is No Such Thing as Fortune or Chance 1.16.2
護理的本質 The Nature of Providence 1.16.4
萬國的歷史: 上帝的護理;教會: 上帝特別的照顧,保守; 護理: 透過方法;不透過方法;違背方法 上帝的道路的意義 History of Nations; Providence; Church, God's Special Care; Providence; Through Means, Without Means, Against Means The meaning of God's ways 1.17.1

上帝的護理是信徒的安慰
God's providence as solace of believers
1.17.6
教會: 不是上帝最終護理的目標; 上帝才是最終護理的目標
Church: Not End of God's Providence; God Is The End
1.17.11
上帝的護理關乎選民,也關乎被遺棄的人;
撒但:在上帝掌管之下,按照上帝的預旨運作;
邪惡的勢力都在上帝的掌管之下: 對信徒的安慰
十八章 上帝利用惡人的行爲和心思執行祂的審判,
自己卻仍然純潔無瑕;上帝不僅僅容許事情發生
Providence Concerns the Reprobate as Well as the Elect
Satan – Under God's Command, Operates by God's Decree
Powers of Evil = At God's Command: Consolation to Believer
Chapter 18 – God so uses the works of the ungodly,
and so bends their minds to carry out his judgments,
that he remains pure from every stain; No mere "permission"!
1.18.1
上帝是公義的;惡人不會「順服」;他們違背上帝的吩咐;
就算上帝用無神者的作爲來成就祂的旨意,祂還是無可指責
God Is Just; The Wicked Do Not "Obey," But Violate God's Command;
Even when God uses the godless' deeds for his purposes,
he does not suffer reproach 1.18.4

#### 加爾文基督教要義卷 1-1

# 加爾文生平與思想和教訓

## 前言

十六世紀改教家,尤其是加爾文留給後人的正確教義,影響了許多追隨真理的信心偉人,十六世紀末的德國敬虔主義先驅及後繼人把宗教改革帶到了德國的最基層,與此同時,英國出現了清教徒運動,進一步擴大落實了宗教改革的教義,英國人中有不少信徒開始追求過聖潔的生活。英國在十八世紀還有一個注重靈命更新的遁道主義運動,十八世紀末和十九世紀初的福音派運動,可算是第四個更新的運動。以上四個更新運動的基礎都建基在宗教改革的教義上。而這改教運動的先賢之一約翰·加爾文隱藏自己於上帝榮耀中的忠心見證,也一直是激勵後人的美好證據。

加爾文雖然死了,但他仍然活著。他的肉體雖然於一五六四年五月廿七日死了,離開了世界與主同住,還沒有活到五十五歲,可是他在靈性上還是活著的,上帝在十六世紀早期興起了他,那時正值嚴重的危機。當日的教會非常敗壞無知,甚至不堪稱爲基督教會。人們雖然尊重《聖經》,但《聖經》對他們而言,幾乎等於未知之書。教會被人的繁文縟節給陷在泥淖中。迷信的習慣與靠行爲得救正在污染著福音。因信基督而得救之上帝的救恩被深埋在宗教死板的禮儀之下。當時所最急需的,就是一個大有信心勇敢的人,從教會中挺身而出領導會眾,重新恢復《聖經》的純潔教訓。這樣的人就是加爾文約翰。他不單向那個時代的人傳道,他的神學思想和著述也繼續不斷地影響著今天的時代,正如亞伯「雖然死了,卻因這信,仍舊說話」(來十一4)。

但對中國教會來說,大多對於加爾文的認識與研究可以說是鳳毛麟角。提起宗教改革,大家只知道路德馬丁。其實加爾文在宗教改革上所付出的貢獻是相當偉大。他所著的《基督教要義》成爲推動世界的十大名著之一。他寫此書時年方廿七歲,可真是上帝在當時所興起的一位偉大人才。他是第一流的《聖經》教師與傳道人。

近年來,許多忠於改革宗信仰的偉大的宣教師們在中國傳福音、培訓,更有全世界所有改革宗教會對中國的愛心奉獻與禱告,改革宗教會已在中國萌芽,純正的改革宗信仰即將在中國大復興。那改變了美國的加爾文主義也必將改變中國,那震動了整個蘇格蘭、英格蘭的正統神學,也將使中國教會歸正,回到上帝面前,回到《聖經》的原則中來事奉、榮耀上帝。

於此同時,中國已有許多學者及傳道人都想了解這位偉大的改教領袖加爾文的生平和有關他的一些情況,可是有關這方面的資料實在太少,譯成中文的更是寥寥無

幾,想知道他的個人見証實在甚難。所有搜集到有關他個人的資料都是從別人那裏 所了解的。我在讀書時也盡量注意,並盡力查找有關他的生平及見証,都無所獲, 而我所得到的,都是讓我更加注意他的教訓和他的思想著書,借此使我們更多的認 識上帝的偉大,也認識自己的渺小。本書是「加爾文的生平與教訓」,原著本爲 美國改革宗教會**布拉特**博士所寫,由趙中輝牧師親自翻譯,內容簡易,定能幫助 讀者了解加爾文的生平。我們並不是想推崇加爾文這個人,因爲他總是叫我們把上 帝放在第一位,把自己放在末後。他給當日的信息,對於我們今日的人仍有同樣的 意義,「他的話仍然活著」。祈求上帝能夠借著本書使讀者對加爾文有更深一層 的認識並能從他學習到上帝的真理。

宗教改革家,尤其是加爾文,提出一項重要的教義,即信徒「人人皆祭司」 的觀念。因而教會開始從中世紀的神職專權的窒息中走出來。這個教義論及上帝在 創造諸世界時賜給人一個特殊的地位,上帝也賜人思想和言語去宣揚上帝創造的榮 耀,人代表所有無言無語的受造之物表達對上帝的感恩。這一靈性亮光還引伸出一 個更高的屬靈素質,它回答了教會早期教父曾提出的問題,究竟怎**樣才是基督 徒**,在加爾文傳統看來,基督徒和世上的普通人表面上沒有什麼不同,但是由於 基督徒活現福音,在生活中實踐福音的本質,所以基督徒理當是最好的公民,最 好的商人,最好的水手,做最好的丈夫、妻子、父親、母親、主人、僕人……。因 此,十六世紀時,人們公認基督徒的道德行為是最高尚的,十七世紀一位上帝的僕 人亦說: **「我們就是掃地、打掃衛生間,也是為了上帝的榮耀。**」也正是由於這 種源自對上帝創造之奇妙的敬畏和感恩,為現代科學的發展建起了架構。

#### 加爾文的神學

#### 「加爾文主義五信條」的教義神學架構:

- 1、人全然敗壞不能自救,乃是聖靈使人重生,靠上帝所賜信心稱義。
- 2、無條件的揀選,上帝要憐憫誰,就憐憫誰:要恩待誰,就恩待誰,完全出於 上帝至尊無上的旨意。
- 3、**預定的救贖**,指基督代死的功勞足夠涵蓋全人類,但實際的果效卻是為「選 民 | (指蒙揀選的罪人)而設。
- 4、聖靈有效的恩召或不可抗拒的恩惠,指上帝的恩典絕對不失誤,凡他所預定 得救的人必定蒙恩。
- 5、**聖徒永遠得蒙保守**,指凡蒙揀選得救的聖徒必不會從恩典中失落;上帝的拯 救,從一而終,聖徒蒙全能上帝的大能保守,其救恩永遠不會失去。

所以整個救恩的過程(揀選、救贖、重生)都是上帝的工作,而且完全是出於上 帝的恩惠。因此,是上帝而不是人來決定誰將是接受救贖恩典的人。加爾文的神學 博大精深,絕非有限篇幅所能攬括,他屬靈質素的影響既深且廣,從他留給後人的 與當時代各階層人士以千計數的書信往來中可見一斑,乃至其一生傾注心血完成的 《要義》,在加爾文來說,他所寫的既是至關重要的神聖事業,就必須用最嚴謹的 辭語。我們容易從他的大小作品中領略到那份虔敬奧秘的氣質,難怪有人說他是一位卓越的「精通語言--上帝的語言和人的語言的人,他對於那為真理服務的語言的力量有著近乎絕對的信念,而他自己深深覺得其能力是建立於《聖經》的能力之上,認為神學家的任務在於闡揚及實行神的話語,加爾文因為有一種基本的、恆久的情感,正如他的朋友伯撒所說的,是一個具有對上帝完全奉獻之情感的人,所以他心靈活潑,立論有力,他把博覽群書的知識和奇異的記憶力都應用在他闡述弘揚永恆真理上,處處都彰顯上帝在他這樣一個讓卑隱藏自己的人身上之莫大榮耀。

#### 聖靈論

雖然他在《基督教要義》中未另闢一章節清楚說明他的聖靈論,但是從他的論述中可以知道他對聖靈工作的觀點。對加爾文來說,上帝的靈與上帝的工作同時進行,而促成人的「相信」,當聖靈在人心中運行光照人心,使人在讀了上帝的話而產生信心。所以人非用理性接受信仰,亦非用理性確認《聖經》的權威,而是聖靈那奧秘的力量所做的工作。[2]

#### 救贖預定論

雖然<u>救贖預定論</u> (Predestination) 是他倡導的神學遺產,但主要架構非他獨創或原創。就救贖預定論可分「<u>救贖</u>」及「<u>預定</u>」兩點來說。對於預定,加爾文認爲,得不得救在乎上帝的揀選,人的選擇在這件事上是毫無主權的。意即:上帝預定某些人得永生,某些人會滅亡。故上帝將救恩賜與會得永生的人,至於滅亡的人則任其滅亡。上帝的恩慈是爲了要見證祂的救贖,跟功德無關,也跟個人無關。與至於人們疑惑爲什麼有人不被揀選,他引用了<u>申命記</u>9:29:「隱密的事,是屬於<u>耶和華</u>我們的上帝,惟有顯明的事,是永遠屬我們和我們子孫的,好叫我們遵行這<u>律法</u>上一切的話。」他說人不會也不能質問上帝爲什麼施恩予人,那就不能問爲什上帝會棄絕某些人。屬上帝的心意人是無法明白,但對於拒絕<u>救恩</u>,人類依然需負責任。

至於救贖他發展了<u>馬丁·路德</u>所提出的『**因信稱義**』之論述。這個論點起初由<u>奧古斯丁</u>所提出,直到馬丁·路德時發展出「法庭式的稱義」。兩人不同在奧古斯丁認爲「義」是內在的,當上帝賜給人恩典時,「義」便成爲人的一部分。對馬丁·路德及加爾文而言,這「義」是屬外在的,是「算作」、「當作」、「歸給」,人依然是罪人,只是在人們因著信上帝就算我們「爲義」。<sup>[5]</sup>而加爾文更提出「雙重恩典」說,在上帝的眼中算爲義是恩典之一。第二個恩典則是:當人接受耶穌與基督聯合之時,信徒便可進入更新的過程,使其內在生命更像基督。<sup>[6]</sup>

#### 教會論

加爾文的<u>教會論</u>涵蓋非常廣,包括了<u>基督徒</u>的自由、<u>教會</u>的權柄、真教會的基本特質等,其中他所認爲真教會的特質應該包括了:「**傳揚上帝的道**」及「**遵行** 

**聖禮**」。所以傳福音、聆聽上帝的話及遵行<u>聖禮</u>都是十分重要的。聖禮的定義加爾文對聖禮的定義是:「上帝賜恩給我們的證據,是一種外在的印誌,和我們對祂的敬虔之互相印證,加以確認。」<sup>□</sup>

其中必要**聖禮**特別是指「**洗禮**」與「**聖餐**」。「<u>洗禮</u>」:加爾文認爲洗禮是基督徒的第一個聖禮,其意涵是加入教會的表記,好叫人們被接入<u>基督</u>,列爲上帝的兒女。加爾文非常反對私人洗禮。因爲他認爲洗禮與<u>聖餐</u>是教會的公共<u>聖職</u>,私人不可擅自施洗。且受洗者必須要先充分明白真理,才可施洗。

加爾文強調通過聖餐,使得信徒得以與基督連結。他並不重視餅跟杯,他主張「在聖靈裏耶穌基督身體真實的臨在」。也就是說,人在聖靈裏改變而體驗到耶穌基督的<u>臨在</u>,體驗到耶穌基督的身體與血。但是在領受聖餐時,必須傳揚上帝的道。所以對於當時天主教保留餅和杯,給生病無法前來的信徒或是王公貴族舉行私人<u>彌撒</u>,這些作法加爾文並不贊成。因為他認為不在<u>崇拜</u>及充分宣揚上帝的話之場合領受聖餐,是沒有意義的。

### 一、出生與早年時期

加爾文約翰於一五〇九年七月十日生於法國諾陽 (Noyon)。諾陽位於巴黎東北六十裏之遙,屬畢卡底省 (Picardy)。此爲富庶之區,因土地肥沃,氣候溫和,適宜於谷糧與菜蔬的生長。當加爾文出生時,路德馬丁已經年廿五歲了。在此時間上有上帝的安排護理。路德所作的是開荒工作,而加爾文則繼路德之後樹立抗羅宗的機構。加爾文的祖父是水手,其父 (Gerard Calvin) 由於刻苦努力,終於得到本城教會主教的書記之職。不但自己勤勉 (加爾文約翰即由其父所得的傳統,每日工作十六至十八小時,著書四十九卷),更對其子深具厚望。他第一件事就是要他的兒子們(對女兒們只要她們作家庭主婦)受相當的教育,因他目睹當日學校訓練的偉大價值,所以他爲他的三個兒子(包括約翰在內,是其中最聰慧的)都得到了「聖俸」(benefice),這是當時對學者的一種資助金。此助學金系由教會的主教處理,給予有希望爲聖工獻身的學者。加爾文的父親雖然克勤克儉,雄心大志,但可惜他有些利欲薰心,愛世界的心太強。事實足資証明他令約翰舍棄神學而專攻法律,因在當時,律師業乃致富之道。

加爾文約翰的母親吉恩 (Jeannele Franc) 明顯是才貌兼具,極其敬虔的婦女。乃父 爲市議所會員。她篤信天主教,時常攜帶約翰拜謁臨近寺院,在鄉間漫步,同他作 露天祈禱。不幸早逝,約翰於少時即失恃。但慈母之熱心虔誠在其子身上大大顯 出。

加爾文的父親既在教會內任職,又為貴族人士所尊重,所以他與本城的牧師以及以流人物有密切往還。這對於他的兒子——約翰來說乃是一個特別機遇——他得與貴族子弟們同受小學教育。後來他成為韓階斯 (Hangest) 與孟特摩 (Montmo) 之子的密友,並將他所著的頭一本書奉獻給孟特摩說:「我自幼在你家裏長大與你學

一樣的書,我所領受的第一教誨就是從你尊貴之家的生活與修養得來的。」這種關系給了加爾文高尚的禮節與社交的平靜,非路德所有。路德出身於礦工之家,總不失老百姓階級的粗野作風。加爾文與貴族階級有密切關聯,所以對社會各階層的交往上,均感應付裕如。明顯這是上帝的預備,以致後來改教時能向君王進諫,並為改革教義求皇家與貴族的支援。至低限度這也影響加爾文的政治見解。有人懷疑他竟究是否主張純正的民主。他確實是要百姓在政府內有發言權,但他卻也主張在社會居高位的人才有資格治理國事。

#### 二、大學時期

一五二三年諾陽流行傳染性的瘟疫,年輕的加爾文伴隨孟特摩家赴巴黎而升入 大學。因他準備將來作神甫(當時加爾文屬天主教),所以學神學乃是首先的基礎工作。拉丁文、倫理學與哲學乃是加爾文的大學課程。加爾文深爲教授器重。當時加爾文專攻拉丁文學,深悉拉丁文學的底蘊。在考第爾(Cordier)指導之下也學到如何寫文章。他的倫理學課程幫助他有敏銳的心思,對於後來的辯論助益匪淺。

加爾文好學不倦,節製飲食,極少消遣,生性怕羞,以致給人一個無社交長才的印象。與他同時代的人論到加爾文寫道:「他是一位禁食者,有時是爲了集中心思於寫作、研究與增進他的記憶力。加爾文不苟言笑,但是他的話時常帶有份量,總不無的放矢;他從不出現於公共娛樂場所,總是退居斗室,從事寫作。」

於一五二七年受父命轉入奧林斯大學 (University of Orleans) 專攻法律。加爾文寫道:「當我年幼的時候父親定規了叫我學神學。但後來他考慮到律師職業能使人致富,因之他改變了他的目的。」因加爾文是個考子 (或者他對嚴父頗有敬畏之心,因他是個很有道義的老先生) 所以唯父命是從。他在一位訴訟律師門下受教,不久即成績卓絕,甚至教授缺席時,也由加爾文代課。一五三一年他轉入波紀斯大學 (University of Bourges) 法學院在有名律法學家阿凱齊 (Alciati) 足前受教。法律的研究培養了加爾文的組織力與明了力,後來在日內瓦對政務的處理時能給予正當的建議。上帝使他這樣在名師手下學法律也預備他對《聖經》的詳細研究 (如在他的注釋中),並對偉大的《聖經》原則的發展——神的主權,有莫大幫助。此時他也開始學習希臘文與希伯來文。

一五三一年加爾文的父親去世。現在他可以隨心所欲重返巴黎大學專攻**文學與古典文學**。明顯可見這是他的第一愛好。次年他的頭一本書出版問世。該書引証五十五位**拉丁文**著者和二十二位**希臘文**著者。那是幸尼加 (Seneca) 全集中標題為「仁慈論」的注釋。有的學者認為該書系為宗教抗議者向當局的請願;有的人則否認。此書並未立時博得社會的好評,著者多少有些失望。無論如何,這本書把加爾文的名字介紹給知識界,這也表示加爾文後來注釋《聖經》的方法,即發掘著者的原意,然後述說自己的反應。加爾文也重視到異邦宗教與文化中的真善之點,所以在評價非基督教作品上並不將之丟棄如敝屣,其中有些教訓,如仁慈、互助、憐憫都與基督教的美德相近。之後加爾文把這些價值追溯到上帝的普通恩典上。他寫

道:「真理(不拘是什麼真理)總是有價值的,這是多人所承認的。但上帝乃眾善之根源,如果你不歡迎真理的各部(不拘從那一方面而來)是從上帝那裏來的,並接受為從天上來對你說話的聲音,你就應該受不感恩之嫌的攻擊。」

#### 三、改宗歸主

加爾文生平最大的轉機是一五三〇年前後。當他青年時期在諾陽一如他的父母,乃是一個虔誠的天主教徒。明顯可見,路德的教訓尚未普遍到該地。但他在一五二三年來到巴黎的時候,他不得不與改教運動的新觀念結識。在大學裏宗教改革成爲談話與討論的題旨。他或許目擊包文 (Pauvanne)——法國第一位殉道者——被焚在火刑柱上。或者他看見法國貴族波郡 (Berquin) 因翻譯路德作品而犧牲生命。無疑此時加爾文已經讀到一些偷渡至法國的路德作品。

況且,加爾文的一些教授與同事都是同情這新的教訓,並看見教會改革的必要。他的拉丁文教授考第爾曾公開非難當日的羅馬大公教會(後來考氏加入宗教改革運動又在日內瓦學院執教)。加爾文的表兄歐利夫坦(Robert Olivetan)將《聖經》譯成法文,因之令加爾文對直接研究《聖經》感到興味十足。他們多次共同討論,歐氏繼續主張只有兩個宗教:一個是靠人類功德得救的,一個是將人得救的事完全歸給上帝。加爾文在巴黎的一些密友如克智弟兄等,都是極端批評現勢並接納路德觀念的人。在奧林斯大學時他住在一路德派商人福爾治(Etiennedela Forgre)家中。他的家就成爲宗教改革同志們的聚會處。這位商人樂善好施,每逢將食物贈給窮人時,就將寫有**路德**教訓的小單張隨著分配出去。在波吉斯大學,加爾文從瓦爾瑪(Wolmar)學習希臘文並一同念新約,從瓦氏的口中聽到他對舊教會的侮辱與非難,又目睹教會之弊端,與新約教會的教義與生活相去不可以道裏計。

聖靈藉著這些外部的影響在加爾文身上作工,引領他達到生平中的大轉機。他不但對教會就是對他自己的宗教現狀都感到大大的不滿。他寫著說:「我的良心沒有平安,每逢我內顧己心或仰望上主……我都感到有極端的恐怖在占據著我。」他逐漸醒悟看到自己的真面目。因信稱義越發堅固地占據他的心靈。數年後在他寫給莎多立托(Sadoleto)的那封名信中說:「我所忠實遵守的律法把握住我的良心,叫我深深感到有罪。我試過赦罪文、悔過苦行與代求,但都不能得到內心的平安與解脫。」於一五三二年或一五三三年(日期不詳)的某一個時候,加爾文將自己完全投在神主權的恩典裏。他立刻找到內心的平安。將一切的功德都歸給神。在他的自傳中有這樣的話說:「當我的心固持虔信教皇的迷信時……可憐我的上帝,勝過我的心,以突然的改變製服我的心而使之溫順……」

在他改宗之後,他立刻著手研究《聖經》和改革主義信仰。他也誦讀反對派的文章並古教父的遺著。他的目的是以著述為宗教改革運動服務。他希望在幕後從事寫作,闡明純正《聖經》教義,但他身為《聖經》學者的盛譽卻已不脛而走,法國的福音派領袖共聚搓商,邀請加爾文為他們解釋《聖經》。他本想退隱研究《聖經》,但豈不知他的退修反而成為公開的活動,據說加氏每次講演之後都說這一

句:「有上帝幫助我們,誰能抵擋我們呢?」他對上帝主權的實際意義有活潑的了解。

#### 四、克普事件

加爾文改宗後法國福音派面臨極其困難的情勢。羅馬教的領袖(本部於索波恩大學)及法王法蘭西斯一世(他本人在與查理皇爭權上需要教皇的協助),都越發堅決鏟除新教。於是發展至強烈的反抗。事情的暴發臨到克普的頭上。克普(Nicholas Cop)是加爾文的至友,亦痛感當日教會於教義和生活方面的敗壞,新近被選爲巴黎大學校長。按當日的習慣,新選校長要對公眾發表就職演說。克氏於一五三三年十一月一日發表此演說,題目爲「基督教哲學」,但其中充滿了福音主義的觀念。該演說內容高舉上帝的恩典,提到因信稱義,非難靠賴人的功德作爲得救的條件,並希望上帝「開通我們的心竅,得信福音」。

究竟這篇演說詞是否爲加爾文所撰述,吾人不可確知。據說加爾文手抄的這篇講詞的原稿現仍存於日內瓦圖書館內。但此演說詞確實表達了他的信念。這一篇演講惹起了當局反抗的風潮。克普被控爲傳播異端,並決定將他和他的同志加以逮捕。克氏逃往瑞士的**巴賽爾**(Basel),於是當局懸賞三百法郎,只要將其帶返巴黎,生死不拘。有警官至加爾文住處搜捉,但被朋友通知,他像使徒保羅一樣,由朋友用繩子從窗戶把他放出,化裝成一園丁逃出城外。

加爾文於是開始他的亡命生涯。當局一直設法捉拿他,他則用查理戴斯威爾 (Charlesd' Espeville) 以及其他假名到處奔走。他在奈瑞克 (Nerac) 那瓦瑞女皇瑪格 利的宮中避了一些時候。女皇系法蘭西斯之妹,但她本人卻傾向改革運動。在她宮中有位傳道師**羅賽爾** (Roussel),乃法國改教運動先鋒的子弟。預備這道路的是李佛 (Le Fevre),他對路德的觀念早有研究。一五一二年 (在路德與羅馬教破裂前五年)李氏由學習保羅書信的結果而教導因信稱義的要道。他也否認抹大拉的馬利亞與拉撒路的姊妹馬利亞和膏耶穌腳的那個馬利亞是同一個人。這看來好像是件小事,但卻是打破教會傳統的教訓,行使「私人解經」的原則。加爾文與李佛有過數次的商談。李氏明顯主張從教會內部著手改革,然而加爾文卻認爲教會敗壞到如此地步,非脫離教會另起爐灶不可。無論如何,李佛預言加爾文乃是「在法國恢復上帝國的傑出工具」。

離奈瑞克不遠處即是昂皋林 (Angouleme) ,在該處加爾文暫居一天主教神甫第萊特 (Louisdu Tillet) 家中,第氏極欲參加改教運動。他藏書甚豐,汗牛充棟,加爾文從此得益匪淺,無疑加氏由此開始他的名著《基督教要義》——抗羅宗信仰的偉大教義課本——的基礎工作。

六個月後加氏移居至包蒂爾 (Poitiers),在那裏有福音派的人士。他們在洞穴內聚集,加爾文對他們講道,棄絕彌撒而守主的聖餐。這或許是首次在法國舉行的聖餐禮拜。後又旅行至諾陽,在那裏他拒收「聖俸」,如此令自己與羅馬教完全脫

離關系。後至奧林斯,在該處他完成他的第一部神學著作「靈眠」 (Psychopannychia)。該書目的在反對重洗派 (浸信會派的先鋒),該派主張「睡了的人,從死時至審判日是無記憶、無理智、無知覺的,直等到他從睡中被驚醒」。明顯見出加爾文認為自己是基督教教義的導師。該書的特點即在於絕對高舉《聖經》。臺無疑問的,加爾文乃在成為抗羅宗偉大《聖經》解釋家的途上躍進。

#### 五、《基督教要義》問世

一五三四年十月十九日在法國是一個興奮的日子。那一天早晨在巴黎城到處張 貼著從瑞士輸入的標語,在公共場所、官廳、教會,甚至在王宮裏都發現這標語。 這些標語都反對天主教的兩項基本教義:(1) 彌撒,以聖餐爲基督犧牲的重演,與 (2) 化質說 (transubstantiation),主張在彌撒中神甫祝福之後,餅即變爲基督的身體。 此傳單中也稱天主教的神甫爲背道者、豺狼、瀆上帝者、假牧人。張貼此標語者, 乃新教的信者馬克特 (Marcourt) 及其門人。

結果乃是立即的、嚴苛的迫害,多人被逮捕下監。有六位新教領袖,被捉並受苦刑。他們被綁在懸木上,下面有火,人用繩子繫下,置於火上,然後再懸起,上下數次,直到他們掉在火中燒死。天主教當局決志撲滅他們所稱的「抗羅宗瘟疫」。

爲了此迫害,法王法蘭西斯一世實處於窘境中。他不願得罪德國的抗羅宗,因他需要他們的協助來反抗查理五世(Charles V),假如德國的新教人士聽說他迫害同志,他們將作何感想呢?於是法王想到一個辦法。他控訴法國的新教徒爲重洗派(Anabaptists),當日的重洗派是革命份子與無政府主義者。所以他說他們是搗亂政府。他聲明並非反對他們的宗教觀點,不過是反對他們社會與政治的意見而已。

那些都是卑鄙的謊言,加爾文頗受此攻擊的煩擾。這將如何是好呢?於是加爾文決定宣布一信仰綱領爲法國新教人士所持守,同時也向信眾澄清此項虛僞的攻擊。他很久以前即有意草擬此綱領作爲抗羅宗信仰的訓導。現在他亡命至瑞士巴賽爾,於一五三六年出版了他的《基督教要義》(Institutes of Christian Religion),與一五五九年的八十四章最終版來比較,這初版只不過有六章,爲避免危險的緣故,初版用阿路求那斯(Alcuinus)的名。在正文之前有一封致法王法蘭西斯的信,提醒他在上帝前爲君王的責任,並爲法國受迫害的新教徒辯護,加爾文說:「我是爲一切信徒辯護,因此也是爲基督的真理而辯護,這真理目前正在法國遍地受踐踏、迫害,處於絕望的情況中。」本書的第一目的乃是辯護學的,或言爲受污辱的法國新教徒辯護。正如以後加爾文在詩篇注釋的序言中寫著說:「我的首要目的即在解放我的同胞脫離那恥辱,他們的死在耶和華眼中看爲寶貴;其次因多人受同樣殘酷的威脅,希望至少在別的國家爲他們的受苦可以惹起一些同情感。」

雖然這是當前的目的,但本書究竟爲抗羅宗教義的課本。這部《要義》幫助改革派教會彼此聯合。假如加爾文沒有寫這部《要義》,就是過去有三百年之久爲改

革主義教會神學的基要課本(在牛津與劍橋兩大學用此爲教義神學課本有一百年之 久),那麼改革派教會就要分裂成許多支派,如今他們有一個標準足資遵循。

由於《要義》一書的問世,使著者特別引人注意,這是不可避免的。此書在巴賽爾出版以後不久,即譯為外文並分銷到法國、瑞士、荷蘭、英國與蘇格蘭各地。加爾文的名字在抗羅宗的家庭裹幾乎無人不知,無人不曉;他已成為國際上的知名人士。正如慈魏格 (Stephen Zweig) 所說,因他所寫的這本書是「決定歷史行程並改變歐洲面目的世界十大名著中之一」。

#### 六、首次被召至日内瓦—1536

一五三六年在加爾文的生平中乃是多事之秋。就如我們以前所說的,他專心致 志於研究和寫作生活,以爲這樣能作有效的工作,於是決定瑞士的巴賽爾爲最適當 之所。在那裏有幾位著名的改革派領袖,並有一所興盛的大學與印刷廠可以作出版 工作。所以在那年八月加氏即起程赴巴賽爾。因當時法國法蘭西斯一世與查理五世 正在作戰,所以他必得繞道而行,方可抵達。因此在上帝的護理之下(上帝用歷史 上的事件(如戰爭)來實現鬥的目的),加爾文抵達日內瓦城。

日內瓦以前是一個天主教的城市,改變爲新教城市也不過是在一五三〇年左右。那時抗羅宗的思想逐漸輸入。李佛的學生法勒爾 (William Farel) 是毫無恐懼、性如烈火的新教人士,於一五三二年開始傳講福音派的道理,惹起劇烈的反抗,甚至發生暴動,又有人在他的食物中下毒,強迫他離境。不久以後復返日內瓦,此次頗受歡迎。一般接受過抗羅宗主義的人都懇求法氏:「給我們講道,給我們傳講上帝的話。」抗羅宗陣營逐漸強大起來,在一五三六年召開了一個辯論大會,參加這辯論的是天主教人士與抗羅宗人士,目的在表決本城的宗教(二者不能共存)。結果抗羅宗獲勝,於是在一五三六年五月廿一日日內瓦總會時宣布,應許:「靠上帝的幫助他們要按照福音派的宗教與最近傳布給他們的上帝的話語來生活,放棄彌撒、拜偶像、聖徒像以及其他教皇的錯謬。」像希伯來人在迦南的邊境與約書亞宣誓:「至於我和我的家,必要事奉耶和華。」

加爾文路過日內瓦,本意只打算住一夜,翌日即起程往巴賽爾。可是法勒爾從所讀《基督教要義》中對加爾文頗爲景仰,得知他來到本城認爲是上帝垂聽了他的祈禱。法氏判斷加爾文正是領導日內瓦宗教改革的人。法氏本人脾氣暴燥、無技巧、缺乏組織力,所以他馬上到加爾文所住的旅館邀請他留在日內瓦工作。但加爾文婉言拒絕,認爲自己不克勝任。他是一個怕羞、勤奮與小心翼翼的人,並沒有從事此工作的意向,認爲此工作所需要的乃是活躍有進取心的領袖。但法氏堅持向他懇求並勸他接受此挑戰性的邀請。當加爾文仍拒絕法氏的懇請時,法勒爾即以上帝的審判來威嚇他:「我實在對你說,在上帝這一方面,如果你拒絕在這裏與我們同作上帝的工,上帝要咒詛你;因爲你以求學作口實來棄絕我們,你把自己放在上帝以上。」加爾文深深受感於此「上帝召」,覺得有留在此地的本分。他尚未得到安置即患神經痛,醫生謂此系當時一種通症,經調治後逐漸康復,開始工作。

加爾文並沒有什麼正式的頭銜,或者有一個是「讀《聖經》的人」。他的工作首先是教授。他根據保羅的書信發表了一連串的講演。不久以後他就開始講道。他的頭一篇講道就博得聽眾的好評,所以有人就請他爲頭一次無法參加的人第二天再重講一次。不久加爾文與法勒爾共同草擬「信仰告白」(Confession of Faith)後經市議會(City Council) 采納。其目的在於清楚樹立抗羅宗的教訓以與天主教對抗。除了聲稱基本的福音派要道,如完全墮落、惟獨靠基督寶血得救贖以外,又製定教會聖禮(即立主的晚餐爲聖禮,並非爲獻祭必得一年四次。加爾文個人以爲愈多舉行愈好)、遵守安息日,並咒詛天主教的儀式爲偶像崇拜。他們也出版一《要理問答》,爲加爾文所著,特爲兒童的宗教訓導。天主教的主教們並未注意到這種需要。此問答成爲後來抗羅宗教理問答(如韋敏斯德與海德堡問答)的模型。

這不過是一個起頭。困難即將來到。

#### 七、由日內瓦被放逐—1538

法勒爾與加爾文擔任日內瓦的領袖這件事不久即遭遇反抗,因本城古老的仕紳家族不願甘居次要地位,居民中生活散漫、不道德的分子都對律法的嚴厲執行頗抱憤慨。這些律法已經多年記載在冊,但從未執行。結果日內瓦獲得一個放蕩不羈、下流城市的臭名。此外,有些加爾文的論敵是自由思想派,也不再接受教會的純正教義。於是由於不肯失去威望的日內瓦的愛國者,抱怨一切律例與規條的不道德分子,與受約束的自由思想家的聯合,結果組成自由思想派(Libertines)。他們都反對法勒爾與加爾文所領導的新政府。

抗拒的態勢漸增並擴延。有些叛黨反對律法禁止跳舞,關閉賭場,並限製酒樓 營業時間。多人憎恨的一件事實就是加爾文堅持所有市民接納「公認信條」。他 們要求有贊成者簽字和不贊成者拒絕的自由。有的人以爲加爾文在控製聖餐的紀 念,因爲有長老在舉行聖餐之前到各家拜訪,查問教友的行爲,看有否分領聖餐的 資格,他們認爲這是過於嚴格。大多數的教友不願把開除教籍的權柄交給教會。但 加爾文卻堅持這是教會的權柄,唯有教會能決定誰在教會中有好名聲。市議會中多 人仍要保留這個權柄。

反對加爾文的這一黨派勢力漸強。他們在市議會中逐漸取得更多的席位。及至一五三八年二月三日的選舉中,他們占大多數而獲勝。磨擦達於最高潮,在加爾文派與市議會當局之間發生爭執。市議會開始爲教會下了規條,又介紹了些禮儀,例如在聖餐中用無酵餅、在教會中放施洗盆,並決定遵守聖日。這些實行的條例對於加爾文這一派來說,似乎太近似天主教。此外,政府方面以高壓手段來介紹這些變革,並未與教會的牧師商量。於是市政當局進行設立「公開聖餐製」(open communion),命令牧師向所有的人施聖餐。這就是當局與加爾文等人絕裂的最後原因。加爾文及其同仁堅決反對,因爲這對他們乃是褻瀆聖禮,聖餐必須施給那些悔改與有真信心的人。

議會看牧師們不肯默認就禁止他們講道。這爭執達於白熱化,市內起了暴動, 搗亂分子向加爾文的住宅丟石頭,並於夜間向他的臥室開槍,大聲喊叫:「把賣 國賊丟在魯恩河中(魯恩河系瑞士南部一河流)。」又對著街上的雜種狗呼叫加爾 文的名字。雖然如此牧師們仍寸步不讓,主張必須傳講上帝的道,在他們被禁講道 的下個禮拜天他們又步上講台。那是復活節禮拜,禮拜儀式受擾而變爲暴動,人們 帶著槍到教會去,法勒爾被護衛離開禮拜堂。那是非常緊張的一天。

禮拜一議會召開緊急會議並潦草通過放逐的判決。加爾文、法勒爾以及他們的盲人同事柯羅德 (Coraud) 必須於三日內離境,永不準返回。改革家們匆忙地整理行裝離開日內瓦。加爾文覺得很得釋放。他說:「如果我們服事人,這就是最不值得的報酬,但我們所服事的乃是主,祂將要賞賜我們。」正如使徒行傳的話說:他們「離開公會,心裏歡喜,因被算是配為基督的緣故受辱」。

#### 八、斯塔斯堡的傳道期間-1538-1541

當加爾文等由日內瓦被放逐的時候,他想現在正是退修從事研究的良機,所以他以爲瑞士的巴賽爾乃理想之地,在那裏他可以用他的文墨及書翰爲改教工作效力。但事與願違,在德國西南部的斯塔斯堡 (Strassburg) (那裏有許多從法國逃來的難民) 急需一位牧者,該處的改教者布舍 (Bucer) 邀請加氏到那裏去爲主作工。加氏拒絕前往有十週之久,然後布舍仿效法勒爾所用的策略來威脅加爾文,說如果他拒絕,「上帝會知道怎樣來尋找悖逆之僕,尤如找到約拿一樣」。加氏再次覺得有上帝的手在他身上,他就不敢再加拒絕。他在那裏初次講道是一五三八年九月八日。一五三九年七月他被擁戴爲該城公民。

除了遭遇貧困外,加氏在此工作頗爲愉快。最初作牧師並無薪水,僅於學校教書得微薄的謝金而已。有人說他必須賣一些書來維持生活。我們則知道他多半是招學生來寄宿藉以糊口,除了這些不方便之外,他於斯塔斯堡深感自得。那裏有所好學校名爲「文科中學校」,爲能幹的斯特姆 (John Sturm) 所領導。加爾文於此教《聖經》解釋與神學。他也作法國人流亡教會的牧師 (有會友五百人),也將他在日內瓦不能施行的理想於此見諸實施。(在日內瓦長老亦爲市議會的會員,但在斯塔斯堡則否。加爾文於此亦能每月得以舉行一次聖餐,這是他在日內瓦所無法達到的目標) 他建立起一群井井有條、服從規律的會眾。他製定了一崇拜規程作爲後來改革教會的模範。他也寫了許多《聖經》注釋,並與改教者、同情新教的政府官員,甚至與試圖說服日內瓦重歸天主教的大主教有過多次通信(有四卷這樣的信函已譯成英文)。

就在這裏加爾文結了婚。路德於一五二五年同一位以前作修女的結婚,他這樣 作是爲了非難獨身生活的不合《聖經》,然而天主教卻推崇之爲最高典型的基督徒 生活。路德的目的在以行動顯示婚姻非但是上帝所安排的尊榮聖禮,而且結婚生活 與獨身生活在上帝面前都是被重視的。 事情的經過是這樣,有一日加爾文悶坐斗室,正值路德的同工墨蘭頓
(Melanchthon) 過訪,他說了一句笑談:「我看加爾文是想太太了。」加爾文默認
他曾經這樣想過。他生性怕羞膽小,所以求他的同工法勒爾作月下老人。及至不氏
問他的條件如何時,他說:「我不像那些瘋狂式的求愛者,甚至他們的手一與女
人接觸,連她們的錯誤之點也擁抱接受。女人所吸引我的惟一美德就是貞節、親
切、不挑三弄四、儉朴、肯對我的健康表示忍耐。」經過幾次的說媒,但都沒有
撮合。最後他同本教會的一位寡婦伯愛麗 (IdelettedeBure) 結婚,他帶來兩個小
孩。伯愛麗的前失是由重洗派改宗過來的,於一五四一年二月過世,同年八月和加
爾文結為夫婦。婚後生下一子名雅各,但不幸數日後死去。加氏對其妻極為贊揚。
在一五四九年她死的時候,加爾文說:「我失去了我生活中的至好伴侶,當她活
著的時候,她是我傳道工作上最忠實的助手。她從未帶給我任何至微的障礙」。
加爾文以後都未再婚,直到死時。

#### 九、回到日內瓦-1541

日內瓦的情形自加爾文離開以後每況愈下。雖新請來兩位傳道者代替加爾文與法勒爾,但他們並不是什麼了不起的人物,所以無法應付時艱。天主教的神甫們又溜入城內開始在私人家庭裏舉行彌撒。天主教的大主教名撒豆利透 (Sadoleto) 的又給市議會寫了封緊急公函,邀請他們重歸天主教的懷抱,說他們現今的困難即由於脫離上帝獨一的真教會。(日內瓦竟沒有一個人能夠予以適當的回答,還得加爾文在斯塔斯堡來擔任其事,他的《復撒豆利透書》Reply to Sadoleto 被稱爲改教時期最有力的辯護文。) 思想自由派的人們逐漸強大而勇於前進。不法與淫穢事件極爲盛行。

日內瓦當局不久即悔悟他們當初驅逐加爾文乃是犯了一項嚴重的錯誤。一五三九年就有些人建議再請加爾文回來。一五四〇年九月市議會委托一位會員「設法邀請加爾文牧師重返日內瓦」。在以後數月之行內曾發出一封請帖,又派一位代表親赴斯塔斯堡勸請他回日內瓦。法勒爾此時在紐查台 (Neuchatel), 他們也請求他來勸加爾文就道。

加爾文並沒有回去的心情。無疑他覺得被請是件尊榮的事,也知道他們到底了解他在那裏的工作,但他怕回去。他寫信給他的改教同工范來特 (Viret) 說:「我寧願忍受千刀萬刮,也不願去背那個十字架······我寧可立刻死去,也不願在那酷刑室裏受刑至死······天下就再沒有別處比那裏更可怕的······我爲什麼還要再到那裏去流血負傷?」況且他在斯塔斯堡的工作是大受歡迎,人們都愛這位敬虔的牧師。他正從事著適當的工作,一邊服事信徒靈性的需要,一邊以寫作來幫助改教運動。

但在這裏有一項重要的考慮,即日內瓦居瑞士與意大利的中心,它比斯塔斯堡 重要得多。加爾文對改教運動的感力從這一點來說要比在德國的任一城市都爲重 要,因爲德國政府隨時可以干涉該城的自由。所以在責任的壓力之下加爾文再度順 服。他寫著說:「當我想到這事的時候,我並不是我自己的主人,我乃是將我的 心當作祭物奉獻給主。」自從那時起,一張開的手掌放著一顆心和一句座名銘「主阿,我願立刻誠懇地將我的心奉獻給你」(「CORMEUMTE OFFERED OMINE PROMPTEET SINCERE」My heart Ioffer thee, Lord, promptly and sincerely) 就成爲加爾文主義的徽章。一五四一年九月十三日加爾文重返日內瓦城,受到市議會熱烈的歡迎,每年給予五百法郎年薪(約合美金一百二十五元)。這正如《聖經》所說:「匠人所棄的石頭已成爲房角的頭塊石頭」。

加爾文本著一個主要的目標與理想回到日內瓦,那就是建設他向來所稱的「《聖經》治理」的社會,也就是說在他心中早有一個模範的社會,在此社會中教會與政府在《聖經》的原則下互相合作。教會之與政府猶如靈魂之與身體。教會在屬靈的事上是獨立的,是政府的良心與教師(正如舊約的先知忠告以色列君王:以利亞與亞哈,拿單與大衛等)。政府的任務就是管理俗事,其本分在於「支持對上帝的外部崇拜,保守宗教的真道,衛護教會製度,約束並懲罰褻瀆神明者,給予公共大眾機會來信奉宗教」。

#### 十、組織日內瓦教會-1541

加爾文一回到日內瓦即開始工作,他的偉大理想即在日內瓦基督教共和國裏組織一個有秩序有規條的教會,於是他立刻起草一教會組織綱要,名爲「教會法規」(Ecclesiastical Ordinances)。經市議會稍加修改後,被總會及兩千市民所通過。其中包括一些律法的細節——那都是當日歐洲城市的普通情事——諸如褻瀆和談吐淫穢的處以罰金,禁止奢華服裝,除假日以外日用飲食不得超過兩道,嚴禁夜宴等;大部分都是爲建立教會而設。

教會內設四種職分。第一即**牧師**。以團體的牧師來說稱之爲「牧師團」 (Venerable Company)。雖然各牧師在城內各教會可以輪流講道,但每人有自己牧 養的教區。爲使牧師多用時間在預備講道並使信徒得益上,此乃良策。(加爾文每 主日講道,而且每隔一個禮拜天去教課,除此之外他還爲牧師團舉辦三次解經講 座,一次對學院,又每周一次對公眾演講。)只遵守安息日爲聖日;其他如聖誕 節、復活節都被認爲沾有羅馬教的氣息。加爾文主張在講台上的禱告與講道都應當 簡短。他說:「最好在家多用時間祈禱,在會眾中要簡短。」當有人對法勒爾的 冗長講道發怨言的時候,加爾文寫信給他說:「主召我們上講台既然不是爲造就 我們自己,乃爲痘的百姓,我們就應當思考,不叫上帝的道受虧損,因爲你使聽眾 困倦。」唱詩篇也被介紹到崇拜中,爲的是會眾可以參與此崇拜的贊美本質。加 爾文反對有口無心的歌頌,他說:「我們必須時時注意,免得我們的耳只聽音調 的和諧,內心卻忽略字句中的隱意。」牧師團封立新牧師,但準試(即後補牧師) 必須先受教義、《聖經》知識以及個人生活的考驗,然後他要講一篇試驗的講道, 同時市議會也派有代表參加,如果他通過這一切的考試,就受按手禮,而成爲牧師 團中的一員,享有同等地位。 第二種職分爲**教師**。此職分接加爾文對弗四 11 的解釋乃是上帝所立的。他的職 責乃在以要理問答要訓導兒童。教師被認爲是傳道的職分之一,置於懲誡條例之 下。教師經牧師團的推荐,在市議會受驗,然後經牧師按立。

第三種職分爲長老。這種職分在當日的教會中早已廢止了。此次又把平信徒介紹到教會議會裏,這就是牧師與信徒之間早已斷絕的關系又得恢復。長老治理教會,特別在於監督聖餐的神聖。他們必須看管會眾不許褻瀆聖餐,因爲聖餐乃基督教崇拜中的最高點。(那就是加爾文所以要一年多於四次守聖餐的緣故了。)牧師每年一次必須有長老和執事陪同拜訪城中每一家庭。長老與執事在此拜訪中就奉獻問題有所教導。拜訪的主要目的乃在詢問信徒的個人信仰,看他有否資格領主的聖餐。長老是經市議會的委派領受此職。該市議會(其中包括三部分)從其會員中選舉十二爲教會的長老,作爲此二治理機構的橋梁。教會與政府之間雖然分派,但也有密切關系。

第四種職分是**執事**,他們受托管理教會的財政事項。這就是所謂長老製教會的 行政 (Presbyterianism),但晚近歐美諸國的改革宗教會在細節上多有出入

#### 十一、沖突再起—1545—1555

在加爾文回到日內瓦的時候本以爲工作的情形仍如在斯塔斯堡一樣。但事實並非如此。在他歸來時日內瓦人所得的喜樂止息以後,又發生了新的難題。一波未平,一波繼起。在自由思想派中有些是加爾文的舊日仇敵又起來找他的麻煩。他們在嚴格的法律之下心懷不平,暗發怒氣。當他們因拒絕參加崇拜,批評牧師講道,稱教皇爲「好人」,穿著奇特衣衫等而被懲收罰金時,他們都置之不理。他們都認爲是過於干涉他們個人的自由。

自由派的領袖之一波林 (Ami Perrin,是一名軍官,從前與加爾文頗友善,事實上他也是極力勸加爾文回來的一位,但現在他卻反對加爾文。他是小議會 (Little Council) 中的會員 (日內瓦市議會分三部:一部爲二百人;一部爲六十人;一部爲二十五人,道德不甚好。在他家中時常舉行狂歡舞會。明顯可見他深恐教會對他非基督徒的行爲采取行動,所以盡力想把開除教籍的權柄從教會手中奪去而交給政府。此外還有個領袖名叫阿妙斯 (Pierre Ameaux),也是小議會的會員。他是紙牌製造者,當此紙牌被禁止的時候,他的營業受到影響。還有教會對他要求與妻子離婚的事件遲遲不準。這種種的因素都令阿氏對加爾文心懷成見,並到處散布流言蜚語,毀謗加爾文。他說加爾文是傳假道理的,並說他的生活頗有指摘之處。在街頭巷尾的小群眾中,他時常對加爾說些咒罵的話。例如:「喂!你看他來啦。我寧肯去聽三只狗咬架,也不願聽他講道」。

自由派中第三位有勢力的人物是伯提勒 (Berthelier)。他是德國一位爲自由而殉 道者的兒子。他的生活也是放蕩,不滿教會的法規。他不明白爲什麼他不得領聖 餐。事實上他在這一點上與教會爭執不已。在赴聖餐的禮拜日,他與他的黨羽身披

武裝進到教會。加爾文講完短篇道理,誦讀聖餐儀式文之後走下講台,來到桌前。 由伯提勒所率領的自由派等人劍拔弓張,大步走入堂內。那是緊張的一霎那。加爾 文並未受威嚇。他伸出雙手在桌子以上說:「我絕不施這聖禮給你們……這兩只 手你們可以打碎,兩臂可斷;生命可取,血可流;但你們卻絕無法強迫我將此聖禮 施給不敬虔的人,來污辱我上帝的桌子。」自由派黨羽默然無聲,退出會堂。加 爾文想他一定會再次被逐,所以當日下午他對哭泣的會眾講了一篇臨別的信息,以 「如今我把你們交托上帝和他恩惠的道」爲經題。雖然如此,並沒有放逐的論令 下來。

此外尚有別樣的難題。有一後補牧師卡斯提留(Castellio),他請求被封立爲牧師遭 到拒絕,因他懷疑雅歌屬於正典,且也不同意當是對「主下入陰間」的解釋。他 未能了解基督在客西馬尼園中以及在十字架上所受的乃是地獄的痛苦。加爾文和他 的同事都認爲卡氏是把他自己的理性駕平上帝的啟示之上。預定論的道理也是遭至 人批評與仇視的原因。其中之一即醫生巴爾色克 (Bolsec),前此爲白袍僧。他不但 稱此教義爲不合《聖經》,也是不能支持的,因爲他說,這樣使上帝成爲一個暴 君,他又毀謗加爾文有不道德的行爲。

爭斗層出不窮。一次暴民走向前來面對加爾文。他們對他喊罵不已,加爾文對他 們說:「我知道我就是你們爭吵的原因,如果流我的血可止息你們的爭斗,就取 我的生命,我求上帝給我作見証,我來是不怕死的。」這誠然是多事之秋。若不 是同保羅一樣說:「有主與我同在」(提後四 17),不然膽怯的加爾文是無法承受 的。

#### 十二、色維圖事件

在加爾文時代有一名誠實,但卻走入極端錯誤裏的西班牙醫生色維圖 (Michael Servetus) 無疑是一位多才多藝的人。他不但是醫學聖手 (發明肺中的血液循環,同時 對術學與神學也有專攻。但他的心智反常,受人非議。加爾文初次與他相識是在巴 黎,那是一五三四年。當有人把色維圖的見解告訴加爾文之後,他願意找機會和他 討論一番。色氏同意了,但總未露面,反而到處奔走行醫,並特別對神學發生興 趣。

他發現加爾文的神學觀點十分可憎。當加爾文的《基督教要義》出版以後,他 即刻獲得一本,並在書中寫下許多更正的邊注,然後寄給加爾文。後來他又照著自 己的見解寫了一本《基督教恢復》(Christian Restitution)。在此書中他否認基督神 性、嬰兒洗禮、因信稱義,以及其他重要的《聖經》教義。他認爲三位一體的道理 最爲無味。三位合而爲一對他簡直是荒誕至極。他用褻瀆的話語說:「你的聖三 位一體乃是三頭的地獄犬。」他自己的上帝觀則是泛神論的,亦即相信上帝即是 萬物,萬物即是上帝。在他受審時,他說他坐的板凳也有神的本質。當有人問他: 「魔鬼呢?它也是神嗎?」他笑著說:「當然也是神。萬物都是上帝的一部分。」

加爾文和其他改革家因聽到此異端攻擊他們所寶貴的信仰而受震驚還有什麼希奇嗎?當一五四五年色維圖受威脅欲來日內瓦的消息傳出以後,加爾文給他的朋友范來特寫信說:「我敢斷言,如果他來,我必不叫他活著離開日內瓦。」這也是天主教對此異端者的判決。事實上天主教已將他拘禁在維也納,並定死罪,處以焚刑,但他逃脫了。

他果然來到日內瓦。那是一五五三年春正當加爾文的權勢動搖時期。無疑色維圖想得自由派黨人的支持。如果他們能把加爾文推下台,或可舉他爲該城的領袖。他到達日內瓦不久即被人偵出。當加爾文講道時,他還去參加禮拜,即被認出,立刻加以逮捕。從他的著述中找出三十八處作爲控訴他的把柄。一五五三年八月十四日開始審訊。起初關於神學方面大肆辯論,言詞白熱化。市議會當局已特別留意處理此案件。市議會又致函給其他市區派代表參加:請求他們的建議。大眾均一致表決此異端者該處以死刑,不可容忍。於十月二十六日被處焚刑。加爾文請求議會以斬首代之,但結果無效。法勒爾曾至獄中訪色維圖勸他悔改,但他拒絕悔改。次日他被牽至火刑場,那時還勸他「求告上帝的永生之子」,只要說:「耶穌,上帝永遠之子,你可憐我。」就可以,但他沒有說。

評論此悲慘之餘,我們必須記得加爾文不過是反映他當日的觀點而已。雖然我們認為此事不當,但我們卻能加以解釋。自從聖奧古斯丁(St. Augustine, A.D.400) 時代以來,人們都相信異端者應處以死刑,此觀念在法國革命以後 (一七八九) 方才改變。路德對於處異端者以死刑的利害發生疑問,這是不錯的。他寫著說:「我不贊成把冒充醫生的處死。異端乃屬靈性之事,是無法伐之以斧,焚之以火,或息之以水。管轄人靈魂的,只有上帝自己。」但路德是在此事件發生的老早以前說這話。加爾文具有中古時代的觀點。如潘寧 (Penning) 所說「加爾文的翅翼被我們認為錯誤的觀念所捆綁。」以我們的判斷,加爾文是有罪的。一九〇三年十月二十七日在色維圖被處火刑之地方立了一木牌,其上寫著:「我們是改教者加爾文的忠實感恩之後裔,特定加爾文當代之錯誤的罪,但是我們根據改革運動與福音的真實教義,卻寶貴良心的自由超乎一切,特立此牌以表懺悔。」

#### 十三、日內瓦大學院—1559

加爾文和其他改教者一樣特別重視教育。爲了促進真宗教(因人的信仰必須有理智),並爲社會一般福利,教育乃爲當務之急。所有社會上的領袖均需受教與受訓。

過去於一四二八年在日內瓦曾設立一所大學,創始者爲一位富翁名佛遜迪 (Francoisde Versonnary),他說過:「我視教導爲有益之工作;它驅散愚蒙,使人得智慧,彬彬有禮,培植美德,而且對於公務的處理也是方便的。」他捐了一筆巨款,於是開辦了學校,但經過數年以後因內爭與缺乏經費遂於一五三一年停辦。 所以當加爾文**一五四二**年回到日內瓦的時候,他的特殊趣旨之一即在**辦教育**。 在他的製度中教師具有尊榮地位。他主張初等教育包括七年,大學四年。但在那風 暴之年,他的宿願未能克遂。此外還要喚起人們的注意並籌備所需之款。

他於一五五二年開始行動。市議會爲設立學校購置了一塊地皮。一五五八年加爾文要求他們籌款。市議會委托公証人勸說僱主把他們的遺產捐給這所興辦中的大學。他們也決定將民事法庭所得的罰金留爲建校使用。加爾文親自到各家募款,結果收到一萬金幣。然後開始興工建造。加爾文特別注意建校事宜,逐日監工。一五五九年六月五日校舍舉行獻堂禮。從前多病,以後獻身基督教教育的比莎(Theodore Beza)被派爲初任校長。在他對已注冊的一百六十二位學員致詞中說:「我奉上帝的名勸勉你們不要對自己不忠。在柏拉圖足資紀念的話語中說,離棄正義與道德的知識不過是技巧而非真理……諸君集於一堂,並非如希臘人爲求知識的修養,體力的夸示,乃爲學習最高的真理和極優越的科學,造就自己,以榮上帝名,以致將來造福你們的國家;不但如此,你終須記得末日你們要在主前爲你們所領受的神聖使命交帳。」

最初的校舍頗爲簡單,以木板充當桌椅,室內無暖氣裝置,窗上的玻璃也是等到一五六四年才安裝的。因爲學校經費不足,所以教授的俸給不佳,教員都與學生共同食宿,以節省開銷。

加爾文明顯是從斯特恩得到他的教育觀點,斯氏系與加爾文在斯塔斯堡同工的一位著名教育家。斯氏的學校成爲日內瓦大學的模範。董事部乃爲本城的牧師團,他們委派校長教授,經市議會的通過而任命之。學校是免費的。學生並不因年齡或班次而分優劣,乃在於他的智力與進步的程度。學生上課是從午前七時至十時,午後一時至四時,每年授課十一個月。課程表裏充滿了《聖經》研究與詩篇歌頌。學生必須參加主日的三次崇拜和周間的每日早禮拜。禮拜六下午還有要理問答之研究。

學校的發展突飛猛進。五年內有學生一千五百人,來自歐洲各國。蘇格蘭的改教者諾克斯約翰 (John Knox) 即於此受教,他說:「這是從使徒時代以來最優良的基督學校。」當這些學者畢業以後回到他們的本教會去,在傳播加爾文主義的觀點上都有莫大的感化力。加爾文逝世數年後,因缺乏經費,學校的行政逐漸惡化。

#### 十四、加爾文的教訓(一)

### 【神的主權】

加爾文是一個有理性的思想家。他著重系統。他深信在《聖經》中必有一中心的真理,有一基本原則,一切《聖經》真理均以此原則爲主幹。他認爲《聖經》的一切教訓如同車輪,必有一軸心。加爾文發掘的這中心真理就是神的主權。當他在《聖經》中遇見如全能的上帝、萬王之王、萬主之主有關神性的名詞;仔細考察有

如洪水、十災與尼布甲尼撒的降卑等歷史事件;又特別注意到以下諸《聖經》章節(申三 23;四 35;書十一 20;詩九十九 1、2;箴十六 9;賽十 11;但二 44;徒十七 28;羅九 21;弗一 11)時,他就發現都屢次著重神的主權,正如一位《聖經》學者所說:「乃是上帝絕對的治理,管轄一切的現實。」在他的《基督教要義》中有一標題爲「上帝乃眾善之源」並爲「治理萬物者」。在他教導日內瓦市民的問答中他寫道:「上帝將萬事置於他的權能之下;所以他以護理之工管理世界;憑己意製定萬事,本著自己看爲好的治理眾生。」

爲了簡述此項基本原理,加爾文與失掉神主權真理的天主教對抗。路德曾極端 反對天主教的救恩教義,他與他們的爭論點乃在於「人如何能從罪中得救」。天 主教說人得救雖然靠恩典和基督的贖罪,可是人對於自己的得救也有所貢獻;路德 則回到奧古斯丁與保羅的教訓,說:「不是的,人對於得救的事毫無貢獻。人是 藉恩因信而得救。」因此信義宗的基本原理就是唯獨「因信稱義」。而加爾文在 天主教關於救恩的嚴重錯誤上卻有更深入的觀察。他看出他們乃是拜偶像。救恩乃 是上帝的工作,惟獨是上帝的工作。假如人在他得救的事上有所貢獻,算爲自己的 功勞,那他就被抬舉到與上帝同等的地位,他也就得了上帝當得的榮耀。這不啻拜 受造之物。爲了反抗此項虛僞,加爾文特別強調神的主權,他說:「人若不覺得 他在凡事上虧欠上帝……上帝對於他乃是眾善之源,除他以外別無可求,人就總無 法願意順服上帝,向上帝投降。」基本的真理乃是神的主權。

神主權的性質爲何呢?《聖經》把什麼樣的主權歸給我們的上帝呢?

- (1) 是有計劃的主權。這主權並不是武斷、反復無常的。據說回教的上帝阿拉有此種「武斷」的主權。我們的上帝並非如此。他有一永遠的定旨,他按著他「心中的思念」行作萬事(詩卅三11)。此主權受上帝的智慧、公義與聖潔的限製。
- (2) 此主權以慈愛與恩典爲根基。上帝不是一個戀橫的暴君。他沒有權勢的慾望與 轄製別人的意圖。他以熱愛對待他所造的人,他用無限的能力供給他們的需要。他 的慈愛與恩典在他賜給人的一般祝福並特別在賜下他的兒子上有充分的表顯。上帝 愛的最大禮物就是賜下他的獨生子爲世人舍命。
- (3) 此主權是不受限製,是絕對的。包括上帝一切的道德受造者(即人類與天使)、歷史的程序(詩四十六篇),與自然界。
- (4) 此主權並不取消人的責任。上帝的統治權達於至微細節 (你們的頭發都被數過,若沒有上帝旨意的許可,連一只麻雀都不會落在地上),但人不能因此就忽略自己的責任。加爾文說:「如果有人離棄正路……他不能說他錯誤是因他未能作好;反而言之,他乃是眾惡之因,並應自己負完全責任。」

#### 十五、加爾文的教訓 (二)

#### 【預定】

#### 預定的要道,就是上帝從永遠預定每個人的命運,往往與加爾文的名字有聯

系。事實上,這也就是一些人關於加爾文所僅僅知道的一件事。加爾文果真教導了有關預定的道理,那是不錯的。因爲首先他看到預定乃《聖經》中清楚的教訓,其次則是他由認識上帝的觀念中推論出來的。根據《聖經》,如果上帝是有最高主權、無所不知,又有在創立世界以前的計劃,那麼他必預定一切將要成的事,這當然包括人的命運在內。加爾文認爲任何其他的計謀都會侵犯神主權的真理。

如果上帝真是有主權的上帝,那麼人得救的決定因素 (以及其他別的事) 都不會在乎人,這是極其簡明的真理。可是有幾件事應當留心。這並不是加爾文的主要教義,也並不是他的出發點。他在《基督教要義》的初版中並未提到預定。他首先提到此教義是在一五三九年版中,那不過是順便提及,在以後諸版中方占顯著地位。亦即加爾文從未企圖以此爲討論重點,以後在解釋此教義時方才討論。預定是告訴人如何並爲何來到上帝面前。那就是清楚告訴他說:「你來就上帝並不是因爲你這樣選擇。你來,惟因上帝在永世裏如此決定了。在他的計劃中把你包括在內,所以他賜給你意志與能力相信上帝。」

我們也應當記得加爾文知道由於這教義所引起的許多難題。即如:爲何上帝不 造沒有犯罪可能性的人呢?他爲何預定人要墮落罪中呢?那怎能與上帝的愛相調合呢? 一個完全的人怎能受試探呢?他也想到這些問題,但他對這些問題並沒有答案。雖 然如此,他還是教導人關於預定的道理,因爲這是《聖經》中的教訓。

預定論對加爾文來說,不僅是上帝知道誰要相信,能看到將來,能預告誰要接 受福音並誰要拒絕福音,此外也暗示著上帝決定誰要相信,誰不相信,因此這並不 僅僅是預知,乃是預定。

這不能說上帝不公平。實在說來,人類是陷在罪中,世人在亞當裏都犯了罪, 因此都當受咒詛被定罪。人若犯罪只能埋怨自己;他若從罪中被拯救必得多謝主 恩。因爲他自己掉進罪坑裏,惟獨藉著上帝的恩典把他從罪坑裏救出來。上帝是公 平的,有位格的,正如加爾文在《要義》中說:「上帝所願意的必定是公正的, 因爲是他的美意。」

**預定也不干犯人的「自由意志」。加爾文是指著「人的責任」**說的,因爲亞當是獨一有自由意志的人,那意思是說他有作選擇的完全自由。雖然如此,人並不是被迫而犯罪。他犯罪是甘心願意的,自動的。加爾文堅決反對日內瓦的自由派,他們是泛神論者,否認人有任何自由意志或責任。他說,如果你主張這個錯謬就有以下三個可怕的結果:「第一,在上帝與魔鬼之間將無分別。第二,人就沒有良心來逃避惡事,不過如禽獸一樣,毫無分辨地隨從肉體所好的去行。第三,凡事都可改稱爲善一不拘奸淫、殺害或偷盜——所有可想像的罪惡都可被認爲是懿行善舉。」

最後,此預定的教義不會使人成為一宿命論者,以致他說:「如果我得救就得救;如果我滅亡就滅亡。」相反,預定使人有勇氣,給人確信和安慰。當日的天主教徒對於得救並無把握,就連最虔誠的天主教徒都是戰戰兢兢惟恐自己未能作到得救的工夫。對於加爾文來說,這並不是「作」的問題,乃是「已成」的事實。「成了」,正如英國教會的三十九條論到此教義說:給那些虔誠信主的人「甜密、快樂、不可言喻的安慰,就覺得基督之靈在他們裏面工作」。況且,預定的道理叫人活躍作工。加爾文主義者並非落後者或因為被上帝預定就什麼事都不作了。據歷史所載,他們是火熱的,在善事上熱心並盡可能的推進上帝的國。

#### 十六、加爾文的教訓(三)

#### 【聖禮】

在《基督教要義》第四卷中,加爾文解說聖禮爲「外部的標記,基督藉以申明並保証他對我們的善意,爲了支持我們信心的軟弱,同時試驗我們對他的敬虔」。聖禮乃爲標記,是眼所能見的,是印証(有如公文上的印一樣)保証其中所有的內容,也是信仰的公認,因其價值乃在於信仰的本身。聖禮並未帶給我們什麼新的東西,不過是重新堅定《聖經》中的應許。聖禮帶給我們的信息就是「上帝在基督裏叫世人與自己和好」,所以同樣要求人的信心。

我們應當守幾種聖禮?加爾文說兩種,因爲基督只設立了兩種聖禮。當他在約旦河受洗的時候,他設立了洗禮(以前人守的是割禮,他現在以洗禮代之,當他紀念逾越節的時候,他設立了聖餐,那是在他被釘十字架的前一夜。洗禮並不能神奇地賜給人恩典(有如重生),如天主教所傳授的那樣。加爾文說:「洗禮是準許我們進入教會的起碼標記,爲了與基督聯合,我們可以被列在上帝的子民之中」,「是一種工具,藉此上帝保証我們所有的罪都被涂抹,永遠在他面前消失」水當然是最普通的潔淨動因。藉著洗禮表明我們的罪被洗淨,也是重生的標記,因惟有重生的人才得赦免。洗禮好似對悔改的人說:「這是《聖經》的應許在此堅立——你的心已被改變,你的罪得赦免,你是基督身體上的一個肢體。」對受洗兒童的父母說:「你的孩子和你同樣有上帝的應許,所以你應當盡全力教導他成爲上帝的孩子。」加爾文說,洗禮的方式(或洒水或浸水)並無什麼重要,根本的意義乃在潔淨。

信主父母的嬰孩有資格受洗禮。他們能受洗禮因他們也在上帝的約以內。從有 史以來他們就被認爲在恩典之約中有地位。因此在舊約中也給嬰孩施割禮。洗禮已 經代替了割禮(西二 11、12),況且,基督已表示他對小孩子的愛待,給他們祝福。 彼得在五旬節的時候,叫聽眾確實知道兒童在恩約社會中有相當的地位(徒二 39)。保羅在林前七 14 重申兒童因與父母的關系而成聖。

加爾文說,聖餐乃一「屬靈的筵席,在此筵席中基督証明他自己乃是生命的 餅,我們的靈魂靠此得以喂養,得著真實不朽的祝福」。聖餐並非基督犧牲的重 演,有如**天主教所官稱的**,聖餐乃是: (1) 救贖的標記,餅與酒向我們說明基督死 在十字架上; (2) 上帝爱的印証,上帝甘願爲我們犧牲他的愛子。聖餐正如《聖 經》一樣對受領的人說:「你們因基督的血而得救,你們必須爲他而活。他用他 在十字架上的犧牲買贖你們;這已活畫在你眼前。你當將你自己奉獻給他,正如他 爲你舍己一樣。 <sub>1</sub>

基督果真具體地在酒餅之中嗎?天主教真這樣相信,說這是上帝的奇跡。當神 父宣讀「這是我的身體」的時候,餅就改變為基督的身體。路德派也贊同此說, 因為在主升天的時候,耶穌的身體取了上帝的屬性之一,那就是他的無所不在。慈 運理派(是以瑞士蘇黎克為中心的抗羅宗)否認此點,因為聖禮就是一種紀念,有 如紀念某人的碑塔。加爾文也不贊同變質說,他說:「基督誠然是在聖禮之中, 但不是體質上的同在。**」**無論如何,**基督是同在的,他藉著聖靈與我們同在**,就 是他離世前所應許的。藉此屬靈的同在,我們才能與永活的基督有實際的交通。 聖靈在聖餐中用一種特別的方法來作工,那就是我們與永活之主間的生命聯絡。

#### 十七、加爾文的教訓(四)

#### 【普涌恩典】

普通恩典可以解說爲上帝給世人不當得的恩典,這恩典是以他愛世人的愛爲根 基,藉以把祝福賜給他們,控製個人與社會中的罪惡,並使未重生、不敬虔之類能 行表面之善。

如此說來,上帝普通恩典的根基乃在乎上帝對眾人之愛,他愛眾人因他們爲他 所造。他們是按他的形像造的。雖然我們犯罪,污毀了這形像,但我們究竟還是上 帝所造的。因此正如加爾文所說:「雖然恨惡我們所行的,但他究竟愛由他所生 出的。他恨惡他所造之人的罪惡行爲,但他仍愛人,因他是按照自己的形像和樣式 造他們。」上帝在人所作的和他本人之間加以區分。

#### 這**『普通的恩典**』教義究竟有何意義呢?

- 一、上帝把他的祝福賜給**全人類**是很明顯的。作詩篇的人說:「遍地滿了耶和華 的慈愛。」(詩卅三5下半)上帝不僅賜給基督徒的田地雨水——他也賜給那些不 信的人。他許可不敬虔的人發財享受今牛物質上的福氣。他應許不再用洪水毀滅世 界 (創十一) 。政府爲上帝所設立,爲要賞善罰惡,保護上帝兒女的安全,但這祝 福也照樣臨到不信的人。當作詩的人環視上帝所造的世界時他就慷然說道:「耶 和華善待萬民,他的慈悲,覆庇他一切所造的。」(詩一四五 9)
- 二、在控製罪上,**保守人 (重生)** 不致敗壞到所能敗壞的地步上,都看出上帝普通 的恩典。加爾文說:「……雖然我們的天性是敗壞的,仍有蒙上帝恩典之處。因 爲如果上帝任憑惡人隨意放蕩,則無一人不會犯罪,這正如保羅所說的。」假如

任憑人爲所欲爲,這世界將成爲何等可怕的世界!因此上帝得控製罪。他用種種的方法來控製罪惡的行動。他用人的良心。良心有如交通燈,發出紅色信號警告危險,要抵抗罪的傾向。他用公眾輿論的壓力。人們不敢作某種惡行,因爲怕社會加給他們一個惡名。上帝用懼怕因果關系。一個人因怕下監,所以不致犯偷盜罪。上帝用政府執行律法來保護公民的生命財產。正如創六3說,有聖靈的直接感化來驅使人就犯。上帝這樣保守人不致敗壞到所能敗壞的地步。

三、上帝的普通恩典在許可未重生之人有道德及善行上有所表顯。未重生的人可能和藹可親、誠實、友善、寬大爲懷、樂於助人。加爾文引証以下例子,異教的律師關心權利與正直;哲學家在他們的系統思想中有真理的本質(如柏拉圖相信靈魂不朽);不信的醫生犧牲自己的生命醫治他人的生命。我們如何能明了這些道德與善行呢?這些並不能被認爲是絕對的善行。某項絕對的善行,有如海德堡要理問答上所說,乃是出自聖潔之心的善行,是按著上帝的律法與上帝的榮耀而發出來的。按著我們自己是不能行善的。甚至基督徒也只能發出相關的善行,雖然他們是以信心並愛上帝的心爲動機,但仍有被罪污染的可能。加爾文說:「沒有一件善行不帶著污點。不是由於不完全,就是由於過犯,值得聲稱這是可尊榮的義行。」但這些普通恩典的工作乃是外部的善行一一那就是這些善行雖不是由信心與愛上帝之心發動,但它對社會所生出的結果是善的。從我們現在歷史的立場來看,這些善行對某些人是有益的,因此是善良的。這怎樣解說呢?加爾文回答說:「這乃是上帝的恩賜允許他們這樣作。」他又說:「對此問題(即如何解說不信者也有善行的問題)最確實、最容易的解答就是,這些美德並非自然的普通產物,乃是上帝特殊的恩典。」

世界上為何要有普通恩典與特殊恩典呢?加爾文回答說:「為了保守上帝所造的宇宙。」如果任憑人罪惡的傾向,這個世界不知將伊於胡底!上帝約束不敬虔之人,所以他的國度可以擴展並在世界上達其目的。

#### 十八、加爾文的教訓(五)

#### 【結婚與離婚】

從加爾文的觀點來看,羅馬天主教在這方面犯了兩大錯誤。這兩大錯誤都與《聖經》背道而馳,他們把婚姻高舉爲一種聖禮。他們以爲「婚姻當被視爲一種聖禮,不只是因爲那是上帝的工(主曾命立兩種**聖禮**,即**洗禮和聖餐**),而且也是上帝爲堅定承諾而指定的額外禮儀。在婚姻關系中,就是要像這樣,連小孩都知道分辨。」其實,這是錯的。另外,該教還提倡獨身主義,以爲這是至聖的麥記,也是不合乎《聖經》的。婚姻是很正常、很自然的事,早在人類墮落之前,就已經有此製度。獨身主義反而是違反自然的事,可能導發無數的性犯罪。加爾文說:「在十個修道院中,要找出一個不是妓院,而是純淨聖潔的地方,實在不可能!」由此可知,加氏反對獨身生活(像馬丁路德一樣,他原是修士,娶了一位修女凱莎

琳范波拉 Catharinevon Bora), 後來,他娶了虔敬熱心的艾迪雷特第標爾 (Idelettede Bure) 小姐,更足以証明。

根據加爾文的看法,**婚姻是上帝所頒賜的神聖律例之一**。它是很神聖的,因 爲是上帝所設立的神聖製度,是上帝所設立的,與基督徒有關的新協約體;但它也 是民事上的一個問題,因爲新夫婦在社會上也形成一個聯體。其目的是雙重的: 一、傳延子嗣(這是最基本的目的,在人類墮落前後都一樣地真實)。二、是防止 性泛濫的良藥。後一個目的是在人墮落後才加上去的,因爲罪挾其千鈞之力而來, 爲了避免男女私通亂倫,就擬了一個合理的計策,供其性發泄,遂確立了婚姻製 度。婚姻被認爲是上帝慎選給人的一件禮物,而且是萬般福樂之源。加爾文又警告 說,夫妻共同生活在一起,關系極爲親密,但仍然會產生問題和困難。他說: 「記住!因爲我們天性敗壞了,婚姻就變成一劑藥,因此我們不必奇怪它甜中還帶 著苦。」

論到兩個已婚夫婦之間所發生的問題,他說,首先應盡可能停止彼止鬧意見, 並想方法解決問題。他儼若一位日內瓦的婚姻問題專家,爲那些婚姻觸礁的人提出 忠告。第二,以林前七9爲基礎,他勸告說,干脆分居或者解除婚姻關系。他的確 了解這裏的困難,因爲禁欲是不太容易的,所以,第三,他勸人離婚或撒銷婚約。 撒銷婚約是因爲不能性交。離婚若基於以下三個理由是許可的:一、奸淫。加爾文 以爲這是最不可赦的錯誤,甚至他都不敢爲日內瓦人勸解這檔紛爭事,因爲在舊約 時代,犯了這項罪是要用石頭打死的。二、遺棄(十年不見音訊,就等於是遺棄 了)。三、彼此在宗教信仰上不能和諧共存。這是雜亂婚姻不可避免的結果。有個 意大利的基督徒,爲了躲避迫害遷至日內亙,他的妻子篤信天主教,又拒絕改變她 的信仰跟隋他,加爾文隊贊成他們離婚。在宗教泊害和改教時期,從本質上看,潰 棄和宗教上不能和諧共存的根據,倒是蠻適切的。

日內瓦結婚規則包括:在舉行婚禮前,連續三個禮拜天,在教會崇拜中當眾宣 布結婚。除了領聖餐的那個禮拜天,其餘仟何一天都可以結婚。訂婚後六周內必須 完婚。訂婚具有約束力,唯有當未婚妻被發現是非處女時,或者一方得了不治之疾 病或傳染病時才無效。

### 十九、加爾文的教訓(六)

#### 【官教事工】

據說,十六世紀的宗教改革家都沒有什麼宗教熱誠。人們攻擊他們對異教世界 缺乏傳播福音的工作。華乃克 (Warneck) 說:「他們根本不知道有向海外傳福音的 這種義務。」這個判語是實在的。改革運動之前,鹿特丹的尹拉斯莫斯 (Erasmus) 曾經出版一本書,就寫得是有關這件事,他呼吁大家拿出行動來;但是像路德 (Luther)、 慈運理 (Zwingli)、 諾克斯 (Knox) 和墨蘭頓 (Melanchthon) 一班人,對於 數百萬異教徒的需要卻無動於衷。

無動於衷的理由有很多,其中之一就是對宣教工作的本質和主題有誤解。有些人(如路德)以爲在馬太福音二十八章裏所說的大使命,既傳給了十二使徒,那麼它就只是爲這十二使徒所計劃的,不適用在我們身上。有些人則說,異教主義是上帝對這世界拒絕福音的一個懲罰。另有些人則以爲福音已經傳到地極。還有另外一些人則說,國家一定要先某督教化,然後再透過政治領導者來傳福音。

此外,我們也需要了解一下當時的情勢。在那個時候,歐洲以外的世界實際上是鮮爲人知的,對於遙遠彼方的認識,也只不過是一點兒模糊的概念而已。探險工作幾乎還沒有開始,除了一些大膽的探險家渡過海峽,帶回一些奇怪的故事外,當地還不曾與其他地區經常來往呢!

再者,歐洲的基督教人士起初都忙於爲生存而奮斗。葛拉佛 (Glover) 說:「改革家們一心一意想從教皇政治中爭取自由,和建立信仰上的新團體……所以,外面世界的需要遂被遺忘了。」在大部分國家裏,新教徒——即信奉基督教者,都恆受羅馬天主教的迫害,生活得膽戰心驚,時刻有生命的危險。他們很可能一覺醒來發現財產都充了公,警察正站在門口,準備把他們帶進監獄裏。既然大部分人民都敵視他們,他們只好把精力花在保護自己上。既或政府方面給予一些友誼,像英格蘭和蘇格蘭那樣,教會所能做的也只是自顧不暇而已。

加爾文似乎也和他的同工一樣,有一些誤解和狹隘的概念;然而他似乎多具有 些宣教熱誠。當他評論以賽亞書十二章 4、5 節時,他寫到:「這拯救者(基督)的 工作是何等地美善,應當將它傳遍世界各處。」論到基督的大使命,他又說: 「主勸告傳福音的牧師到遠方去,以便將拯救的大好信息傳遍到世界各地。」

後來,他果然試圖作了一次宣教的冒險。事情是這樣的,海軍上將柯利尼 (Conligny) ———位法國的加爾文主義者,擬了一個構想,要把法國新教的種子散播到海外殖民地去。這下解決受迫害的法子終於有了:羅馬天主教既不容忍我們,我們就自己另辟地而活。所以,一五五五年,他就差遣了一支探險隊,在杜蘭特區費勒蓋那 (Villegagnon) 的領導下走向巴西。正如他所想的一樣,費勒蓋那很同情新教,他先在殖民地作了很好的準備,並請柯利尼帶更多的移民者以及兩位牧師,來照應當地人的屬靈需要。柯利尼隨即央求加爾文,加爾文立刻就答應了。他還特別使日內瓦教會注意到這件事,以征求自願者;結果有二人自願加入,一是五十歲的理查 (Richer),一是三十歲的查提爾 (Chartier)。這些加爾文主義者都表現出一副首批基督教宣教士的特質來。一五五七年,他們抵達巴西,發現費勒蓋那是那麼熟誠和願意合作。他告訴他們,他也相信耶穌唯一的中保,唯有藉著信心才能獲得拯救。後來,這些宣教士們發現土著間的工作好艱難,而且沒有任何收獲。在理查寫的一封書信中,說到有關這個蠻荒地區的景況,說他們三餐不繼,土著們粗魯又愚昧無知,在道德方面如同盲眼的瞎子。唯一還有成功希望的,就是把些年輕土著帶到某督教團體中加以訓練,再送他們回自己人那裏去。

現在,好景不常,費氏方面開始反對了,這時候羅馬天主教也再次在法國占了 上風。費氏放棄對新教的同情,命令他們停止宣教工作,並且把他們驅逐出境。如 此,另爾文主義者首次嘗試的宣教活動失敗了,但這至少顯示出加爾文關心異教世界的需要。

#### 二十、加爾文的教訓(七)

#### 【娛樂】

很多人都以爲加爾文是一個很嚴謹而冷峻的人,平日總是一副道貌岸然,不苟言笑的樣子;其實,這絕不是實情。他的生活雖然忙碌,但是他一定騰出時間來作一些有趣的消遣,松馳一下繃緊的神經。他經常和朋友在花園玩一種擲環套樁的游戲(類似我們擲鐵蹄,或對著木樁擲環的游戲);冬天則改玩 clef,和人比賽看誰可以將一串鑰匙拋向桌沿滑動而不落地。雖然他不像路德一樣生性快活,毫無疑問地那是因爲他經常鬧病的結果;但他卻是一位和藹的主人。當大伙兒聚在一起的時候,幽默的笑語就不絕於耳。他的應答捷巧如流,據說,他最會講雙關俏皮話,總是逗得客人們個個笑得前俯後仰。

這些事都是他在《基督教要義》(Institutes)中論基督徒自由的時候順便提到的,他說:「我們仍可以說說笑笑,或享用食物,或在自己或祖遺的以外增加財產,高興的時候一樣可以聽聽音樂,喝喝酒什麼的。」

但他卻反對無節製的娛樂。他認爲娛樂不可在人的生活中占首要地位,它們應該是次要的,藉以消除疲勞,和提上帝用,是人一個很好的工具。所以有節製的飲酒,他是不反對的;無節製的飲酒將使人淪爲與野獸一般。加爾文說:「假使一個人知道自己沒有什麼酒量,但他卻硬是喝下三杯,結果爛醉如泥,那他不是豬嗎?」

有幾種娛樂是他所嚴格禁止的,其一就是玩牌。他反對打牌的主要理由,並不是因為人們靠老天保佑玩牌,而是因為那會使人們浪費大好光陰和導致賭博。因此他告誡日內瓦學校的學生們不可玩牌(或跳舞)。抓到賭博的人,就在他脖子上掛一副牌讓人取笑,以為懲戒。一五四六年,加爾文還幫政府通過一項法律:玩牌只準在酒館裏玩,而且一次不可超過一小時。

其次,加爾文堅決反對跳舞。並不是因爲它本身有什麼不好(它還是一種運動呢!《聖經》裏也有好多正當使用舞蹈的例子,加爾文是首要的《聖經》神學家,當不會不知);而是因爲它產生了副作用,是奸淫和淫蕩不拘的根源。所以他以爲,要保持純潔的思想和貞節的心,就不可涉足跳舞。因此,在日內瓦跳舞被抓到,要罰錢和坐牢。他教會一個長老的太太就因爲在訂婚場合中提議跳舞,而遭受極嚴重的懲戒。

說到戲院,加爾文倒有些保留。他並不反對戲劇這類東西。本質上言,扮演一個角色並不算錯,演員在演另一個人物時,他也並沒有淹沒自己的本性。因此加爾

文頗贊成,至少不討厭這類古典戲劇。有一次,他甚至延後下午講道的時間,以使整出戲能全部演完。他反對人描寫《聖經》中的景象,因爲那是上帝的一部分啓示。他也反對男扮女裝,或者女扮男裝。一般來說,加爾文對戲院還是很懷疑,因爲在一般男女演員間道德水準太低;假使他們在私生活中能崇尚高水準的道德,他可能對當代戲劇會多表些同情。

## 廿一、加爾文的教訓(八)

#### 【教會合一】

教會合一是一項基督教各宗派在其目標上聯合的運動。自從改教以來,就有許多嫌隙與裂縫存在,單單在美國,就有二百五十個以上的獨立宗派,其中有些是自由派,有些介乎自由派與正統派之間,有些則與我們一樣是篤信歷史的基督教信仰。我們應該分成這麼多獨立派別嗎?主張教會合一的人士一定會說:「不可以!這些分割真是一大丑行,等於是將耶穌所穿的無縫外衣撕成碎片,我們實在應該致力於教會的合一。」

加爾文約翰對於這件教會分裂的事相當敏感,有些人因而認為他沒有容忍的氣量,難以與異己共存,所以說他孤芳自賞。其實,不是這樣的。對於這些分裂,他特別感傷,稱之爲「對耶穌身體的無端殘害」。他企圖在教會間提倡和平,使大家能和諧共存。但是改革宗和路德宗之間關於領主餐的問題太令他遺憾。他曾經被路德很不客氣地指責了一番,心裏不大舒服,就寫了一封信向其友布林格(Bullinger)傾訴,他說:「我希望你還能記得,路德真是一位很了不起的人,你看,他的天資過人,他的毅力堅忍不拔而且持久,他學什麼像什麼,隨時準備參與搗毀反基督國度的事,同時,他還傳揚拯救的真理。現在即使他稱我爲惡魔,我還是心悅誠服地承認他是上帝的傑出僕人。」加爾文真是「宰相肚裏可以撐船」啊!

你們也許會問:假使他對教會分裂的事感傷,那他爲什麼還要脫離羅馬天主教呢?原來依加爾文的先見,羅馬天主教已經變得不再是一個真教會了。所謂真教會的標記是:(1) 忠實傳講上帝的道;(2) 根據基督製定的律法執行聖禮。然而,當日的羅馬天主教卻是個「腐敗的組織,……正義之光被製壓,遂失其光芒」,而且「可咒的冒瀆神聖之事取代了主的晚餐」,教會若蹈此錯,而且沒有改革的可能時,那麼,你的責任就是脫離她。

所以,根據加爾文的想法,第一,堅持教會要有兩個標記的存在。上帝的道是 至高無上的,聖禮一定要被正確地了解和執行。假使真是這樣子,你們教會就可以 算是真教會了。第二,記住,我們與別的教會互有責任,沒有人能單獨存活,不要 忽視另一些正統教會。加爾文說,各真教會都是上帝的兒女,應該彼此拿出兄弟之 誼,互相幫忙才對。 依加爾文的看法,大家一定得拿出魄力剔除彼此之差異,共同爲教會之合一而努力,那麼其成功就指日可待了。他承認,大家在屬靈上必是合一的,因爲我們都是上帝所揀選,都是同一位救主基督的僕人,也被同一位聖靈所膏,目標也同是一個天國,這些事實無可否認地使我們聯合在一起。但是它應該更明顯化,對那些教會以外的人來說,教會實不該分裂,因爲內在屬靈的聯合,他們看不見啊!因此加爾文對於教會合一很感興趣,當英國教會方面正擬開研討會時,他立刻寫信告訴他們,如果這能促使教會聯合在一起,那麼他就毫不猶疑地渡海來參加。他又寫信給德國的路德宗教會說:「有些小小的不同不妨保留著,我們不要爲此爭得你死我活;但是讓我們在救恩大元帥的旗幟指揮下齊一步伐,勇往直前,向著黑暗與死亡的權勢進軍。」

教會應努力聯合的基礎是上帝的道,這是唯一堅固的基礎,因爲「沒有上帝的道作基礎所形成的聯合,都是對上帝不虔敬的小團體,也是不信者的組織」。他建議各基督教會、德國的路德宗、瑞士的慈運理宗和改革宗、法國的改革宗,和英國的安立甘宗都派遣代表參與國際會議,然後在會議中,以《聖經》爲基礎,研討彼此的差異,並擬出一項信經或信條。當然,每一宗派都必須願意討論這些差異才行,還要有顆謙卑的心,一個想向大家學習的心,承認上帝並沒有把真理只賜給我一個教會。這樣可使我們對那些不按照我們一樣解釋《聖經》的人加以忍耐,這也就是說每個人必須願意對原則上不傷大雅的地方讓步。

據其領導信念來看,加爾文的確是想把教會聯合在一塊兒,他也得到慈運理宗、路德宗、甚至羅馬天主教的認同,共赴教會的合一;在聯合瑞士教會方面,他總算是成功了。此外,他也遭到其他改革宗方面的漠視和抗拒,日內瓦問題重重,他自己也卷進這場是非中,使他終日忙得不可開交。但無論如何,加爾文是提倡教會合一的。

#### 廿二、加爾文地上事工的完結

加爾文生平的最後階段乃是他最愉快的經驗,往往稱此爲勝利時期。教會與政府在日內瓦互相合作,有一牧師團體照顧教會的屬靈需要,予以相當領導,並以《聖經》的原則來訓誨政府職員。政府有事往往來向加爾文請教。學校爲有能幹的基督徒教師所管理。日內瓦迅速地獲得模範基督教社會的榮譽。

在此時期內值得人痛心的事就是加氏的健康逐日衰弱。他向來不是強壯的。他 年輕的時候即患頭痛病。他健康受影響也多半由於工作過多,而又缺乏運動。及至 年長,頭痛病更形加重。消化不良,往往使他日食一餐。他有胃潰瘍,以後又患風 濕神經痛、痔瘡、膀胱結石、時常發昏、氣喘。最後他患四日熱(即每隔四天身體 發燒)及肺病。他說他一生並無健康之日。 雖然如此,他卻作了非常偉大的工作。除了重編《基督教要義》之外,他又寫《聖經》注釋,從事次數頻繁的書信往來、演講。他差不多每周講道五、六次。據 說他的講道是簡明、直接的,以誠懇來闡明《聖經》的教訓。

一五六四年二月二日他在日內瓦學院講完他最後的一堂課,二月六日則是他最後的一篇講道。他講時頗爲困難,但終於完成了。三月市議會請求全市民爲加氏恢復健康而祈禱。四月他被抬到教會舉行聖餐禮拜,當他用顫抖的聲音與會眾同唱「主阿,讓你僕人安然去世」的詩時,多人淚下。他日漸衰弱並求主早日接取靈魂。四月二十五日留下遺囑。他身無積蓄,因他堅持拒受薪金。教皇比烏第四(PopePiusIV)有一次論到加爾文說:「新教異端的能力即在此,就是金錢在他身上也絲毫沒有魔力。假如我有像他這樣的臣僕,我的教國必擴展到四海之外。」加爾文所僅有的一些金錢他都捐給日內瓦學院、難民和他的親屬。

四、五月時舉行了一連串的送別會,許多人受感動。他接待日內瓦的牧師團,並向他們述說爲本城的宗教改革運動而有的鬥爭、困難與上帝所賜的最後勝利。他勸勉他們要支持他的後繼者比沙如支持他自己一樣。他最後的一封信是寫給法勒爾的,勸他「留意我們的同工,那是與教會有益的」,又說:「我與基督同在,死活於我足矣,基督對那些屬他的人,在生在死都毫無所失。」當法氏收到此信後,立刻離開牛查台,雖年逾八旬,仍步行全程,企圖在他的朋友未死以前見他一面。

他對市議會代表的臨終告辭頗令人受感。他們來向他表示敬愛,加爾文請求他們饒恕他往日的發怒(他容易犯的罪就是脾氣,他說這是「我不易馴服的野獸」)。

論到此次的會面,比沙說:「任何的離別所留下的悲痛也不能勝過這些人的。由於他的職分,他們要仰望他,他對他們的訓誨猶如來自父神,他們愛他如父親一樣,因爲他從小就認識他們、訓練他們。」

一五六四年五月廿七日,在他背誦保羅的話「我現今的苦楚若比起將來要顯於我們的榮耀就不足介意了」後,他便安睡於主懷,享年僅僅五十四歲。日內瓦與全抗羅宗均爲其逝世舉哀,並承認一位偉大的領袖榮返天家。如克拉登(Colladon)寫著說:「當那天太陽西沉的時候,這世界的大光即被取入天。」在教會的記錄中,在他的名字旁邊寫著幾個簡單的字:「二十七日禮拜六歸天。」次日葬於公共墓地。墓碑石上僅刻有J.C.二字母以示埋葬之所。如此終結了這位偉大上帝僕的地上事工。

# 加爾文基督教要義卷 1-2

# 第二部分:加爾文的思想及著述

#### 一、緒論

約翰加爾文 (Jean Calvin) 所著《基督教要義》 (Institutio Christianae Religionis) 的初版在一五三六年出現於巴塞爾 (Basel)。同年的下半年加爾文在日內瓦開始他的改教運動。當改教大師路德馬丁 (Martin Luther,1483-1546) 所領導的運動在日耳曼及斯干德那維亞諸地已獲得顯著進展,而慈運理 (Huldreich Zwingli,1484-1531) 在德語區瑞士 (German Switzerland) 所領導的改教運動亦已在各主要城市立下了鞏固基礎。英格蘭已擺脫了教皇的管束,允許英譯《聖經》流傳,進入了教會革新的軌道。路德和他的能幹助手墨蘭頓 (Melanchthon) 及慈運理以拉丁文所寫的作品,雖然爲當局所禁止,但卻爲歐洲多數學者所傳誦。路德的許多作品曾有效地討論到神學上一些重要問題。一五二一年,當墨蘭頓廿四歲時,他寫了一部關於路德宗教義撮要的書,《教義要點》 (Loci Communes)。慈運理在《論真假宗教》 (Trueand False Religion) (一五二五年) 一書中和另外一些其他的作品中,也闡述了一些他和他的同志們所欲強調的教義。可是無論如何,加爾文乃是第一個試圖著作系統神學綱領的復原派作家,他的書注定了要得到廣泛的流傳,成爲影響最大的重要著作之

改教運動的開始並不是一種集中的運動,而是用以應付西方教會所普遍面對的嚴重情況的許多地域性和獨立性的運動。路德在撒克遜(Saxony)的成功和其他地域之采納他的改教觀念使瑞士的改教領袖得到很大的鼓勵。然而嚴格說來,他們並不是路德的門徒;他們單獨地找到他們的結論,根據他們的環境和信仰上的需要來組織地域性的革新教會。復原教(Protestantism)各派之合一雖屢經建議,屢有嘗試,卻不曾完全成功。其結果是路德宗的復原教(Lutheran Protestantism)盛行於日耳曼各邦及瑞典、芬蘭、丹麥、挪威(Norway)諸地,而發源於瑞士的改革宗(Reformed Protestantism)則伸展到日耳曼的一部分、尼特蘭、蘇格蘭,以及在法國、匈牙利、波希米亞等地處於羅馬天主教勢力之下的小數教會。英聖公會(Church of England)則兼有復原教路德宗及改革宗的性質,但比它們保留著更濃厚的中世紀色彩,並發展一些獨特的性格。此外有許多急進派興起,當中有許多可歸入於重洗派(Anabaptists),這一派的份子以不同的方法,在不同的限度內,拒絕關於聖禮和三位一體說的傳統教義,並反對當時教會和國家之間的緊密關系。

若說復原教的改教者曾把分裂的原則帶給西方教會,那是很大的錯誤。教派及分裂的情形在初期的歷史上已普遍存在。一〇五四年教皇和康士坦丁堡的大主教(Patriarch of Constantinople)曾彼此下令革逐對方,從此東正教(Eastern Orthodox)和羅馬教會斷絕了關系。在西方有無數被教廷(Papacy)認爲異端,且被羅馬的異教裁判所(Inquisition)處分的教派興起。早在第十三世紀,一位著名的教士聲稱他

所知道的這種教派有一百五十派之多。中世紀某些教派運動對《聖經》的解釋和十六世紀改教者的態度正相類似。英國的威克裏夫 (John Wyclif,1320-1384) 和波希米亞的胡斯 (John Hus,1363-1415) 領導以《聖經》為根據的改革運動,這運動並未因受處分而終止。裏昂 (Lyons) 的瓦勒度 (Peter Waldo) 早在一一七七年所組織的瓦勒度派 (Waldenses) 在許多國家當中活動,分發以方言譯出的《聖經》章節,並根據記憶復述《聖經》。加爾文認為那些留存到他那時代的瓦勒度派是改教運動的先驅者,復原教的同志;而蘇格蘭的改教者諾克斯 (John Knox) 對蘇格蘭的威克裏夫派亦有同樣的看法。

可是改教運動並非出自任何中世紀教派。它是從中世紀教會中的覺醒精神所產生的。它的領袖們並非來自「異端」的教派,他們本來是修道士及教牧,早年的生活都在準備擔任神甫的職務,或受修道派的苦行訓練,可是他們都爲責任感所驅使,覺得他們應該站出來反對教會製度中的謬誤和弊端。這一行動的方向使他們棄絕了教皇,亦促使他們終身爲教會的革新努力。

早期的教派對於建立全國性或地域性的教會,若不是不曾嘗試,便是嘗試了而歸於失敗。它們多半滿足於對個人的爭取。十六世紀的復原教——路德宗和改革宗——卻從事於改組整個國家裏面的教會。可能的時候它爭取當局的援助,不管是世襲的王侯,如在撒克遜或丹麥,還是民選的長官,如在瑞士的各城各郡。路德的工作是在封建和貴族政治的環境中進行的,慈運理和加爾文是處在民主的環境中。一般地說,羅馬天主教勢力昌盛的國家,如法國及西班牙,其政府是屬專製的。認爲國家與教會的關系是到了國家只能容許一種形式的宗教這一理論,在改教運動的時期不算新鮮。可是國家機構的壯大及自立性這一事實,卻是改教運動的重要因素。

在路德工作開始之前百年,教廷既不能控製國家的政府,它的政策是以和各國政府締結條約或協定來應付它們的要求。這類條約,例如教皇與法國所締結的布羅格那條約(Concordat of Bologna)(一五一六年),在關於委任教牧及其他事上,往往向世俗政府的王侯作很大讓步。締訂條約的製度多少是改教運動時代「地域製度」(territorial system)的先聲。當時的民族主義在歐洲已成爲社會組織的有力因素;日耳曼那些強大封建諸侯正在模仿大國的帝王。在那種情形下,當然的,凡是教皇權力被消滅了的政治區域,教會的改革必包括著采納一種特別地區製的教會組織。當時的復原派在組織上是仿效政治單位的組織,成立許多地域性教會。在加爾文時代,很少有人同意在某一政治單位的范圍內可容許多數不同教派的存在。同意容許信仰及崇拜的絕對自由的,爲數更少,革新派的負責領袖亦無此主張。當時普遍的觀念認爲某一政治單位同時是一個精神上的組合,自然只能有一種形式的宗教。在這方面,十六世紀以後的復原教有了重大的改變,它逐漸成爲教派性的。那單一性的精神已消失了,甚至逼害也不足以維持它;其實復原教對別人從未有過持續和殘酷的逼害的。可是當我們研究加爾文的時代時,必須明白我們所涉及的是復原派初期的教會和國家的關系,那時候所有公民都必須附屬於某一指定的教會。

一五一七年路德攻擊贖罪券的買賣,從此不斷地和那些中世紀製度的衛護者斗 爭。以路德派爲基礎改革日耳曼各區域教會的工作在一五二六年有良好的開始。一 五二四年有一個反對路德主義 (Lutheranism) 的政治同盟成立,但許多擁護路德主 義的組織亦隨之產生。然而改教運動的領袖們實無意采取一種分裂政策。當斗爭開 始之初(一五一八年)及以後,路德及其同志常常要求召開基督教大會來解決革新 的種種問題。這要求已得當局的允許,並期望於一五二六年實現,同年帝國議會在 斯拜爾 (Spever) 舉行, 準許在基督教大會召開以前各地區政府得隨己意決定本區域 所欲遵奉的教派。一五二九年帝國議會第二次在斯拜爾舉行,在皇帝的影響之下, 正式取消了上述的準許,議會中的路德派對此決定提出抗義;以後那些在這文件上 簽名及擁護這文件的就被稱爲抗議者 (Protestant) ,終於這名稱也給加在慈運理派 及加爾文派諸人身上。一五三〇年路德派將墨蘭頓所起草的奧斯堡信條 (Augsburg Confession of Faith) 呈獻給帝國議會,作爲他們信仰的宣言,但被拒絕,復原教各 領袖且奉命須服從教廷命令。可是他們不願服從,並於一五三一年組織一新聯盟, 稱為施馬加登同盟 (League of Schmalkald)。當時朝廷正忙著應付土耳其人從東方 的淮擊及其他一些困難問題,無暇對付施馬加登同盟。一五三六年,由於威登堡協 定 (Wittenberg Concord) 的成立,布塞珥馬丁 (Martin Bucer) 代表那些在聖餐問題上 和路德的主張稍有出入的施塔斯堡 (Strassburg) 及日耳曼南部教會,與路德和他在 撒克遜的同志達到妥協的結果,復原派在德國的地位得以加強。當時路德派教會經 歷許多困難,包括和朝廷的斗爭,到了一五五五年奧斯堡和約以後,路德派教會才 達到了一種比較穩定的地位。

#### 二、慈運理和瑞士的改教運動

同時,德語區瑞士的改教運動領袖慈運理已作完了他的工作。瑞士的政製是民主聯邦製,有一個簡單而有效的代議政府。瑞士的建國是當十三世紀後期,烏利(Uri)、施衛慈(Schwyz)、翁地瓦登(Unterwalden)諸郡組織聯邦抗拒奧國哈布斯堡王朝而起的。經過長期的英勇斗爭,到了一三八九年這小小的共和國才得到獨立。在這時期以前,另外有五郡加入聯邦;到一五一三年,再有五郡及一些附屬地區加入。每一郡的內政大體上是自治的。聯邦議會的主要任務在處理外交事件,其機構是由每郡的兩名民選代表及三附屬地區每區一名代表所組成的。

初期的瑞士是一個由自由農民所組成的小國。以後經過新郡的加入及城市生活的發展,都市人口逐漸增加。小市民的氣質是倔強及富有獨立性的,在這裏教會的權威比不上在多數別的國家那樣堅強。主教須聽命於貝散康 (Besancon) 及買音慈 (Mainz) 的大主教,他們的教區都在國外,沒有什麼實際的權力。瑞士的主教們並不很得一般教士及人民的信服,而教士當中有許多是既怠慢又缺德的。在改教運動的以前及以後,教會的財產,好像在區利赫 (Zurich) 的,多半是在民政長官的控製下。宗教在一般人民的生活中似乎並不重要。

在瑞士,一般人對教廷的看法與其說是把它當作宗教的權威,勿寧說是把它當作世俗的諸侯。瑞士人在他們的獨立戰爭中養成了很好的軍人素質,在這方面聲譽

極高,鄰國軍隊都希望僱佣瑞士青年,各郡當局往往爲外國的經紀人所誘惑,在他們的轄區內代爲招募僱佣兵。聯邦政府於一五〇九年曾禁止這種買賣,但無多大效果。法國及教廷爲當時爭取瑞士僱佣兵的競爭者。歷代教皇均由瑞士兵丁護衛,並僱佣他們代爲打仗。這種佣兵製度所產生的道德墮落問題極爲嚴重,年青人被迫加入外國軍隊而作毫無意義的爭戰,從戰地往往帶回來種種惡習,敗壞他們的社會。教會和教廷的關系非常松懈,容易割斷。

慈運理生於一四八四年正月一日(路德出生後的七星期),他的出生地是托根 堡 (Toggenburg) 山谷中一個叫威得浩斯 (Wildhaus) 的小鄉村,父親是那裏的行政 長官,叔父是一位神甫。這位叔父的名字叫慈運理巴多羅買 (BartholomewZwingli),以教育年青的慈運理爲己任。在威辛 (Wesen),巴塞爾、百 倫 (Bern) 等地學校中時, 慈運理開始學習古典語文, 且表現出在音樂方面的特長。 以後他進維也納及巴塞爾大學。在巴塞爾大學獲得碩士學位之後充任神甫,並定居 於革拉羅(Glarus)。在這時期,慈運理是一位聰明年青的人文主義者,他的思想頗 受米染度喇的皮科 (Picodella Mirandolaof Florence) 之新柏拉圖主義所影響,開始研 究希臘文,愛好伊拉斯母 (Erasmus) 氏的作品。從巴塞爾的導師威吞巴赫他認識到 贖罪券製度的錯誤,也認識了信之重要意義,並對《聖經》的研究發生極大興趣。 在一五一三年及一五一五年,他離開了原來的工作,以隨軍神甫的資格訪問意大 利,在僱佣兵當中工作。看見他的那些替教皇猶流二世(PopeJulius II)爭戰的同胞 弟兄們在諾瓦拉 (Novara) 及馬裏那奴 (Marignano) 地方慘遭屠殺的情形,他的高漲 的愛國心促使他公開發言譴責這種等於奴隸買賣的佣兵製。以後他任愛因西得侖 (Einsiedeln) 的教牧 (一五一六至一五一八年) ,在那裏,一尊童女的黑石像,和販 賣贖罪券的參遜 (Samson) 的訪問,使他深刻地覺醒到中世紀宗教的許多迷信的成 分。他終於把參遜送走了。

這時候慈運理用功研究伊拉斯母版的希臘文新約《聖經》,並手抄了一部保羅的書信(一五一七年)。在宣道方面他也有很好的聲譽。一五一八年十二月他受任為區利赫那大教會的主任宣道師,並在開始他的工作時,決心「從本源宣揚基督」。第二年的夏季,嚴重的疫症襲擊區利赫,加上他本人身體上的疾痛,使他有了更深刻的宗教經驗。從一五一九年到一五三一年他死的時候,他是瑞士宗教工作的領導者。

區利赫地方的人願意揚棄他們的中世紀信仰及規例,正如慈運理的大膽自由的教訓一樣,是很可驚異的。他們贊同慈運理之反對滌罪論及拒絕向聖徒禱告,正如他們擁護他之主張什一捐獻必須出於自願。在一五二二年一群社會名流聚在一起,以吃臘腸破壞大齋規矩。慈運理在替他們辯護的時候主張這是屬於良心自由的事。他曾規勸區利赫議會停止遣送僱佣兵;雖然有好幾千人非法地被征募了,但他們之無法完成教皇的目標使這種佣兵製頗受非難。

慈運理有時雖受修道士們的責難攻擊,但許多神甫都接受他的領導。在某次會 議上他們擁護市長關於只有「上帝的純全之道」才可向人宣講的聲明。慈運理和他 的同工對神甫結婚合法化問題亦極關注。一五二二年他與和他同樣非正式與女人同居(這是當時的普遍辦法)的其他十位有地位神甫,向康士坦思(Constance)主教請求準許正式結婚。主教無法作此允許,即使他願意的話;當時主教的進款大部分取自那些非法和女人同居的神甫的罰款。一五二四年慈運理公開與一位已和他同居數年的寡婦麥恩哈得安娜(Anna Reinhard)結婚。

慈運理在一五二二年的講道中所提出的問題非常之多,第二年的開始在區利赫教區的公民及教士大會之前有了一場劇烈爭論。在他提交大會的六十七條議案中慈運理堅決主張尊重基督的權威並拒絕教皇的權威。他反對化質說(transubstantiation)、對聖徒的崇拜、齋禁、朝聖及一切基督所沒有命令遵行的事。他的主張遭受康士坦思主教的代表所反對;但卻在大多數教士贊同之下獲得大會的通過,由是爲改革掃清了道路。一五二三年在三百五十位教士之前所提出的關於沿用神像一事的爭論,慈運理的主張亦獲通過,結果是在一年之內神像及樂器等物均從教堂移出。以方言代替拉丁語的崇拜早已部分地施行,到了一五二五年四月,彌撒祭被廢棄不用,聖餐禮的舉行則采用比較簡單的儀式。

區利赫的公開論爭指出瑞士改教運動藉以獲得勝利的道路。同樣在別的區域,改教工作的推行都經過在行政官吏之前辯論以後,才由他們決定。有一些學術界領袖把新的教義介紹到亞賓塞 (Appenzel)、巴塞爾、百倫、沙夫哈申 (Schaffhausen)、革拉羅、聖加爾 (St.Gall)、以及國中其他地方,並獲得相當改進,而他們所持的見解實際上和慈運理的主張極相吻合。可是改教團體在聯邦議會的某一重要決議上失利,因此改教運動停留於郡的范圍內,未能成爲全國性的運動。有五個郡反對改革,它們和傳統敵人——哈布斯堡的勢力結成同盟。一連貫的挑撥事件終於造成了內戰,在內戰中區利赫居民給擊敗了,而慈運理,他以隨軍牧師的資格參戰,受傷,於一五三一年十月十一日給敵人以石頭擊死。

一五二九年,慈運理因希望結合瑞士的革新派和路德派,曾和路德在馬爾堡 (Marburg) 會面。除了一議題之外,他們對各點均能同意,可是在聖餐的見解上他 們不能同意。因此,在路德派和瑞士改革派之間,正如墨蘭頓所說的,聖餐問題成 為他們沖突的根源。

#### 三、慈運理的學說

慈運理的著作包括若干對自己信仰的說明,其中最重要的一部爲《對真假的宗教的評議》(Commentary on Trueand False Religion)(一五二五年)。這部書是應意大利及法國友人的要求而寫的,並以之呈獻給法王法蘭西斯一世(當時慈運理希望爭取法王對改教運動的同情)。繼拉丁文原作之後有德文版問世。這部書在它的廣泛性,深度及能力方面雖不能與加爾文的《基督教要義》一書相比,但不失爲一部內容豐富的作品。在他向法王的致詞中,他的語氣是坦率和大膽的。他攻擊當時一般人對教皇的崇拜,恰如可憎惡的偶像崇拜;他暴露政府的錯誤,由於這些錯誤,「人民因君王的罪而受鞭打」,並成爲教牧界貪婪之食物。「全世界如此腐敗、墮

落、及無恥,絕對需要改革。」他鄙視那些所爾波恩學院 (Sorbonne) 的神學家們之以一些哲學的渣滓來代替聖道;他警告國王別以爲可以因政治和平的目的而壓迫福音的宣傳。

慈運理認爲「真」的宗教是那出乎《聖經》的,「假」的宗教是稚弱心靈的迷信及盲從。上帝和人在宗教之中相見,但亞當卻因罪而羞恥,藏匿起來,不能追求恩典。人自己背離上帝,但上帝在「不可言說的恩典中」召人得救。「上帝使人認識自己,使他知道自己的悖逆、不忠、及愚拙」,好像亞當所行的一般。在慈運理的思想中,上帝是發動者,他譴責那些因爲不知道人性之腐敗,不知道依靠自己功績之無望,因此「不願意接受再生之道」的神學家們。基督之被差遣到人間來,是「代表及中保」,是要恢復那些因亞當犯罪而被遺棄者的地位的第二亞當。第一亞當想做上帝,第二亞當處在微賤的人的地位上,要導引他們歸回於上帝。在他討論罪與恩典的著作中,他駁斥那些爲著擔心人們松馳了善工因而不承認基督贖回一切凡信他者的罪的人:

基督教的信仰是信徒靈魂上的一種感覺,正如健康之於人身。人人都能辨明它 是好是壞。一個基督徒因罪的重壓而有悲慘的感覺,在另一方面,當他知道在基督 裏面可得醫治,他的感覺又是何等愉快。那些素來健康的人,對於健康的重視,往 往不如那些久歷病痛者所感覺的那麼深刻。同樣,那些不覺靈魂有病的人,對基督 的珍重,不如那些有此感覺且因此感受痛苦的人。我們既然不深知自己的底細(因 爲我們不知道自己的病症及其嚴重性),我們就不了解基督是我們得救的途徑,而 他本身是無價之寶。但如果我們曾經因自己的疾病而有苦痛的經驗,就是說,如果 我們真的知道自己,知道自己正像是下賤污穢的牲畜,卻在人前裝作偉大、高貴、 正直、神聖;是怎樣地把自己完全交給邪惡的欲念,無論在何事上都讓情欲牽引我 們……如果我們能夠感覺到我們自己的污穢殘疾,且深受痛苦,那麼,當醫生解除 了我們的疾病以後,我們決不至於要說:「我願再有疾病」,就是說「我願再入罪 中」。一個跌斷了腿而找到了好醫生替他治好的人,不至於對自己說:「你的運道 不錯,能夠找到好醫生,那麼盡可放心常常跌斷你的腿,因爲那醫生什麼都能治 療。」他的一生,無論到什麼地方去,在什麼地方走路,必小心謹慎,不再跌斷自 己的腿,因爲他知道要治好一條跌斷了的腿是多麼痛苦的一回事,整個月躺在床上 是何等的不舒服。同樣,當聽到說基督已爲眾人贖罪,便歡呼著說「我們可再犯 罪,因爲基督白白地赦免了一切的罪」的人,是未曾感覺到罪的痛苦。因爲如果他 們曾有此感覺,他們必盡力所能及,小心謹慎,不再陷入罪中。

本書中關於教會問題的討論大半已在一五二四年分別出版的《答恩麥撒爲彌撒祭辯護》(ReplytoJerome Emer's Defense of the Mass)一書中發表。一五二三年在區利赫的第一次辯論中,慈運理曾喻教會爲「基督無瑕疵的配偶,爲上帝的靈所統治培養。」可是現在他抗議基督徒間的小數分子(修道士們)之應用「教會」這一名詞,這些人實際上是在「用盡方法要摧毀教會。」在給恩麥撒的答辯中,慈運理提出會眾(congregation)或群眾(assemblage)在希伯來文及七十譯本(Septuagint)上的意義,他說:「從新約《聖經》我們知道教會(ecclesia)這一字適用在凡奉基督的

名並在基督徒的團體中生活來往的人身上,包括那些並不十分虔信的。」又說: 「從這裏我們知道那承認自己爲信實的全體信徒是被稱爲誠信之民——一教會,但 尚未能稱爲完全的教會,因爲它有許多缺點,而這些缺點有的是基督所寬容的。」 與這種有缺點,有形的,在名義上稱爲信徒的團體對立的,慈運理認爲有「第二種 教會」,它包含那些信實的信徒,是「榮耀和尊貴的教會,基督的配偶,沒有任何 污點或瑕疵的」。若說這種沒有缺點的教會是屬於幻想的,和柏拉圖 (Plato) 的共 和國一樣,那是很大的錯誤,因爲它確實存在於那些將他們的信——相信基督是上 帝的被釘十架的兒子——建立在磐石上之人的心裏。「它不能滿足於使少數人奪取 了全體的榮耀,卻願伸展到全世界,到處接納會友;它的范圍更廣更大,它的美麗 將更增加。」若和「羅馬教皇的教會」相比,這教會是只「建立於上帝的話」,所 以不能有錯。它的會友的數目「不是人的眼目所能看出的。」每一個別的教會有負 責當局來管理它的會友。「但所有這些教會都屬於同一教會,即基督的配偶,希臘 人稱之爲大公教會,我們稱之爲普世教會。」

慈運理對聖禮的見解和路德的見解不同。他認爲新約的「奧秘」(mysterion) 這一字的主要意思是「開創」,而其所指非但是一種開始,亦是一種完成。希臘人 比拉丁人「更虔誠,更博學」,他們往往稱主的晚餐爲「祝謝」(Eucharistia);喜 樂地祝謝基督的死。基督的肉不能以肉身來吃,也不能以精神來吃。屬於肉身的就 不屬於信仰。在「這是我的身體」這一句話中,「是」一字乃「表示」或「象徵」 的意思。靈魂由於信仰而從基督得到培養。在聖餐中相通的基督徒「見証他們同爲 一體的肢體」;那接受象徵的餅的人必須有基督信徒的樣式,因爲他已領受了信托 基督的印記。他認爲俄利根 (Origen) 的主張是對的,並解釋說:「聖禮的基本意義 是信仰,即相信基督爲我們舍命,他是靈魂的糧食。」在以後發表的聲明中慈運理 繼續堅持他的主張,認爲基督的身體及血的出現,對於有信心的人,不是有形的, 而是屬聖禮的——爲了信心的默想。也許讀者願意知道這位瑞士改教領袖關於教義 的簡要主張,來和加爾文對同類問題的看法作一比較。

德語區瑞士復原教派的性質從第一及第二種紇裏微丟信 (Helvetic Confessions) 中可窺見其一部分(參歷代名著《歷代基督教信條》)。這二大文獻的主要擬稿人 爲**布靈爾** (Heinrich Bullinger),從一五三一年慈運理死後到一五七五年他自己過世 這段時間,布靈爾是區利赫教會的傑出領袖。上述文獻對預定論 (doctrine of predestination) 作了簡明的解釋,小心避免反律法主義及定名論的觀點。關於聖餐 問題瑞士改革派與路德派主張不同,前者認餅與酒爲標志,而不能轉變爲它們所象 徵的;但亦不僅僅爲標志而已,卻同時是「神聖事物的奧秘記號」,使參加的人由 於信仰而在靈性上享受基督的奧秘的體及血。

在崇拜儀式方面,慈運理派所遵循的原則也與路德派不同。路德本人願意保留 那些不爲《聖經》教訓所反對的中世紀的崇拜儀式,而慈運理卻主張簡化崇拜儀 式,擯除一切《聖經》所沒有指示或命令的儀式。因此在慈運理派的教會中,神像 和樂器都移走了,代之以最簡單的公共崇拜方式。在這些和另外一些別的方面,復 原教中的路德宗和改革宗到現在各自保留了它們的特殊主張。但卻明了十六世紀改革宗神學的最具權威的理論,我們不能不求之於加爾文的《基督教要義》一書。

#### 四、加爾文的早年

一般都同意加爾文是改教運動的第二位偉大人物。他生於一五〇九年七月十日,比路德年輕廿六歲。他的父親加爾文·格拉爾 (Gerard Calvin) 是諾陽 (Noyon) 的一位有名望人物,曾任該地教區主教的秘書及天主教的法律顧問。格拉爾的第一位太太法蘭克真尼 (Jeannele Franc) (即加爾文約翰的母親) 是一位從坎布內 (Cambrai) 移居諾陽的退休的旅館業者的女兒。

加爾文的才智很早就被發現,幼年時得與某貴族家庭的子弟們同受優良教育。 當他還是童稚的時候即受任教會的職務,他的入息使他得以在一五二三年(那時他十四歲)以未及冠的童年進入巴黎大學深浩。

在巴黎他的業師們都看出他的超越才智並盡力教導他。在馬奇學院的科底亞教授 (MatuinCordier) 的督導之下他立下了拉丁文的基礎。在孟太古學院 (Callegede Montaigu) (伊拉斯母在這裏發現了蛋與神學都是過了時的老貨) 他住了三個忙碌的年頭,他吞下了一些於他的健康無益的蛋,卻拒絕接受神學。雖然如此,孟太古學院對他有一件重要的貢獻 (一個大學對天才青年所應有的貢獻) ,就是教他怎樣表現自己。學院的課程著重於辯論方法;這時期加爾文的那正在從童年轉變過來的聲調常常拖著悠長的語句在評論關於亞裏斯多德的哲學問題。這種訓練,最少這種訓練的一部分,使加爾文得到了善於擇用字句的非常才力。

天才和訓練,若加上了宗教上和道德上的修養,必有更豐富的生命,而當一五二五至一五二八年在孟太古這段期間他可能已有了一部分的宗教教育,因爲當時學生們的思想頗爲人文主義派及路德派對經院哲學的批評所激動;許多人正在爲著他們的信仰而冒艱險。那位要在一五二九年爲著路德主義被焚的伯爾金 (Louisde Berquin) 就是這時候同學中的傑出領袖。雖然加爾文仍相信他自己是一個絕對的教皇派,但可能那新的酵已進入於他心中。

一五二八年他獲得文科學位之後原計劃攻讀神學。可是他父親格拉爾在諾陽與當地天主教會有了沖突,因對教會不滿,在盛怒之下命令兒子轉修法律(路德在二十二歲時入修道院爲修士,加爾文十八歲時順從父命攻讀法律),於是他進入奧蘭(Orleans)的著名法學院。其實加爾文所喜愛的是人文主義的文學,而所敬仰的人物是那位半路德派的德國人文生義者倭勒馬(Melchior Wolmar)。可是他對法學仍然用心攻讀,並曾幫助一位朋友著書支持這位朋友的法國教授伊多理(Etoile)反對一度曾爲加爾文業師的意大利教授亞斯亞提(Alciati)。他雖是一個有法學學位的人,但在一五三一年他父親死後他就放棄了以法律爲職業的意向,在巴黎研究希臘文、希伯來文、及拉丁文經典,受業於當時新受法王法蘭西斯一世委派的皇家講師門下。

當時加爾文的周圍有一群深受那位著名人文主義者勒非甫耳 (Le fevre) 所影響的青年人文主義學者,(勒非甫耳爲伯達 NoelBeda 所領導的所爾波恩派神學家所攻擊)。以一個人文主義者的資格,加爾文曾發表評辛尼加的《寬仁論》

(Commentary on Seneca's DeClementia) 一書的批評,這部書在當時被認爲是寬待復原派的一種掩護。加爾文的著作表現出他對經典及教父的精深造詣,在他的書中他曾把「專製」一詞的定義釋爲「違反人民意志的統治」,似乎有指摘法國的專製政治的意思。

加爾文的表兄弟阿立威坦(Olivetan)是加爾文的親密同志之一。當時阿立威坦和急進的宣道家法勒爾(Farel)常在一道;一五三一年他到了日內瓦。阿立威坦的父親和加爾文的父親一樣,曾受僱於諾陽的教會,兩位後輩大概在那時候已有了良好的友誼。根據那位著名的加爾文派學者杜馬格(Emile Doumergue)的說法,阿立威坦是「使加爾文成爲福音派的促成人」。阿立威坦比加爾文大幾歲,也早他幾年成爲復原教信徒。一五二八年他從奧蘭逃到復原派勢力下的施塔斯堡城,在那裏從事研究希伯來文及希臘文。一五三二年九月那個曾由改教運動帶來了新生命與新追害的南阿爾卑斯的瓦勒多派在安哥尼(Vald'Angrogne)的上撫然(Chanforan)舉行了一個重要會議,在這會議中,瓦勒多派的弟兄們委派了阿立威坦(他與法勒爾同來)替他們準備一部法文譯本的《聖經》。一五三五年初期這部書在內沙特勒(Neuchatel)完成,書中的新約序言是出自加爾文手筆,是在前一個秋天寫成的,當時法國的監牢裏囚禁著許多復原派信徒,而有些已受焚刑。從加爾文在這篇序文中所用的語句,可以清楚看出他完全承認自己的立場和那些正在遭受迫害的法國福音派及瓦勒多派是一致的,他說:「如果我們從這一國給驅逐出去,請記得全地都是屬於主的。如果我們給拋出地球之外,請記得我們並非被拋出上帝的國度。」

這種堅決的立場是在好幾個月之前就已決定的。一五三三年十一月一日加爾文的朋友可拍 (NIcholas Cop) 在大學發表了一篇演講,加爾文被嫌疑爲這篇講詞的擬稿人,不能不自巴黎逃出。這篇演講的內容夾雜著伊拉斯母派 (Erasmians) 及路德派的主張,也似乎是擁護自由主義而反對所爾波恩的神學家的。這時期加爾文在昂姑勒美 (Angouleme) 住了好幾個月。他經過了法國的好些地方,訪問了年老的勒非甫耳,那時候這位老先生是在法王的姊妹昂姑勒美的馬格蕾 (Marguerited' Angouleme) 的保護之下,住在尼拉 (Nerac)。一五三四年五月四日以前。加爾文即放棄了他的從諾陽教會而來的進款。加爾文自己說 (未提時日):[HTH]「由於突然的感召,上帝克服了我的剛硬的心,使它成爲可教化的。」[HT]我們或許可把這「突然感召」的時日放在前述的兩個時日之間。可能這時候,加爾文開始對伊拉斯母及勒非甫耳的妥協性的改革感覺失望。在這時候已經有了他所敬愛的人,正在爲著比前述兩位的更正確的信仰而犧牲生命。

加爾文的簡單語句無疑地正隱藏著他內心的長期斗爭。在另外的地方他說,爲 著他對教會的虔敬,他曾經情感地反抗自己的對復原教的傾向。但他終於說服了自 己,認爲對教會的真正忠心包含著【HTH】「努力糾正它的錯誤」。【HT】 在阿立威坦的《聖經》譯本出現之前,加爾文已開始他的《基督教要義》的著述。這書的大部分大概是一五三四年在昂姑勒美寫的。一五三五年他住在麥茲(Metz)、施塔斯堡和巴塞爾。加爾文描寫自己爲「天生的畏羞和怯懦」,寧願當一個附從者而不願充任改教運動的公開領袖。在巴塞爾他化名爲路加紐(Martianus Lucanius),準備把他的書付印。一五三五年八月他把原稿交給柏拉特(Thomas Platter)——巴塞爾一位傑出的出版家。巴塞爾在當時是阿爾卑斯山以北最大的販書中心,就在這裏伊拉斯母的希臘文新約於一五一六年交給弗羅賓(John Froben)代爲出版。這時候伊拉斯母正在巴塞爾度其最後幾個月的生活,他在一五三六年七月死於弗羅賓家中。我們沒有憑據証明伊拉斯母曾與加爾文見面或曾讀到加爾文的書。《基督教要義》一書是在一五三六年三月由柏拉特出版的。

加爾文以書信體裁寫成這書的序論,並以之呈獻與法王法蘭斯一世(一五一五一五四七,爲瓦洛王朝(The Valois House)最偉大的國王)。這信所下的時日是一五三五年八月廿三日,根據加爾文的解釋當初寫作這書的原意是把它當作教授學者的綱要,但在出版時決定加上了一篇呈獻給國王的序論,因爲當時有許多信仰相同的人在法國給判處焚刑,而爲這種殘暴行爲辯護者竟說這些受刑的人是犯了誹謗罪,是邪惡和叛亂的人。加爾文告訴我們他對這書的希望是以解釋這些殉道者的信仰「來証明在主眼中他們的死是何等寶貴」,並使「別國的人最少能對他們生發同情之念。」

當《基督教要義》出版的時候,這位年青的作家已動身到非拉拉 (Ferrara) 去。當時他對瓦洛王朝還沒有失望,化名爲伊斯比維爾 (d'Espeville) 和其他被放逐的法國人一同托庇於非拉拉的倫尼公爵夫人 (即法王法蘭西斯的堂妹)。可是那位公爵在教皇的影響下,決意把那一群投靠他那信奉復原教的太太的法國文人驅散。加爾文乃再次越過阿爾卑斯山,計劃暫時遁居於施塔斯堡,終因受戰爭影響,他繞道經日內瓦,於一五三六年七月的某一天,在那裏宿了一夜。

# 五、法勒爾與加爾文在日內瓦

當時一個復原派作家能夠平安到達日內瓦這一事實的背後,有著一連貫值得注意的事件。現在的瑞士西部那講法語的區域在當時剛剛開始和瑞士共和國發生政治上的聯系。百倫這一郡對於擴展它的影響一事,特具雄心。甚至在它經過一度著名的爭論(一五二八年正月)而正式成爲慈運理派之前,它已經采納了有利於福音派傳播聖道的政策,鼓勵在非利堡(Freiburg)以南講法語的地區進行宣教工作。一五二六年十一月法勒爾(1489—1565)來到這一區工作,他是一位熱心的傳道人,生於法國東南部的加普(Gap),他在巴黎和摩斯(Meaux)地方曾結識了那位法國改教運動的先驅者靳非甫耳。遠在一五一二年勒非甫耳即開始講論因信稱義的道理,他的基本信仰是屬於復原派的。法勒爾和勒非甫耳不同,是一個熱心而放任的新教義宣傳者,他的生活充滿著冒險和患難。一五二四年當他在巴塞爾的時候,伊拉斯母很不喜歡他的好辯。巴塞爾的改教領袖厄科蘭巴丟(Oecolampadius)曾規勸法勒爾采取比較溫和的態度。以後法勒爾又結識了慈運理,並熱烈參加百倫的辯論。在瓦得

(Vaud) 區各鄉村他的改教宣傳工作十分成功;不久他獲準在洛桑 (Lausanne) 傳道,洛桑的教會因之得以革新。他的工作獲得許多講法語的宣道家的幫助,逐漸地把整個瓦得區都爭取過來了,這使復原派的百倫比羅馬天主教勢力下的鄰郡非利堡更得優勢。

現在日內瓦成爲法勒爾的目標。兩世紀以來這新興都市不斷地在爲著自己的獨立斗爭。當地的封建及教會首長一向是薩伏衣 (Savoy) 公爵的代理人,而主教是由公爵委派的。在一五一九至一五三三的這段期間中,市民們得到了最後的勝利。一五二六年公爵的代表給趕走了,一五三三年主教亦被清除。市區的行政由民選的,四委員爲首的廿人議會及另一初爲六十人,逐漸擴充到二百人的議會,和全體市民大會所管理。因爲主教曾反對市之脫離薩伏衣而獨立,失掉了人民的信仰,就在政治改革中間被清除。教會權威的喪失及一般情形給了復原派一種非常的機會,而這種機會是他們所重視的。

在法勒爾進入日內瓦之前,這城市已多少有了一些復原主義的色彩。據我們所知的,第一個訪問日內瓦的復原派領袖是阿立威坦(時爲一五三一年),他和加爾文的關系我們在前面已經提及。一五三二年六月,嘲笑教皇的街招之出現,頗使市民驚奇。同年十月法勒爾來到日內瓦,旋被驅逐出境,可是他在那裏留下一位助手,爲他十四個月以後的重來布置一切。這一次他參加辯論,獲得公開演講的機會,到了一五三五年八月,他說服當局,廢棄舊的崇拜儀式。這時候百倫希圖收日內瓦爲政治上附庸,但被拒絕;法勒爾仍獲準繼續他的工作。他創辦一個慈惠醫院,並當革新派在選舉中獲勝後,迫使行政當局采納了懲戒瀆神行爲、賭博、賣淫、盜竊、酗酒等條例。一五三六年五月廿一日市民在聖彼得堂舉行大會,嚴肅地舉手宣誓願遵行《聖經》教訓,拒絕「教皇的干預」。同時通過創辦義學以教育貧窮子弟,並強迫學齡兒童入學。對這些改革仍然有反對的人,但日內瓦終於成爲復原派的城市,不久之後且成爲復原派的大本營。

當法勒爾知道加爾文來在日內瓦,他立刻趕到旅館去會見他,對他大下說辭,苦苦勸他留在日內瓦和他合作。同年的九月初一日,這一位年僅廿七,精力充沛,黑頭發,高眉毛,瘦削,有著修剪整齊的褐色小胡子和黑得發亮的眼睛,一雙尖圓的手和非常靈活的手勢,口舌明快,語音清朗的法國青年,在聖彼得堂向一群牧師和市民演講。當時那位市議會的書記忘了他的名字,只在記錄上寫下:聘用那位「法國人」。

這便是今天爲全世界所熟知的一件偉大工作的開端。爲著無法對那些倔強的市民施行訓練,這些改革者在一五三八年三月相率離開日內瓦。法勒爾到了內沙特勒工作。加爾文則赴施塔斯堡,在那裏擔任法國流亡教會的牧師職位,從工作中他得到良好的教牧經驗,認識了新朋友,並和一位身體纖弱而容貌動人的寡婦波蕾(IdelettedeBure)結婚。波蕾在一五四九年逝世。以後這位傷心的丈夫在他的書上提起她,說她是他最好的伴侶和忠實助手。當時日內瓦的情形紛亂,經過當地行政長官的不斷敦促和法勒爾的一再來函勸說,加爾文乃於一五四一年重返日內瓦工作。

他草擬了《聖會律例》(Ecclesiastical Ordinances),作爲日內瓦教會的憲章,這憲章爲改革宗教會奠定了組織方面的基礎。在這製度下,教會的大部分責任是放在平信徒的長老們身上,另外有一個健全的「牧職」,包括學者教師。那些生活腐敗,怠懶放蕩的人,須由教會長老和牧師等在教會法庭(Consistory)上以愛心相勸誠,必要時則加開除。

一般認爲日內瓦的這一種嚴格呆板的訓練是受曾經研究過法律的加爾文的重法主義思想所影響。但事實上這種訓練是從完全不同的源頭來的。加爾文是在追求使無形教會成爲有形,在日內瓦建立「聖徒相通」(communionofsaints),就是他和路德所同認爲信經中所指的「聖而公的教會」。污穢的罪人以及凡不履行他們對社會的責任的,都不許進入這神聖團體,或享受那作爲這團體的團契憑據的聖餐。這種懲罰爲的是使聖禮不受侵犯。把日內瓦造成爲一神治城邦,在這裏聖徒的相通能夠有一種自然的環境。因此那種適用於聖徒的懲訓辦法,在獲得民選行政長官的同意之下,亦適用於全體市民。

那些「沉湎於宴樂生活」的放蕩的日內瓦人,處在這種懲訓——封閉夜總會,禁止跳舞、賭博、及奢侈裝束——之下,都畏縮起來了。這些正在施行的條例有許多原是早已規定而沒有執行的,現在在明顯的原則和教會法庭及議會(Council)的督促下,嚴格執行起來,有好些人受嚴酷無情的處分。加爾文的艱苦斗爭一直繼續到一五五五年。他自稱爲「天性懦弱」,但許多剛強的人卻無法仿效他。他準備失敗不只一次,他經歷過無數艱險,打倒了無數敵人。他的敵人中之最頑強者在一五五三年被處焚刑。

這位西班牙的科學家及反對三位一體說的瑟維特 (Michael Servetus),是一個受天主教異教裁判所 (Inquisition) 判罪的流亡者,加爾文在巴黎認識他,以後從通訊中希望能說服他,但終歸無效。瑟維特不顧警告,來到日內瓦被逮捕,審訊並處焚刑。加爾文原要他受斬刑,但以後仍以異端的罪名而爲焚刑辯護。一九〇三年加爾文派的人在瑟維特受難的地方建立紀念碑,責加爾文在這件事上「犯了當代所通有的錯誤」。當然我們有權利希望像這樣的一位曾經上書法蘭西斯一世的人,能夠超越於這種時代的錯誤。他曾掩護另外一些不相信正統的三位一體說的人,惟獨對瑟維特殘酷不仁。有人以爲此反常行爲的主要原因,乃加爾文認爲瑟維特非但相信異端,且是日內瓦神治政治的勁敵與破壞者。

加爾文是一個學院式的學者,沒有路德所具有的對普通人的吸引力。他的聽眾多半爲知識分子;在日內瓦要不是因爲當地的知識水準很高,他可能失敗。可是由於他之承認平信徒在教會中的重要地位及政治上之代議製度(這方面他比路德更前進),深得人民的信服。在日內瓦他所建立的神治政治也就是民主政治。他清除城裏的污穢區域,爲貧民建設了一所濟貧所。又建設一所舉世聞名的學院,這學院造就出來的人材把加爾文學說的精粹傳播全歐,建造新邦,摧毀王權。他所給復原教的一套神學理論可與阿奎那 (Thomas Aquinas) 所著的《神學總論》(Summa) 相較量。他爲著復原教的團結努力奮斗,但所成就的僅有一五四九年德語區瑞士各領袖

所締結的合一信條,尚未能達到他所希望的將復原教結合爲一超國界的團體。在他所寫的許多燦然有力的小冊子和內容豐富的《聖經》釋義裏,他不斷地衛護及促進復原教的主張,對抗當時羅馬教復起的勢力。

繁重的工作打擊了他的衰弱身體。他的巨著多半是當別人睡覺或是在極度忙碌工作中抽空寫作的。以後一連串的惡疾侵襲了他,躺在床上,他仍然執行他的責任,一直到最後。一五六四年五月廿七日當他過世的時候,日內瓦小議會在公告中說:「上帝賦給他一種崢嶸偉大的特性。」

加爾文的嚴酷性格使他受到許多非議。這種性格可能是從早年的過於刻板的工作習慣而來的。他沒有一個自由的童年,也不曾學會盡情游戲。雖然在理論上他反對苦修主義,贊同歡笑生活,實際上他對自己的工作抱著一種苦修而不求安逸的精神,使自己陷入於一種沉愁的氣氛中。他極口稱贊造物主創造星宿的巧妙,卻不曾停下來欣賞它們。他稱贊從一位朋友的屋子望出去的風景,卻不曾提起從自己窗口望出去的動人山色。那些在這方面譴責他的人未免是對一位十六世紀的人物要求太多,尤其是對這一位衰弱憔悴,肩膀上放著全歐洲宗教問題的重負的人物。

# 六、加爾文的重要著作

當我們想到加爾文在日內瓦當主任牧師時每天所須應付的工作何等繁多,而竟然能產生這許多有價值的著作,確是值得奇異,尤其值得奇異的是這些作品都是在疾病纏身的情形下寫成的。他的好朋友和繼承者伯撒 (Theodore Beza) 告訴我們加爾文自從一五五八年到一五五九年之間患了間歇性熱病臥床八個月以後,都不曾恢復過來;可是我們曉得就是在這段期間他把《基督教要義》作一番最詳細的修正。到了一五六三年他的病症加重加多,以至於那些關心他的人都奇怪爲什麼「有如此堅強高貴的心性的人會有如此脆弱的身體。」但根據伯撒所說的,甚至在這種情形下,「沒人能勸他休息;即使不得不暫時放下責任 (他總是極不情願),也仍然在家裏替訪問他的人解答問題,或口授書記代筆,不顧及自己的疲勞。」這表示他在實際責任方面是何等認真的一個人;同時,當他和自己身體上的疾痛斗爭,以期能在死前把自己的思想記錄下來,他的書記們都極度地忙碌。雖然他的手和筆在盡最大可能不停息地揮動著,但若非書記們的協助,所有的成就簡直就不可能了。

加爾文的作品的特征從每一總題之下所附加的簡短說明可以看出一部分。關於歷代名著所選各篇將留待以後討論。在《基督教要義》一書初版以前,他已經有了一些次要的作品問世。一五三一年他那位當律師的朋友度啓明尼古拉 (Nicholas Duchemin) 的《斥護教論》 (Antapologia) 一書出版,這書是替一位法國作家辯護,攻擊一位意大利的法學家,是兩年前在加爾文的協助之下寫成的,並由加爾文代寫序言。加爾文的評辛尼加的《寬仁論》 (一五三二年) 是一部學術性很高,表現這位年青作家研究人文主義的最大成就的作品。一五三四年,當他剛歸向復原派以後,他寫《靈魂待蘇說》 (Psychopannychia) 一書,駁斥重洗派的靈魂睡眠之說 (即

認爲人死後靈魂入睡眠狀態,直到復活的時候)。這部書到一五四二年始行出版。 關於他爲阿立威坦的新舊約《聖經》譯本所寫的序言在前面已經提到。

《基督教要義》各版(自一五三六年至一五五九年) 將在下面討論。加爾文在日內瓦初期的次要作品包括《教會組織條 (Articles for the Organization of the Church) 及一五三七年的《信仰條文及訓導》 (Instruction and Confession of Faith) (法文)。在施塔斯堡期間他寫那著名的《答沙杜裏多》 (Replyto Sadoleto) (一五三九年)。一五四〇年他的長篇的《聖經》譯義《羅馬人書釋義》 (Commentary on Romans) 的第一篇問世,翌年有《聖餐短論》 (Little Treatiseon the Holy Supper) 等作品;當他重返日內瓦的時候,又寫有關教會組織問題的《聖會律例》。在一五四二年出版的有特別爲兒童準備之修正的《問答》 (Catechism) 及《禱文及短歌》 (The Form of Prayers and Chants),目的在幫助公共崇拜。一五四三年的許多作品中包括《遺物素引》 (Inventory of Relics) 一書,這書以後經多次再版,爲加爾文最富諷刺性的作品,以一種輕蔑的筆調寫出,使人想起伊拉斯母的作風。書中他建議編篡一部基督及諸聖徒的遺物目錄,並提出他所知道的無數遺物,指出那些無稽和矛盾的爭鬧,並嘲笑那些擁有遺物者所相信的。他說:在歐洲各寺院中保存著的所謂十字架的木頭需要三百名人夫才抬得動。甚至聖米迦勒的那把「看來像兒童玩具」的短劍,也在法國的兩個教堂中展覽著。

從約略一五四三年以後,加爾文的新的和再版的著作日漸增多。這些著作多半和過去的辯論有關,其價值亦多屬過去的。可是在一五四四年出版的對《所爾波恩神科教授謬論之駁斥》(Articles of the Faculty of Theology at Paris with the Antidote)一書中,即使是一首打油詩或一篇與當代學者爭論的文章,亦往往包含著他的生動的正面教訓。他的《評保羅第三致皇帝訓(Remarkson Paul's Admonition to the Emperor)一書(一五四五年)爲著他所建議的召開基督教議會一事猛烈攻擊教皇。比較重要的作品是一五四四年在斯拜爾議會(Diet of Speyer)的演詞《論教會改革之必要(On the Necessity of Reforming the Church);關於這書下面將再加詳論。在一五四五年的作品中,有些是攻擊重洗派和放任派(Libertines)的。墨蘭頓的《教義要點》法文版於一五四六年出版,加爾文在這書上寫了一篇贊揚的序言。一五四七年天主教的天特會議的第一期會結束,同年加爾文在他以拉丁文寫成的一部書《清除天特會議的條文》(Act soft he Synodof Trent, with the Antidote)——上攻擊議會所作的決定,這書在一年後亦譯成法文。

在「暫時和平」(Interim)以後,當一五四八年,查理第五提出了一個脆弱而卑劣的宗教妥協方案,加爾文把這一充滿缺點的文件發表出來,並附一修正案,題爲「卑劣的日耳曼暫時和平與教會革新之具體計劃」(The Adultero-GermanInterimanda True Plan for Christian Pacification and Reform of the Church)(一五四九年)。此項作品一方面嚴厲攻擊「暫時和平」之非,另一方面以簡明理論闡揚革新派對於信與義的主張,並攻擊教廷關於教會及聖禮的理論。加爾文的《反占星學》(Admonition against Judicial Astrology)(一五四九年)一再表現出他對迷信的憎惡。他贊同科學的天文學,但認爲以星辰占卜人事是一種邪惡的迷信。他是一五

四九年在區利赫簽訂的合一信條 (Consensus Tigurinus) 的主要擬稿人,這一協定所牽涉的是和法語區瑞士及德語區瑞士復原教之合一有關的聖禮問題。從一五四九年開始,加爾文的那位能幹秘書拉奎尼爾 (Dennis Raguenier) 把他的許多証道辭記錄下來,並小心抄錄他的筆記。這些材料都由日內瓦的會吏保管,到了加爾文死後才陸續刊印出來。

#### 七、《聖經》釋義

在一五五〇年到一五六四年這段期間,加爾文的興趣偏重於《聖經》釋義的寫 作。這種《聖經》釋義的寫作在當時頗爲盛行,在加爾文之前,路德和其他改教領 袖亦曾獻出大部分時間,從事於此項寫作。有人說加爾文的學說的主要根據是舊 約,可是如果加爾文在一五五一年以前逝世,那麼他所遺留的《聖經》釋義的著作 將只有《羅馬人書》(一五三九年),《哥林多前書》(一五四七年)、《哥林多後 書》、《加拉太書》、《以弗所書》、《腓立比書》、《歌羅西書》、《提摩太前 書》和《後書》(以上均完成於一五四八年)、《提多書》(一五四九年)、《希伯 來書》、《雅各書》(一五五〇年)及《猶大書》的注解(一五四二年)。在一五五 一年,他完成第一部有關舊約的釋義《以賽亞書》,同年又完成《約翰的書信》及 《彼得前書》、《後書》。在他完成第二部的舊約釋義之前,他又從事於新約釋義 的工作,先後完成《使徒行使釋義》的兩部分(一五五一年及一五五四年),以及 《符類福音》和《約翰福音》(一五五三年)。他決意對《啓示錄》一書的解釋不 作嘗試。根據與加爾文同時代的政論家波丁 (JeanBodin) 所說的,加爾文曾坦白承 認他對這一部書的了解不夠。他的《創世記釋義》完成於一五五四年,《詩篇》完 成於一五五八年,《十二小先知書》完成於一五五九年,《申命記》及《但以理》 書完成於一五六二年,《耶利米書釋義》及《約伯記》的講稿完成於一五六三年。 一五六四年《摩西五經合參》問世,這是他在前一年完成的。他所寫的最後一部釋 義是爲著《約書亞記》寫的,這一部到了一五六四年他死後才出版。關於《**以西 結》書的講稿也只完成了二十章**,於一五六五年由**伯撒**代爲出版。他遺脫了好幾 部歷史書和智慧書,顯然是因爲時間的關系。

加爾文爲《羅馬人書釋義》所寫的序文是以書信體裁寫給他的朋友革呂紐(Simon Grynaeus)的,序文中他表示同意革呂紐的見解,認爲釋義作者應以簡潔的筆法解釋《聖經》,避免將讀者的注意力引離原書。他對於布靈爾的學問及能力備極贊揚,但卻指出墨蘭頓和布塞珥二人資質有限,前者的作品多半在檢討《聖經》的難題,而後者的作品往往過於冗長艱澀。一五四〇年在他致米銳(Pierre Viret)的一封信中,他曾比較慈運理、路德、及厄科蘭巴丟等人所作的釋義。他認爲路德的作品往往限於從經文中摘取含有訓勉意義的句段,對於字義及歷史背境等不甚注意。但加爾文絕非輕視前輩作家,他對於前面這幾位都說過敬仰的話;只是他對於釋義作者任務的獨到見解,以及他對於語言學、神學、歷史等的豐富知識,都使他在這方面的成就超出了他的前輩。大體上他能避免前面所指出的那些缺點;但他之堅持以明潔筆法寫作,並不等於說他所寫的釋義都是簡短之作。根據《聖經》各書的編排,另外加上一小部分講解的材料,他的解釋《聖經》作品在《改教文獻全

集》 (Corpus Reformatorum) 中占有了三十三卷的篇幅 (包括從第二十三卷至五十五卷)。

加爾文的釋義作品很自然地受到許多作家的稱贊。他對《聖經》各部分的熟識,使他對任何一句段的解釋都能參照其他章節的材料。他又往往從《聖經》以外的作者獲得暗示,因而領悟到一向未曾發現的意義。他對語文字義的明快辨識力並不妨害,而是加強他對經文的屬靈意義的貫通。他堅決揚棄了那些迷惑著一班學究式的短視神學家的不切題目和空幻的討論。他立意使《聖經》說它自己的話,使《聖經》的人物與背景再次活現出來,好讓一般只具普通智力而熱心尋求真理的讀者能夠了解,能得益助。是的,有的時候他在辯論中對經文的引用不免錯誤;但主要用意是以自由探討《聖經》真理,爲基督徒讀者指示生命之道,並把《聖經》中對上帝的尊嚴、權力、恩典、以及基督爲教會之主等見証傳授給他們。

# 八、書信

加爾文的書信大部分都保留著,這些書信非但成為他的傳記的極珍貴材料,同時是他所關注的許多事件的重要記錄。加爾文臨終遺言,他的所有信件,凡對教會有價值的,均須整理出版。為遵行這一遺囑,他的朋友伯撒在約米勒 (Charlesde Jonvillers) 的幫助之下,於一五七五年把他的拉丁文書信整理出版。一八五四年波耐特 (Jules Bonnet) 又將他的拉丁文及法文信件選輯成書,並於一八五八年譯成英文。這一選集共有書信六百封,編成四卷。《改教文獻全集》對加爾文書信搜集頗全,見該集第十卷第二至第二十部。

這些書信比任何其他材料更能表現加爾文的精神。它們多半是寫給同工的,也有好些屬於交際性質的,是寫給偶然結識的朋友,所涉及的問題是有時間性的。也有寫給國王、國家元首、或在政治上居高位的人物的,更有些是答復一般人士詢問問題或有關教會的零星事件的。整個來說,從這些書信可以看出他所同情的對像和他的友誼范圍之廣大,較之他對於教會改革以及衛護改革宗福利的熱忱,並無稍遜。在另外許多書信中,加爾文的地位是一位宗教問題的顧問;譴責和規勸,贊賞和鼓勵,充滿於字裏行間。也有些是款款慰問的書信。在這位受過人文主義訓練,對辛尼加的思想有深刻了解的作者筆下,有些書信和以辛尼加的作品爲代表的斯多亞派(Stoics)的筆調極相仿佛,幾乎就是這一派變形的基督教文學。舉例說,在加爾文寫給黎塞堡(Monsieurde Richebourg),慰問他那位在施塔斯堡就學的聰明兒子之死(因患疫症)的那封長信中,有一部分就表現出斯多亞派的筆調;當然只有一部分,因爲加爾文對這青年人所表示的熱愛,和因他之死而感受深刻悲傷那一種情感,在斯多亞派的血脈裏是找不到的。

加爾文寫信給國王和統治者都有一種令人奇異的坦白自如的態度,就環境所許可的來譴責或規勸他們。經他寫信勸告過的權貴當中有法王法蘭西斯一世及亨利二世、納瓦拉的公爵布爾邦安東尼、英國的愛德華六世、波蘭西基斯門奧古斯都、非

拉拉的公爵夫人倫尼、元帥科利尼、及攝政所麥瑟特等。他在一五五四年十二月五日致波蘭王的信中有這樣的一段話:

「一個傳福音的牧師寫一封問候的信給如此尊榮的國君,似乎是不適宜的…… 但我相信你對我們的主上帝的兒子所有的虔敬,必不因他僕人的勸告而不愉快。」

於是他勸告西基斯門要「爲著在基督的國中榮耀上帝,爲著崇拜的純潔,爲著人類的拯救」而爭戰,並在「復興他的荒廢的教會」這事工上,作爲上帝的同工。在一五五七年十月致法王亨利二世的一封信中,主要內容是一簡短的信仰宣認,但其中包括論及政治權力的一段話,認爲統治者是上帝的輔佐,我們應該服從他們所立的法律,繳納稅款,服從他們,但他們「必須尊重上帝的神聖不可侵犯的統治。」

這便是加爾文和地上權貴通信的率直口氣,這些信件能否收到預期效果是很可懷疑的。他給各教會牧師所寫的許多書信——往往是給某一城市,如區利赫或沙夫哈申的全體教牧——可能有很大的影響。他的通信范圍伸展到許多地區,包括各式各樣的人,其中最富啓發性的是那些寫給他的好友米銳及法勒爾的書信。他經常給法勒爾寫信,在這些機密的信件中他無顧忌地批評有關教會政治的事件,有時涉及他們的共同朋友和敵人。在這一類信件中我們看出有許多人是加爾文所熟識的,這些人常常在他的思念和禱告中;但也有些(雖然不多)經常爲他所指摘、所不喜歡的人。他的許多信件都以一種使徒式的祝福體裁結束,例如一五四二年八月廿三日給米銳的信的最後幾句話:

「再會,我的可敬和可喜悅的弟兄,願主耶穌時刻引領和加強你!請代問所有弟兄們的安,代問你的夫人和姑母的安!」

可是一五四一年五月在他從熱根斯堡會議 (Conferenceat Regensburg) 寫給法勒爾的一封信中,咒詛和祝福的話在信末一起見到。

「那位大會的秘書是很令人討厭的;願上帝取他靈魂或改變他。以最誠懇的心問候 眾弟兄們。願主耶穌保守你。菲立甫(墨蘭頓)與布塞珥問你好。前天我們和方伯 一道吃飯的時候曾想念到你。」

加爾文對於他認爲是真理敵人的人是可能很嚴酷的,對故作無知的人亦不容忍。他在談話中比較在通訊中或更溫和一點。無可疑惑的他是生活在一種溫暖真摯的友誼中,他不憚煩地爲在悲愁患難中的人寫了許多安慰的信札。

#### 九、加爾文著作:《基督教要義》

《基督教要義》一書在加爾文筆下歷廿五年(一五三四至一五五九)始告完成。這書自一五三六年的初版至最後由作者本人修正的修正版,篇幅擴充達五倍之多。一般公認作者在這部書中的主張自初版以後並無改變。伯撒說過:「他的教訓

自始至終是確定和一貫的。」可是以後各版的更變並不僅限於篇幅的擴充,而是有 計劃地逐漸轉向於一新的目的。這書最初是一種衛教論說,目的在建立那處在被迫 害中的法國復原教的信仰。伯撒在有了最後修正版時說一五三六年的初版只是「那 偉大作品的草稿」。六章中的前三章是分別討論十誡,使徒信經,和主禱文。這三 者乃中世紀時代一般訓導的主要題目。其餘的是討論聖禮及基督徒自由的問題,正 面地攻擊中世紀教會的生活和教義。一万三九年在施塔斯堡出版的第二版包括十七 章。據作者本人說,這一版的修正爲的是要訓練工作人員,使他們得到純粹的神 學,並能了解《聖經》。以後各版的修正都爲著能更適切地滿足這一要求。加爾文 在世時出版的幾種拉丁文版及再版並非出於縝密的計劃。初版以後又有三、四種版 本在施塔斯堡出版,而最少有五種版本在日內瓦出版。一五四一年的法文版爲加爾 文本人從拉丁文一五三九年版譯出的,可說是唯一出自他手筆的法文版。另外有幾 種根據一五四三年及一五四五年的拉丁版本譯出的法文版相繼出現。另一法文譯本 是從一五五九年最後的拉丁文修正本譯出的,在加爾文死前約有七次的再版(注: 關於這一點多麥斯坦 (Mrmelstein) 的判斷與杜馬喀 (Doumergue) 不同,前者認爲這 一法文譯本也是加爾文本人所主稿而由他的兄弟安東尼 (Antoine) 及柯拉當 (Nicholus Colladon) 協助編譯)。

一五五四年的日內瓦版共有二十一章,內容和一五三九年版本相差不多,比初 版篇幅增加約及兩倍。最後的修正本增加最多,到了一五五九年才訂定的,在這一 版的序文中加爾文說起這一部著作在他手中的演進經過。他說他「從來不滿意這部 書,一直到了這最後訂正的一版。」修正的工作是在他身體極端衰弱的情形下進行 的。在前一年的冬季,嚴重的間歇熱病使他相信自己的死期已近,於是他加倍努力 於這一部書的完成,希望以之作爲傳給信徒的遺著和對上帝教會的一件貢獻。他說 他的目標在乎幫助神學學生,使他們知道怎樣去領受上帝的話。

**《基督教要義》的最後訂正版分爲四卷**,試行對基督教神學整體的各部作均衡的 論述。每卷題目系按照使徒信經的次序,即父,子,聖靈,聖而公的教會等,每卷 約有二十章,每章長短不同,分爲若干只以數目表示而沒有標題的分段。

加爾文以廿五年時間寫作《基督教要義》,其經過實足以表示其人之特性。問題並不在於這部書的理論方面,而是在於形式及細目。在思想上他早已大體成熟,在措辭方面卻不斷地力求改進。當他廿五歲時,經過長時間的躊躇之後,他成爲復原派信徒;這時候他已經是一個學者,有著人文主義者重視優良作品的那種色彩。他非但是一個極端重視文體的作家,也實在是一個文學大師。他所出版的許多巨著從未再經修正,我們猜想這些作品從文學的觀點看,多數能夠使作者滿意。但《基督教要義》這書和其他著作不同,由於它的特別性質,它的成爲有永久性價值作品的最大可能性,以及它在作者其他作品中所占的中心地位,作者對這書特別慎重,時刻希望改進它,使它臻於完全。在最後修正版,他把這部書修剪到各部分都配合得好,好像一株生長均稱的大樹,枝葉茂盛,果實累累。

加爾文是一個從文學家轉變到神學家,而同時能保持著文學意識的人。他所寫的既然是最關重要的事,必須應用最嚴謹的辭語。在他這類的作品中有一種虔敬和奧秘的氣氛。杜馬喀有一段描寫加爾文的非常生動的話,說他是一位卓越的「精通語言——上帝的語言和人的語言——的人,他對於那爲真理服務的語言的力量有著近乎絕對的信念」。從廣義方面說,加爾文所關切的是闡揚上帝自最初藉他的創造,藉他給列祖對他的了解,末了又藉律法及聚先知,把自己表達出來的道理。「若非學習《聖經》,沒有人能得到關乎真實和健全的教義的絲毫知識。」加爾文曾引詩篇十九章的話說:雖然穹蒼傳揚他的工程,但只有主的律法是全備的,它改變人心;而《聖經》就是上帝藉以「存留他的真道,直到永遠」的工具。教會的建立必須以先知及使徒爲基礎,那就是建立在《聖經》的權威上面,這種權威在那些內心蒙聖靈引導的人看來是真實可靠的(見《基督教要義》第一卷第六章,二至四節;第七章,一、四、五等節)。

在加爾文的作品中,人的話語因專誠信服上帝的話語而提高價值。他覺得他自己的能力是建立於《聖經》的能力上面,認為神學家的任務在於闡揚及實行神的話語。加爾文因為有一種基本的、恆久的情感,正如他的朋友伯撒所說的,是一個具有對上帝完全奉獻的情感的人,所以他心靈活潑,立論有力。他把他博覽群書的知識和奇異的記憶力都應用在他的寫作上,幾乎每一詞句都能充分表現他的天才和訓練。他的作品有一種高雅和富於辯才的格調;內容豐富,生氣勃發,對問題的解釋,明潔有力。從大體上說,在他那一世紀,能寫出像他那樣精煉字句的作家,並不多見。根據文學史作家的意見,他的《基督教要義》一書的法文版,使他和二、三當代法國作家同被稱爲法國散文的創始者。

# 十、對上帝的知識

關於知識問題加爾文的立場剛剛是在奧古斯丁和笛卡兒(Descartes)二人之間。他說:真的智慧存在於對上帝和對我們自己的知識。我們的天稟非出於自己,審察自己可引領我們到對上帝的默想,同樣,我們的卑劣、無助、墮落都促使我們去追求上帝。另一方面,除非我們審察上帝,我們無法了解自己,而我們的智慧將顯得是愚拙,我們的德行是墮落。對上帝的知識包括兩方面,即造物主上帝和救主上帝。對於一班敬上帝的人,認識上帝是爲要崇拜他,服從他。無論何人對上帝都天然有些知識,西色柔(Cicero)肯定地認爲沒有一個種族會愚笨到對上帝全然無知;浦魯他克(Plutarch)說人若沒有宗教,要比禽獸更爲卑劣;他們這樣說是對的。那些否認上帝的人常處在恐懼中,因爲他們不能擺脫上帝的觀念。可是許多人對上帝的觀念是低下的,他們從和他們相同的階層,並依照他們自己的虛妄和迷信的幻想,去尋求上帝;再不然,爲著尋求他們屬世的保障,他們干脆否認有一位上帝,或拒絕服從他們所畏懼的上帝,甚或虛僞地以狂妄方法企圖贖罪討好。

**加爾文在內容豐富的一章中申論造物主上帝,有如彌爾頓 (Milton) 的敘事** 詩**,或音樂大師所奏出的名曲。**天與地都充滿著上帝的証據,非但對科學家如 此,對愚庸的農夫亦然。天上星辰齊整的排列,人體構造的均稱美麗,都說明了造 物主的智慧。異教詩人歌頌上帝爲人類之父,而只有那些感受到他的父愛者情願奉獻本身服役於他。可嘆仍有些人忘恩殊深,利用他們從上帝所受的能力來否認上帝的存在,和以彼古羅派 (Epicureans) 同一主張,把從上帝所得到的一切益惠都歸之於機遇或自然 (見《基督教要義》第一卷第五章第三、四節)。加爾文對於那些因間接傾向於亞裏斯多德 (Aristotle) 學說而反對永生及搶奪上帝特權的人,痛加攻擊。那些人使靈魂附屬於身體,頌揚自然,貶低上帝聖名。加爾文說:「心靈的各種巧妙變化,都觀測天地,能結合過去與將來,能保留已往的記憶,能運用想像而知有所選擇,並能發明及創作各種藝術,這都可以証明在人裏面確有上帝的動作……這豈不是人有不朽的印記,不可涂抹的嗎?人既然出自於上帝,又怎能不承認他的創造者?我們既具有判斷力,能分別義與不義,難道在天上沒有可判斷的嗎?」(見第一卷第五章第五節)

說「自然就是上帝」是不正確的:自然是上帝所建立的秩序。加爾文描繪上帝在自然中的作爲,並說明他的永恆及自存爲一切生命的源頭,他的至善「普及於一切他所造的。」在人事上他是無辜者的至親,是罪的懲罰者。如果他對罪未加懲罰,他的懲罰將留待適當的時候;或則他這樣做爲的是以無窮仁慈來克服罪人的邪惡。上帝公義的行爲及憐恤引領我們去獲取有關於他的知識。可嘆當我們仰望滿天閃爍的星斗,俯視彩色斑爛的大地,竟未憶念造物主宰,或竟將上帝權能的神跡當作自然的軌道!我們固有的知識因罪而受損害,我們不能在自然指示之下找到上帝:「造化指示創造者之榮耀的許多亮光,對我們均屬徒然。」証據放在我們面前,但我們因罪墮落,難以明白,若非有《聖經》的啓示,我們將不可避免,亦不可原諒地「以我們自己腦中的幻夢和幻想」,來構成崇拜的對像(見第一卷第五章第十四、十五節)。

我對這一章詳加論述,因爲加爾文討論上帝及他待人之道的經義是以這一章爲出發點。我們既然喪失了由默察上帝的工作而認識他的能力,他就慈悲地藉著《聖經》把他的話賜給我們。因加爾文相信新舊約《聖經》是從上帝來的。上帝是其作者。從《聖經》,上帝「開啟也神聖的口。」(見第一卷第六章第一節)。這一事實並非由教會權威証實的,卻由《聖經》本身的內容証明出是上帝的話。理性無法証明,只有聖靈的內在証明可使我們確信(見第一卷第七章第四節);是一種不需理性証明的確信,雖然它和最高理性是相符的。真教義的開始是喜悅聆聽上帝的話。可是加爾文仍認爲值得思索十三種支持聖靈之証明的理由,並譴責那班狂妄之徒,他們把《聖經》棄置一旁,以自己的幻想作爲權威。

# 十一、上帝的話

加爾文在他的著作中往往把「上帝的話」和「正典《聖經》」作同義應用,其實這是一種換喻的用法。關於這一點克拉維爾 (Henri Clavier) 所說的較爲準確,他認爲加爾文的意思是指上帝的話在《聖經》裏面——不是一種統計上或有形的存在,而是生動地存在於它裏面。《聖經》給我們關於上帝的話的真知識。常有人說加爾文把《聖經》看作是不可能有錯的。其實他所著重的是《聖經》爲「完全可信

和權威的」(見第一卷第七章第一節)。他和現代的那些以尋章摘句的方法,來支 持某一神學論點或某一預言上的困惑的問題的人,完全不同。相反,他亦常常引用 那些可能使反對者用來攻擊他的章節,不只引用有利於他自己觀點的章節,並以歷 史和哲學的材料來顯示他的解釋爲合理的。他承認《聖經》是上帝的話的表現,也 承認它是一貫而非自相矛盾的。《聖經》的每一部分都具有權威,亦都能引來支持 教義上的爭論。加爾文之引用舊約,似乎往往忽視《聖經》當中對上帝的觀念和道 德教訓的一種進展。當然他有時候亦明白承認這種進展,並認爲新約比舊約有更高 的地位;關於這一點的証據以後將討論到。許多討論加爾文的作家都忽略了這種証 據,那是不足爲奇的,因爲在加爾文的作品中多半找不到關於這種進展的觀點。另 一方面,加爾文常作經文中不同句段的比較,把新舊約當中意義相近的句段聯系起 來,這是有價值的。他很常引用詩篇及先知書的句子;爲摩西乃五經作者而辯護。 他很謹慎地否認舊約的律法已被廢棄之說,卻主張福音肯定和承認了舊約的應許 (見第二卷第九章第四節)。他對《聖經》的解釋一向嚴格,認爲那原有的和顯明的 意思就是真的,可是卻主張以理智看《聖經》作者的借喻言詞;他亦常常應用預表 論 (typology) 把新舊約聯在一起,例如說舊約時代的祭禮是新約屬靈崇拜的影子; 要不是這樣,祭禮就毫無意義了。新約是舊約的實現,這一點從新約同樣把舊約傳 達到天下萬邦,非獨一族一國,亦可証明。關於論新約地位比舊約高,在第二卷二 章十一節有詳細的討論。

加爾文原相信《聖經》是不能錯誤的,但當他發現新約因應用七十譯本,對舊約的征引有誤,而體裁方面也有明顯分歧時,不免困惑。這些困難多數發生於經文釋義方面,我們在這裏不必詳論。若有人從加爾文的釋義去研究《聖經》作者的體裁及語言學上的問題,即可看出他治學的認真和在某些問題上有令人驚異的大膽主張,例如在解釋彼得後書時(他對這書的體裁沒有好的批評),他認為使徒彼得寫這部書時年紀已老邁,而他所聘用的書記比不上前書時所聘用的。

加爾文繼而申論《聖經》中的上帝,他說《聖經》中的上帝有三種屬性是我們所必須知道的,即慈愛 (misericordia)、審判 (施於不義的人;iudicium)、和公義 (以之保守誠信的人;iustitia)。這些屬性亦包含他的權力、至善 (bonitns)、和至 聖。上帝是靈,他要求屬靈的崇拜。《聖經》嚴禁拜偶像的事。對這一點加爾文引 用奧古斯丁所征引過的辛尼加的話,譴責那些把不朽之神裝作鬼怪形像,並使他們「披上人和獸的外衣」的人,來支持他的主張。他說教皇貴鉤利認神像爲「文盲之書」的意見是先知們所反對的 (見第一卷第十一章第五節)。製造偶像的結果必然令人有迷信的敬拜,而干犯上帝。加爾文猛烈攻擊那些主張神像崇拜者把服事 (dulia) 和崇拜 (latria) 說成爲兩回事。他承認雕刻與繪畫也是上帝的恩賜,但它們有它們特定的用途。把它們當作上帝的有形代表是違法的,必然會貶損上帝的榮耀 (見第一卷第十一章十至十二節)。

在《基督教要義》第一卷的其他各章作者對「**三位一體**」說有詳盡討論;對 於創造的研究提供了討論善天使和惡天使的機會,並有幾節非常綺美的描寫,論及 上帝在宇宙中的創造工程;另有一節論及當初人未犯罪時的情境;並討論上帝對一 切事物的治理,上帝怎樣利用不義的人等。在這裏我們可以看到加爾文的人性本善而因罪墮落的學說。但甚至在墮落以後,「人因有美麗身體及高尚天稟,仍然爲上帝所有創造當中之最高貴的」(見第一卷第十四章第二十節)

#### 十二、關於人、神及邪惡

人有記憶及聰慧,誠實及正義感,他具有和身體有別,可以分離的靈魂,在這裏面有上帝的形像。這形像不因亞當的犯罪完全毀滅,只是腐化和殘缺了。在這裏加爾文看出了人類的大悲劇。爲什麼上帝不賜予人類以恆忍的能力,使人不至犯罪;這事是屬於上帝的奧秘。凡不是他所特意命定的事,就都不能發生。上帝以他的眷佑支配萬事,對每一動機非但施與能力,亦加導引。加爾文說他並非代斯多亞派宣傳定命論,認爲斯多亞派主張自然當中有一串無盡的因是不對的;因爲我們相信上帝是萬事的支配者,所謂命運、機緣、際遇都被排除;一切都是在上帝計劃裏面,我們因爲不能推測未來,就以爲是屬於偶然的事件,其實甚至惡人的行爲亦在上帝意之中。上帝善用惡人的詭計。尼布甲尼撒在《聖經》中亦稱爲上帝的僕人。所以加爾文根據某些經文和采取奧古斯丁的見解,提出一種嚴格的主張,認爲我們不應追究上帝的至善及智慧,只須謙卑地接受《聖經》所明白指示的,並相信在他隱藏的奧秘中上帝有時雖加速人的惡行,但他卻不是罪的創作者。

這樣,加爾文把《聖經》的特殊事件織成爲一個系統,他的理論遂在那歷史性之邪惡的困境中無顧忌地活動著。他必須和第五世紀的奧古斯古及撒維安(Salvian)同樣堅持「上帝的統治」及於萬事的主張。他亦不能容許認爲上帝在任何事上能有邪惡的思想。可是承認在許多事當中有著邪惡。他接受《聖經》的証明,謂一位好的上帝有時候亦能使邪惡發生,要我們謙卑地接受這一觀點,使我們在神秘中大感困惑。在這裏我們不能比較加爾文和其他思想家如奧古斯丁、阿奎那、邁摩尼得斯(Maimonides)、巴斯噶(Pascal)、祁克果(Kierkeggerd)等,在面對歷史中的邪惡企圖時對上帝所作的解釋。加爾文在這裏所面對的不能解決的哲學難題可用腓爾本(Fairbairn)的幾句話加以說明:「邪惡在已往是神秘的,在現在亦是神秘的,它是盤據在人類思想中最難克製的鬼怪,是不能驅除的。」(見 Philosophy of the Christian Religion P.97)。

#### 十三、拯救:自然與恩典

在《基督教要義》第二卷討論基督及拯救諸問題時,加爾文同樣堅持萬事萬物不能逃避上帝的管製。加爾文首先指示我們審察自己。他對於人的「固有的自愛」——由於人最初的叛逆以致無視自己的卑污——這一點,深爲悲傷。亞當喪失了原始天賦的德性,非但他自己的,連他子孫的德性也喪失了。我們生來就承受了亞當的罪,就是憤怒之子。罪是出乎自然,拯救出乎恩典。沒有恩典,我們靈魂的各部必充滿了罪。智力受傷害,意志受奴役。雖然如此,加爾文認爲人仍然有某些存留的:心思仍然有各樣豐富的恩賜在裝飾著。對這些恩賜加爾文討論頗詳,且極珍惜。在這裏他的意見和亞裏斯多德相同:

「人既生而爲社會動物,在天性上知所以愛護社會;由此可知人人都有尊重秩序及誠實的意識。」

我們從事藝術或科學的才智均屬天賦。世俗的作家亦表現真理的高貴光輝;無 論真理在何處出現,我們都不應拒絕,因爲一切真理均出自上帝,若加拒絕,就是 侮辱上帝。哲學家、醫藥專家、數理科學家等指示我們上帝給我們何等豐富的恩 賜。上帝有一種恩典表現在我們共同的天性上,而特別的天賦是上帝所賜的特殊靈 感。非信徒的天賦也是上帝的恩賜(見第二卷第二章第十二至十七節;第三卷第十 四章第二節)。上述就是加爾文關於一般恩典 (Gratia Generalis) 的主張,這一題目 他提過好多次。在各時代都有人只憑天性的指示,獻出他們的全生命以追求公義, 由此証明在他們的天性上有若干成分的純潔。加爾文認爲這種生命可例証神聖恩典 的功用足以阻止非信徒趨向於他們墮落天性的極端生活。世俗所有的德行實由於上 帝所賜的恩典,好使人類蒙受益惠。這些德行,在世雖蒙稱頌,但在上帝面前卻無 功德。是的,每一個人,不論是虔敬或不虔敬的,由於神聖的恩賜,都有他的特殊 才智或技能,可從事於某種工作,如果他拒絕以得自於神者作相當貢獻,就是干犯 上帝(見第二卷第二章十四至十七節)。在這裏加爾文是處在一種結合自然與恩典 的活動的境界中。他的對於一般恩典的觀念不能說是完全一貫的。他頌揚屬世事件 及各色人物之含有美善者,但其范圍只限於那些影響到屬世生活的事物。例如古時 哲學家對真理的渴慕及追求。可是這種努力當用之於探索屬靈事件的時候則不適 官。理性不能告訴我們上帝本身是什麼,他和我們的關系又是什麼。

這種更高的知識只能從聖靈的啟迪得到。雖然我們承認由於自然律的作用外邦人心中也銘刻著公正的律例,可是他們不能實行它,因而受著他們自己良心的譴責。爲著這理由,加爾文往往把自然律的學說和他的對於人類的絕對墮落的觀念連在一起。只有極無知的作家才會否認加爾文是主張自然律的。非但在《基督教要義》一書,即在其他許多作品中,特別是在《羅馬人書釋義》,加爾文都講論過自然律。其實這是他的思想的重要部分,特別在他的政治思想上是必要的一點;也可說是他的一般恩典說的延續,如果不是完全相同,像杜馬喀所想的那樣的話。若就《基督教要義》一書中所論的來說,我們確不能將一般恩典和自然律這兩種觀念分開。可是加爾文爲著尊崇上帝的最高地位,把自然律置於上帝的活動意志之下。他不同意在他之前的比力(Gabriel Biel)和在他之後的格柔丟(Hugo Grotius)所主張的,認爲自然律不須有一位上帝,也可能見效。也不同意把它當作伯拉糾主義(Pelagianism)的僕從。人在基本上固然知道什麼是公平正直,而且渴慕社會正義;但他求善的意志是微弱的,在上帝面前他不能爲自己的稱義做些什麼。加爾文必能同意丁尼生(Tennyson)所說的:「上帝啊,人與人之間的功績在你面前,有何足夸。」

關於人的意志之墮落,加爾文以謹慎的態度堅持他的主張,並十分借重奧古斯丁的意見,認爲向善意志因恩典得以恢復給上帝所選召的人。

「這恩典並非隨便施賜與眾人的……人固然應當知道上帝的恩賜將無例外地給予凡祈求的人;但那些祈求的人是先蒙屬靈恩典的激動,甚至這一微小部分的贊美,也必須歸之於他。」(見第二卷第三章第十節)。

舊約指出基督爲得救的希望;人的墮落使人陷於絕望境地,非從舊約所預示而 新約所顯明的中保及拯救者獲得幫助,沒有別的方法。律法像一面鏡子,在它裏面 我們可以看出自己面上的污點。它亦可能規范惡人的行爲;且爲指導基督信徒行爲 所需要的。加爾文和其他神學家一致,認爲自然道德律乃包含於十誠裏面。

「進一步說,那些包含於兩版的誡命,從某一意義上看是內在律所指示給我們的。 那內在律,如同我們所說過的,從某一意義上看是銘刻在每一個人心中的。」

可是人不能依靠自然律而知道怎樣正確地崇拜上帝。明文的律法除去了自然律的暗昧之處(見第二卷第八章第二節)。正如路德和墨蘭頓所已經做過的,加爾文對十誠的每一誠命都加以詳細解釋。關於基督道理的詳細討論只在第二卷第十二至十七章看到。由於上帝的命令,上帝的兒子爲著我們的拯救,取得人的內身。他的順服止息了上帝合理的忿怒,並使我們得以稱義。在他裏面所發現的公義就好像是我們的公義一樣,爲上帝所悅納。他的死解除了罪,他的復活使生命復元,他的升天開啓了亞當所關閉的天國之門。

# 十四、信、成聖及愛的生活

第三卷所討論的主要內容是關於聖靈在被選召者心中的工作。聖靈傳授信,就是對基督的認識。關於信,加爾文說:「從他的話來認識上帝對我們的旨意。」可是他又說,如果我們以「憐恤」這兩字替代「旨意」,我們將更接近於信的性質。上帝「以他的憐恤呼召我們歸向於他。」這樣,信就是一種「對上帝的憐恤的穩固認識;這憐恤是基督所白白應許我們,由聖靈顯明在我們的意念中,並在我們心中証實的。」(見第三卷第二章第六、七節)。它包含成聖的意義,且不能與愛分離。人盡管相信福音書中的事實,主張《聖經》是不可能錯誤的,卻沒有真正的信。信徒雖經歷種種疑慮困擾,卻不放棄基本信心;信使他在磨練中站立得住。基督徒或從微小信心開始,往往能逐漸進步,因信以上帝的話武裝自己。

加爾文的看法,成聖(他常稱之爲重生)是一種過程,而非一時之事。它和稱義是不可分的,因爲二者都是從因信而有分於基督所產生的;它和信的長進一同長進,與誠實悔改之心相配合。悔改並非幾天可以完成的事,好像重洗派和耶穌會派(Jesuits)所主張的那樣,卻是一件終身的事。他贊同一些不知名的古代作家所講論的,認爲「悔改」(poenitentia)的意義包括「舊人已死」(mortificatio)和「得新生命」(vivificatio),而「得新生命」的含義不僅是在釋放中的喜樂,亦是立志過聖潔的生活。

加爾文對「認罪」(confession)和「補贖」(penance)亦在這裏加以檢討。有人認為早期復原派廢除了中世紀的認罪製度而沒有其他的替代,這是很大的錯誤。加爾文誠然反對中世紀那種強迫性的秘密認罪製度,可是他勸勉信徒當他們需要的時候可求教於他們的教牧;他贊同私下或公開的認罪,但認為必須非出於強迫性質的。在早期教會,基督徒對這事的決定是自由的。若有人為自己的罪所困擾,非他人幫助無法獲得安慰,就應當私下向他的牧師認罪,但無須把過錯逐一背出(見第三卷第三章第三節;第四章第十二節;第十六章第一節)。

加爾文說基督徒須明白在他整個生命中他和上帝的關系。放棄一切,將本身奉獻給上帝,這是基督徒生活的關鍵。其中絕不容許有驕傲、貪婪、或奢侈等。我們所施與的財物並不是我們自己的,不應因此自夸。我們應爲鄰舍謀福利,我們的對像是所有的人,並無例外。我們只是代管上帝所賜的財物,必須在愛的原則下,毫無保留地善用它們。異鄉旅客或地位低微的人同樣有上帝的形像。甚至對那些傷害我們的人,主命令我們寬恕他們,注視在他們裏面的上帝形像,「這形像遮蓋和消除了他們的過失,它的美和尊嚴吸引我們,叫我們伸出愛的手臂,來擁抱他們。」可是無論我們怎樣盡力於慈善工作,如果這些工作非出自誠實的愛心,一切必歸徒然。施舍而含侮辱是有罪的。我們不當爭名奪利,對於一切得失,都能夠像那些相信萬事由上帝支配的人,以心平氣和的態度加以接受(見第三卷第七章第二至十節)。在這冷酷的世界中,我們必須背負十架,爲著衛護正義,情願忍受各種苦難,在因正義的緣故而被迫害當中尋求安慰。當我們喜樂地仰望著來生,我們對今生須有節製,但不必過於苛刻;以上帝所給我們的恩賜來造就我們自己,不是來毀滅自己。

# 十五、稱義、善工、自由及禱告

加爾文進而討論因信稱義的道理,對這道理,他和路德一樣,認爲非常重要。他的重點是在乎上帝無條件地寬赦了罪人的罪,由於上帝白白的恩典,罪人得以被稱爲義。這種義並不是我們所有的,而是屬於基督;我們能夠得到這義是因爲我們和基督發生關系。基督把他的養分給我們,並奇妙地將上帝公義的權力灌輸給我們(見第三卷第十一章第廿三節)。這道理絕非輕視善工,加爾文從《聖經》中得到許多引句,說明這是善工的真正條件。我們若不「愛那先愛我們的主」,就是最大的忘恩。我們的良心是從一切死的工作中擺脫出來,以事奉活的上帝。「若上帝這樣愛我們,我們就得彼此相愛。」加爾文綜合拯救的道理說:

「我們得救的基本原因乃是聖父上帝的愛;具體原因乃是聖子基督的順服;功能原因乃是聖靈的光照——就是信;最後原因乃是上帝的無限良善的榮耀。」(見第三卷第十四章廿一節)。他不憚煩地攻擊中世紀經院派的重視善工的學說,不免使一般讀者厭煩。在某一靈巧的討論中,他試行調和雅各和保羅的主張,但所提出的調和卻顯然是保羅所主張的。

在《基督教要義》初版,加爾文以六章中的一章篇幅討論基督徒自由的問題,內容和最後訂正版的第四卷相同。可是在第三卷第十九章他對這題目有較爲精簡的討論,他的討論比路德在《基督徒的自由》(Liberty of a Christian Man)一書中所說的較有系統,但力量不免稍遜。基督徒應當持守上帝的憐恤,放棄律法的義,除非律法的教訓能幫助他們成聖。從律法的束縛釋放出來,他們即可自動順服於上帝的旨意之下。他們將聽到上帝以父親慈愛的聲音呼召他們,並愉快迅速地順從他的引導。對於無關緊要的事如衣食等,我們應避免過分的拘謹。愚蠢的拘謹足以傷害稚弱的心靈。有人定意餐桌上不用台布,以後覺得連手帕也該放棄。爲著要避免珍肴美味,可能連烘面包也認爲奢侈,而要求更劣等的食物。可是加爾文亦斥責任情縱恣,和故意在禮拜五飲宴食內來污辱心靈軟弱的弟兄,就是那些我們應該愛護幫助的弟兄。

加爾文以一整章的篇幅討論禱祈問題 (第三卷第二十章)。他認爲祈禱是信的操練,並立下了一些原則:禱告的時候心須專注,以迫切需要之情,在順服謙卑中祈求,並存確切的盼望及信心。從這裏又討論到公共崇拜,頌贊歌詠之適當應用,及對主禱文的詳細解釋。他說禱告時我們應當仰望上帝,但我們亦需要適當的禱告儀式和時間,好幫助激勵我們。

# 十六、揀選和定罪

**加爾文主張我們個人的得救是在乎上帝的揀選。**他很知道預定論受許多人的 批評,但他根據《聖經》,熱烈地爲預定論辯護。他所下的定義是:

「我們之所謂預定乃指上帝的永恆命令,由於預定,他自己決定了他對世上每一個人所將成就的。因爲人被造並非有相同命運;永生是預定了給某些人,而永刑給另外的一些人。每一個人被造的終局非此即彼,或生或死是預定了的。」(見第三卷第廿一章第五節)。

關於這一點《聖經》所提供的証據極爲豐富。有些人埋怨「揀選」,認爲是不公道的事。這無異野獸之責備上帝爲何不把它們造爲人類。其實那些爲上帝所揀選的人並非配受上帝的恩典憐恤。他們之蒙揀選,其原因完全在乎上帝,不是因爲上帝預先知道他們的悔改或信心,好像某些教父所主張的。加爾文引用奧古斯古丁的話來充實他的見解:「恩典並未發現配受揀選的人,而是使人成爲配受揀選的。」他亦提出和阿奎那不同的一點主張,並常引用伯爾拿(St. Bernard of Clairvaux)所說而爲他所贊同的話。他對這問題不願任意推測,只願接受《聖經》所說的:「如此看來,上帝要憐憫誰,就憐憫誰,要叫誰剛硬,就叫誰剛硬」(羅 9:18)。加爾文稱這一定罪的命令爲「可怖的命令」(見第三卷第廿三章第七節)。但這不能以哲學的方法來窺探。他不願對上帝那不可探索的智慧作過分的窺探,但他答復了神學家們對他的主張所提出的許多異議,並引用了奧古斯丁的許多話來支持自己。上帝的旨意就是公義的最高準則:泥土豈能埋怨窯匠呢?

在上述這些問題上加爾文認爲他的立論都有《聖經》的根據。同時他也知道, 正如我們知道一樣,人與人之間所得的機會各有不同,有的人給安置於優良的環境 中,有的人處在惡劣的環境中。非由於上帝的旨意,沒有一件事情會發生。關於靈 魂的事完全由上帝決定。在這教義中,凡從道德方面不可籌算的事,應歸之於他的 隱秘的策劃,而這一領域我們不可圖謀以理論方法侵入。

在有效的呼召當中被揀選者對道的領受須加上聖靈的啓發。對那些已有效地蒙召的人,基督即賜予恆忍之心。被揀選者在上帝所定的時間被引入於恩典中,在這時間以前,人們迷失於荒漠中,和一般罪人無異。很明顯的,加爾文相信被揀選的人少於被定罪的人,可是他並不對這一差別作極端的估量,好像法國舊教的馬施倫(Jean Baptiste Massillon) 在他的「得救的只有少數」那篇講詞中恐嚇一班自命不凡的會眾一般。他也不描繪一個使肉體受酷刑的地獄。他的看法是:《聖經》對那些被定罪者所應受的悲慘刑罰,是以肉體的痛苦作爲像征表明出來。其實主要的是在乎和上帝斷絕了一切聯契,並且處在上帝的公義忿怒之下的那種可怕結果(見第三卷第廿五章第十二節)。

# 十七、教會、教牧、及教會組織法

第四卷(仍在使徒信經的總題下)加爾文討論到「大公教會」(Catholic Church)及「聖徒相通」(Communiono f Saints)二事。在信經中這二者均指同一得救的團體。聖徒相通這詞語「充分表明了教會的性格」,因爲一切加給聖徒的神恩在他們中間都互相流通首。聖徒的真正的大會教會,那包括著已逝聖徒及所有被揀選者的,對我們是無形的,只有上帝知道。但那有形教會,由那些信主的人組成而分散於全世界各地的,亦同屬於大公教會,我們和她必須契合,即使它當中有著假冒爲善的人。正如居普良(Cyprian)所說的,教會是那些以上帝爲父者的母親:「沒有別的方法好叫我們進入生命,除非由她懷胎,由她生產,由她乳養,並不斷地在她的看顧管教之下。」(第四卷第一章第四節)。

我們應藉著福音的傳播,虔敬的聆聽,並履行依照基督所設立的聖禮,來認識有形的教會。「無論那裏上帝的道被虔敬聆聽,而聖禮未受忽視,」我們就可確信那裏有真教會,而不可與之分離。誰退出了一個持守真道及聖禮的基督徒團體,在上帝眼中就是叛徒。教會的第三個標記即法規,這一點和組織的教會有關(詳細討論見第四卷第十二章)。若脫離真正的有形教會就是不承認上帝和基督。我們對宣揚聖道的要求,不可過於狹窄。沒有人能完全避免錯誤,道德的標準更不當過於苛刻。我們不能要求人的生活像脫離了內體的靈一般。我們不能找到毫無瑕疵的教會。當時哥林多的教會有許多人走入迷途,但保羅並沒有咒詛它。教會是神聖的,這不是因爲它已達到了無罪的地步,而是它每日進步,朝向聖潔。加爾文反復警告脾氣乖張和驕傲的事,非但警告那些喜分派別的人,也警告那些喜作批評的會友,這些人之所以極端苛刻是由於他們虛夸地自以爲比別人優越。關於嚴格懲訓的事,加爾文認爲不應做到使犯罪的人在精神上忍受不了(見第四卷第一章第八至十八節;第十二章第一節)。

雖然如此,當教義遭受曲解破壞,聖禮未受遵行的時候,加爾文認爲分裂是必要而合理的,這可以羅馬天主教的情形爲例。羅馬天主教的衛護者稱希臘派爲分裂派,因爲他們背離教廷;可是羅馬派自己是背離基督(見第四卷第二章第二節)。在我們不能找到上帝真道的地方,我們不能承認有教會的存在。是的,在羅馬天主教裏面還遺留著一些真教會分子,可是加爾文認爲整個羅馬天主教是處在反基督的暴政之下(見第四卷第二章第十一、十二節)。

合乎《聖經》教訓的教政和牧職於是確立。加爾文認爲真的教會的牧職應以新約爲基礎,可是使徒、先知及傳道者的職務並非常設的,雖然他們在特別需要的時候曾再出現。在固定的牧養工作上牧師的職務相當於使徒,而教師的職務相當於早期教會的先知。使徒們爲全世界所做的事,即是每一牧師應爲他的一群會友做的。加爾文引証了好些經文來說明「主教」和「長老」是相同的:他們同爲聖道的教牧。根據羅馬人書第十二章八節及哥林多前書第十二章廿八節,他承認由「敬虔聖潔的人」所組成,擔負訓導而非教牧職責的「教政議會」的權力。並承認兩類的執事,一類爲管理救濟窮人的款項,另一類直接負責救濟事宜(見第四卷第三章第一至九節)。

關於牧師的資格及任用事加爾文亦參照《聖經》實例加以討論。牧師必須有純正信仰及聖潔生活。第一批使徒爲主本身所指派。以後的爲聖靈所感召而由教會選立。至於授職的時候只行按手的只有牧師,非全體會友(見第四卷第二章第十至十六節)。

# 十八、神品階級、教皇製度、及教會會議

雖然加爾文在日內瓦不爲主教們留下餘地,但當他討論教皇專製製度興起以前的教政歷史時(見第四卷第四章),他並不反對初期的主教區製度。他根據聖耶柔米和其他教父的意見,主張長老被其他長老推選升任主教區長作爲領袖的,其各種職務和其他充任爲上帝聖道及聖禮教牧的人相同。他贊同「神品階級」(hierarchy)(雖說他不喜這名詞)之進步發展,這種發展產生了省主教及主教長;他們對於教會法規的維持,以及作爲中間人,把各種糾紛問題提出於省級議會等,都是需要的。聖靈努力保守這些教牧,使他們不作「諸侯和統治者」之夢。在這一時期,教會所有產業都保留爲救濟貧窮的基金。貞忠純潔的主教及執事各負職責,獻身作爲教牧的人都在虔敬中受教育訓練,並從最低級如看門等職務逐漸提升,預備他們終身的工作。民選教牧的事,由老底嘉會議(Council of Laodicea)(約在主後三四三至三八一年之間)加以限製,這是良好次序所必需要。到大貴鉤利(死於主後六〇四年)爲止的整個期間,加爾文認爲並沒有像以後流行於教牧界的那種野心和腐敗的現像。

在第五章 (本書未譯此章) 加爾文猛烈攻擊中世紀教皇製度及以後的所謂「尊嚴的神品階級」之非,認爲是等於「敵基督的暴政」。第六章攻擊羅馬教廷「首座」之說,和那些用以支持教皇特權的經文釋義。馬太第十六章十八節不能按照教皇的解釋:聖彼得或者可居首位,但他不是超越眾使徒的權威。他亦曾經被差遣從耶路撒

冷到撒瑪利亞去(參徒8:14)。假定彼得比別人崇高,他也不是全教會的頭,只有基督是教會的頭。初期教會並無以人爲首的証據可尋。再者,如果權威是賜給彼得,這和羅馬又有什麼關系?爲什麼不把彼得初期工作的地方安提阿當作首座?在歷史上安提阿的教會反而處在沒有使徒傳統的教區治下。其實羅馬主教在歷史上之所以有優越地位不只因爲彼得曾經在羅馬住過,也因爲羅馬在帝國的重要地位,而且比較上未受神學斗爭的影響。對教皇的攻擊另見以下兩章,不包括在本選集裏面。加爾文廣泛地應用歷史材料,說明教皇之自認爲基督代表及教會的頭「非但是不敬和污辱基督,而且是完全無稽和違反常識」(見第四卷第七章第廿九節)。教會毫無權威可言,除非它完全順服聖靈,接受上帝的話所教導的(見第四卷第八章第十二節)。

關於早期教會的會議,加爾文說:「我從心底裏尊崇它們」;但並不是所有的會議都受聖靈的引領。近期的會議比不上早期的;甚至早期的會議,如愛任依女王(EmpressIrene)所召開關於神像問題的會議(七八七年)也發出了不敬的論令。其他有些徒事爭論,連尼西亞會議(Council of Nicea)若不是爲著皇帝的緣故,恐怕將演成慘局。雖然如此,會議若以《聖經》爲根據來解決爭論的問題,往往得到了優異及可貴的成績(見第四卷第九章)。

# 十九、教會的法規

第四卷第十及十一章關於教會的立法及司法權未包括在本書之內。在這些方面 加爾文所關懷的是各事均須有合官處理。許多條例只爲一時之用。女人面罩與宗教 無關,無面罩外出亦非犯法。在某些場合,女人亦可公開發言。關於這一類事不可 忽視社會上的風俗(見第四卷第十章第卅一節)。在這裏加爾文詳細地討論教會的 法規問題,認爲法規恰像是聯系身體各部分的韌帶;亦像約束野馬的□轡,懶怠者 的馬剌,或以基督的慈愛管教罪人的鞭子。若過失是秘密性質的,法規的施行即從 私人訓誡開始;如果有嚴重過失,即可公開懲訓或甚至於革除出教。懲訓的目的在 於防止罪行,使善不至於爲惡所沾污,並勸諫罪人悔改。正如在初期的教會中一 樣,無論地位高低,均不能逃避必要的懲訓(見第四卷第十二章第一至七節)。加 爾文在這裏主張教會有權懲訓統治者。他又以相當篇幅,並從居普良及屈梭多模的 主張得到佐助,反對一切不與基督教的溫和精神相稱的嚴刻懲訓。可是他相信實行 適當的齋戒是有益的;他說,「人當腸滿腹脹的時候,他的心不易親近上帝。」須 勸人民齋戒,特別當災難的時候。可是如果不以謙卑悔改之心行齋戒,就不如不 行。每年的大齋節是沒有根據的。他對於古代教士所受的訓練頗加贊許;可是法規 條例的逐漸演變,內容矛盾百出,且有許多無意義的限製,好像波斯的規矩不許揩 鼻涕(第四卷第十二章第十四至廿二節)。至於教士必須獨身的條例並不和使徒所 行的相符合,亦違反《聖經》視婚姻爲莊嚴神聖的觀念,並弊害實大。

雖然加爾文贊成齋戒爲教會法規的一部分,但他毫不含糊地譴責教士及修士之獨身信誓。這問題在論「信誓」一章中有詳細討論。他認爲家庭中的一位虔敬父親 在平信徒地位上的貢獻,比出家的修士還要大些。使年青人輕率起誓所產生的弊害 最爲嚴重。他指出提摩太前書第五章第九節所雲寡婦「必須年紀到六十歲」,始可 起誓守寡;而《聖經》並不鼓勵男或女的獨身生活(見第四卷第十三章)。

#### 二十、聖禮

好幾章是討論聖禮神學的,其中有一章緒論(第四卷第十四章)。爲求充實奧 古斯丁對聖禮所下的簡短定義——聖禮「爲無形恩典之有形形式」,加爾文說:聖 禮「爲上帝賜恩典給我們的証據,由外在印志,和我們對他的虔敬之相互印証,加 以確認。」它必須以對聖道的明晰可聽的宣揚表達出來。加爾文可能同意奧古斯丁 以聖禮爲「有形話語」的說法;但並不說它因《聖經》的存在而不需要。它確証了 《聖經》所寫的,恰如印章之於某一文件。印章若打在一張無字的皮紙上就沒有意 義。再者,沒有信的聖禮是無價值的;聖禮可助長信德。聖禮也是基督徒所以異於 他人的標志,正如旗幟可以分別不同國籍的軍艦。聖禮一詞在舊約中應用於許多神 跡上面,但基督教會的重要**聖禮是洗禮和聖餐**,這是基督教信仰的特征——基督 徒爲人認識的記號。加爾文不反對稱授聖職時所行的按手禮爲聖禮,但不同意使它 和洗禮及聖餐同列。正如那位最傑出的教父奧古斯丁所說的:洗禮和聖餐是比舊約 聖禮少數而更卓越的聖禮。把聖禮當作一種善工是誤解了它的性質,因爲主動的是 上帝,人是被動的。

加爾文對這兩種基督教聖禮都有詳細討論:先論洗禮(見第四卷第十五及十六 章)。洗禮非但像征過去和一切罪過的潔淨,並且是對罪死,在基督裏復活的印 記,又是我們和基督結連,在基督一切恩惠上有分的見証;它証明原罪——那與生 俱來的原罪——之被解除。加爾文以譴責的態度反對加在按照《聖經》所指示的簡 單洗禮儀式上的那些無謂的繁文節和迷信舉動。第十六章是專爲衛護幼兒洗禮而作 的。他認爲洗禮可替代割禮——那作爲有分於上帝和亞伯拉罕所立之約的印記。在 這裏加爾文對舊約之有永久價值的觀念於無意中流露出來,這一觀念以後發展成爲 十世紀的「約的神學」(covenant theology)。信主者的子女若於嬰兒時過世,亦可 進入永生,因爲相信在洗禮當中上帝亦賜恩典給活著的嬰兒。關於這一點和「揀 選」的關系,加爾文並不辯論。

加爾文以分爲五十節的一長章 (第四卷第十七章) 討論聖餐問題,另外以一章攻擊 天主教的彌撒。對這問題的討論散見於加爾文的其他作品中。他的《聖餐短論》以 後將討論到。他主張聖餐的意義是「參與」,僅非紀念而已。「參與基督的身體及 血爲一切渴慕屬靈生活者所必需。」聖靈的那超出我們所能領悟的秘密能力奧秘地 把我們聯系於基督的屬天身體。這恩典是賜與萬人的,卻只有「相信的人才能享 受。」上帝不會指給我們一個虛幻的記號;它所表証的(指基督的身體)是確切地 臨在。這並不是說由於化質的作用,實體地臨在於餅和酒的原素裏面。原素沒有改 變,如同洗禮的水沒有改變一樣。如果餅與酒不是真的像它們在聖禮中所被見的一 樣,聖禮就沒有意義:就不能成爲基督的「內」的象徵(見第四卷第十七章第九、 十、廿四節)。加爾文以爲羅馬教的彌撒消滅了基督教所信的「基督之死的獨特

性」,因爲他們把每一次的彌撒當作活祭和獻給上帝的補償,因此開了私人也舉行 彌撒的惡例,破壞了全體和基督的相通(見第四卷第十八章第七節)。

在第四卷第十九章加爾文檢討羅馬教所守的其他五種聖禮(堅振禮、贖罪禮、涂油禮、授職禮、和婚禮),認爲是沒有《聖經》根據的聖禮。他質問:「在什麼地方上帝的話曾應許使聖靈降臨於「堅振禮」上面?」並說:真的堅振禮並非聖禮,卻是好像初期教會把它當作「一種教授兒童或青年人申述信仰的答問方法」。爲著這一目的,他希望普世教會能夠采用一種固定程式。在論授職禮那一段,他詳細批評中世紀的神甫製度,並作積極性的建議。關於婚禮,他批評羅馬教的矛盾:一方面視婚姻爲聖禮,另一方面把它當作內欲污穢之事,並禁止擔任教牧職務的人結婚。

#### 廿一、論民政

《基督教要義》一書以「論民政」一章結束。加爾文反對強調基督徒自由以至於忽視政治上的責任和義務的那種主張。屬世事務並非卑鄙的,完全與基督徒無關的。當我們寄居世上的時候,政府的幫助對我們是必要的。世上沒有一個社會,其完善的程度到了可以不需法律。人之需要國家,正如他之需要食物、陽光、及空氣;國家且能使人獲得這些需要。同樣,它的存在可製阻偶像崇拜,可維持和平與公道,培養商業上的誠信,「總之,可使基督徒當中有一種共同崇拜方式,而人與人之間有友愛精神」。加爾文從三方面來討論整個民政問題,即行政官吏或統治者(法律的監護人);藉以施行統治的法律;和被治的人民(見第四卷第廿章第一至四節)。

加爾文認爲屬世的統治者有上帝授的權力范圍,反對重洗派否認基督徒與政治有關的說法。他從《聖經》引証官吏的權力是從上帝來的(參箴 8:15,16;羅13:1—4)。他們是上帝的用人,執行最高的職務,必須在他們的管治中表現出上帝的眷顧、仁慈和公義(見第四卷第廿章第六節)。即使是由一人統治的政府,眾人亦須服從,我們受命應「尊敬君王」。抽象地爭論那一種政體的政府最好是無益之舉,因答案須由環境決定。加爾文傾向於「貴族政治,或貴族政治與民主的混合政體。」並認爲由多數人負責較之由寡頭負責更可能促進健全的政府。所謂「貴族」,加爾文所指的是「德高望重」的人,不必是世襲的特殊階級。健全的政府莫過於能以中庸之道規定自由范圍並把它建立在鞏固基礎之上的政府,而最快樂的人民莫過於在這種製度之下被治的人民。因此加爾文相信當人民得以生活於穩固及秩序良好的自由之中時,政府的目的就算達到。但加爾文的這種主張並不在使生活趨向於世俗化。國家必須視本身爲「促進虔敬生活」的工具,不得「忽視上帝的命令」,卻須維護純正崇拜,保護被壓迫者,在人與人之間行公義的裁判,並懲罰犯罪的人(見第四卷第廿章第七至九節)。

在這裏引起了死刑,和與死刑有關的基督徒參加戰爭的問題。掌權的人「不是空空地佩劍;因爲他是上帝的用人,是伸冤的,刑罰那作惡的」(羅 13:4)。他還

引証了舊約的許多例子。當暴徒在行瘋狂謀殺時,掌權者若按劍不動,那是一種極大的邪惡。不必要的嚴厲行動必須製止,但虛飾的仁慈較之殘忍更壞。加爾文適切地引用了一句古羅馬格言:「在一個什麼都不允許的國君統治之下不好,在一個什麼都允許的國君統治之下更不好。」同樣,爲保護無辜的人可能使我們卷入對侵略者作戰。加爾文引証奧古斯丁的話,支持福音並不禁止從軍之說。但不應使憤怒和仇恨的動機成爲決定從事懲罰戰的條件,一切避免戰爭的方法都應嘗試。關於稅餉的事,掌權者須知征收稅餉須以公眾所需要者爲限,因稅餉出自人民血汗,絕對不容浪費。

加爾文以法學家的資格,在本書中對律法問題作簡明討論。和阿奎那及墨蘭 頓一樣,他把舊約律法分爲三類,即道德的、祭禮的、和司法的。在這三類當中, 惟有道德律,那規定對上帝對人之責任的兩版十誡爲永久性的;因爲上帝永不移易 的旨意即「他必爲人類所崇拜,而人類須彼此相愛。」凡人都有這一律法,雖然不 都像《聖經》所記的那種固定形式。任何國家都可按照他們所需要的自由立法,只 是所立的法必須符合於「上帝的不易之律所命令的愛的律例。」殘暴和非道德的 「法律」根本不能當作法律,因爲它們摧殘人道。所以正面的法律必須與上帝授的 自然律相符合,這一觀念在其他地方亦爲加爾文所堅決主張。例如在他所著《哥林 多前書釋義》(第十一章十四節),他把不良的法律當作是一種破壞自然完整的無 功嘗試。若有任何立法者,以他暴虐的驕傲,想顛倒是非,把惡定爲非惡,「那被 壓下的自然之光終必沖出黑暗,仍占優勢。」在這裏加爾文的主張頗合傳統;使人 想起西色柔和許多教父的主張;在基本上他與墨蘭頓和呼克爾 (Hooker) 的見解相 符,而與阿奎那的主張如出一轍。有些近代作家,好像安脫爾未 (A. P. d'Entreves) 曾過份夸大大陸改教派 (Continental Reformers) 和呼克爾之間對這一主張的差別。 是的,加爾文在他的神學思想中比較呼克爾更強調罪的嚴重後果。可是很明顯地他 對於人在政治上的權力一向十分尊重。正如我們在前面所看到的,他所主張的自然 律和一般的恩典有著密切的聯系,甚至可認爲是兩種難以分別的觀念。加爾文相信 由於上帝的恩賜,人通常都有政治正義的意識。在日內瓦他並不建議只有基督徒才 可擔任政治上的職務。因爲上帝賜給非信徒以某種「恩典」,使他們履行屬世的責 任;可是這種恩典有時好像是屬於人的與生俱來的權利,與其說是「附加」的,勿 寧說是天性的。加爾文,連同在他以前的那些主張自然律的人,都同意上帝已將道 德律賜與眾人,駐扎於人心之中,作爲分辨是非的工具;這工具雖因罪削弱,但未 消滅。《聖經》的道德律「無非是上帝所銘刻於人心中的自然律之意識的一種証 明。」所謂「公道」既然是自然的,其用意無非對全人類一視同仁。我們不應批評 那按照自然公道的原則所製定的法律,不管和猶太人所信的有多大差異。加爾文對 於那種認爲「不以摩西政體而按照普通國法治理人民的國家,不可能爲組織良好的 國家」的歪曲意見,並不采納。國家必須保護教會和福音,但國家的法律可從《聖 經》以外的其他源頭產生出來。

加爾文對良好法律的重視在他言論中充分表明。他認為法律是國家的神經系,或甚至像西色柔在解釋柏拉圖時所說的是「國家的靈魂」。再者,基督徒有充分權利在正當事上從法律及官吏取得幫助。在法庭出現,不論身為原告或被告,只要為

著公道的目的,並無不合,這樣做可能有益於對方,雖然「正直的律法師並不多見」。是的,利用公正的方法對付不公正的人也是基督徒的責任,但不可存復仇的念頭,也不可沒有慈愛的心(見第四卷第廿章第十四至廿一節)。

研究政治理論的人都知道在聖巴多羅買日大屠殺 (一五七二年) 以後十年,加爾文派學者刊行了好些討論政治學說的作品,攻擊暴虐政治,主張政府的治權屬於全民。同時與加爾文同時代的不列顛復原教作家如波內 (John Ponet) ,古得曼 (John Goodman) ,和諾克斯等,亦發表了許多同樣激烈的論說。可是我們必得詳細研究加爾文的許多著作,才能找出他擁護民主的痕跡。他主張服從權力,認爲權力是上帝爲限製罪惡而設的 (他當時反對法國人以暴力反抗國王)。即使對不良統治者,亦有服從義務,這一類統治者在世界上爲數不少。基督徒應有的態度乃服從、忍受、和禱告。

可是加爾文亦爲被壓迫者網開一面,贊成消極的抵抗。凡違反上帝旨意的命令,基督徒不應服從;因爲惟獨上帝爲良心之主。積極的武力反抗亦非絕對不可。由於上帝的命令,解放者有時候不得不以刀劍對暴君;上帝以此來擊破驕橫君主的王權。「讓統治者們戒懼吧!」同時,若國家憲法產生限製暴政的民意機構,這種機構須指導人民反對暴君,好像斯巴達、雅典和羅馬的議會;加爾文認爲法國和日耳曼有同性質的議會。他的這一主張常被稱爲加爾文的「議會主義」。很顯然地他以爲這一種對抗暴君的情形在當時是普遍存在的。民意機構的負責分子若不能抗拒君主之越權行爲,他們就犯了欺騙及出賣人民自由的罪。無論在何種情形下,順服上帝必須置於服從統治者之前。在《基督教要義》的最後一段,加爾文提醒我們以色列人因對拜偶像的王耶羅波安過分順服而受譴責(何5:11)(見第四卷第廿章第三十至三十二節)。

這就是專製政治的一大漏洞,這一漏洞立刻被那些改革派神學家及法學家一那些革命的先驅者——所利用。可是對反抗暴政的革命勢力讓步的主張並不以加爾文爲始。路德曾主張若帝王反對福音派的改革工作,諸侯即有權反抗帝王。巴朗(Han Baron) 認爲加爾文之關於議會的論說是從布塞珥在施塔斯堡鼓吹下級治權的意見中得來的。一五五〇年左右當馬得堡的路德派和查理第五發生沖突時,他們發表了一篇著名的宣言,強調下級機關的權力,主張他們非但有權衛護人民的宗教信仰,亦有權衛護他們的生命、自由及財產。波內在一五五六年所發表的《論政治權力》(Treatise of Politike Power) 當中,根據自然律的原則,主張「爲著正當理由及公眾需要」,普通公民都有權誅戮暴君。誅戮暴君的事在古代及中世紀都有人主張過;加爾文並不加以慫恿,他不鼓勵不負責任的反叛。可是當一位聲望卓著的保守人物對此作讓步時,其所產生的影響往往比過激派的強烈鼓吹更爲有效。

加爾文在這裏確儲下一些彈藥,但並不準備輕率爆炸。他不反對日內瓦的代議製度,亦不贊同一個反叛的政黨,即使是在法國亦無例外。當復原派少數分子在法國作殊死斗爭的時候,多數的加爾文派比加爾文本人態度更爲激烈。加爾文的繼承人伯撒,尊崇加爾文的霍特曼,連同著作反暴君(Vindiciaecontra Tyrannos)的加爾

交派作家,以及在蘇格蘭的布坎南 (George Buchanan)等,都主張采取政治行動以爭取人民所要求的自由。另外還有許多作家,他們積極發揮所謂「議會政治論」(Doctrine of the Ephors),這種論說在加爾文著作中只有簡短的一段。究竟這些人的主張從加爾文得到多少影響,確成問題。布坎南之限製君權的思想大致受邁約(John Major)影響(約約爲一位勤勞學者,於一五二九年著作《大不例顛史》)。約翰諾克斯的思想可能亦出自同一源頭。伯撒爲一淵博學者。霍特曼精通法學及古代政治哲學。那一些反暴君的作者也都是鴻儒碩士。這些作家所用的大部分材料都不是加爾文所用過的,而他們對民權的主張較之加爾文更爲前進。還有一層,他們和某些耶穌會的作家有許多共同點,這些作家的處境和法國復原派相同,都處在政治追害之下,所以他們幾乎都在同一時期起而鼓吹反抗的學說。必須承認的事實即政治上的加爾文主義在近代的有力表現,其得力於加爾文以前的作家者,較之得自加爾文本人爲多。現代加爾文派以基本上忠於加爾文傳統者爲代表,但他們所把握的思想卻是好多世紀的累積。

# 廿二、致法蘭西斯一世書

現在我們討論關於加爾文的一些零星作品。這類作品之比較重要的已由彼維列治 (Henry Beverikge) 譯成英文,以《加爾文短篇集》 (Calvin's Tracts) 爲名,分三卷出版。本選集除「致法蘭西斯一世書」 (Letterto Francis I ) 之外,另選三篇,按照年代,以前者爲本集首篇。

加爾文對歐洲國際事件之有關教會者,一向極表關注。從他的書信中可以証明,隨時隨地若他以爲可以幫助被迫害的復原派信徒,可以促使有力量的人參加改教工作,還是可以影響社會領袖的意見,他立刻采取行動。於一五三六年作爲《基督教要義》一書序言刊出之致法蘭西斯一世書,就是這種行動的顯著例証。他也寫過勸說的長信給英國的攝政及波蘭國王。給法蘭西斯一世的信是一五三五年八月寫的,那時候法王正在逼迫復原派信徒,有許多人被監禁,也有許多人遭受死難。加爾文在信中說:「我是爲一切信徒辯護」,他譴責當局在法國蹂躪他們的真理,就是基督的真理。他列舉並駁斥那些使信徒遭受迫害的種種誹謗,堅決聲明「我們和教會並無爭執。」認復原派爲反教會之說無非是根據對教會的一些錯誤觀念。真的教會是永遠存在的,但並不常常是有形的。在猶太人當中教會的組織有時候松馳到使教會成爲無形的,好像先知以利亞以爲只剩下了一人。加爾文對迫害這些代表真教會的少數信徒,這些上帝將援救他們脫出輕侮者之手的信徒的事,提出警告。

# 廿三、答沙杜裏多

加爾文的《答沙杜裏多》是他的最傑出的短篇創作之一。沙杜裏多主教(Jacopo Sadoleto 1477-1547)在當時忠於羅馬教皇的人文主義派當中享有崇高地位。他和教皇利歐第十的教廷有著聯系,初被委爲賈本脫拉(Carpentras)主教,繼任教皇保羅第三之親信顧問,爲一五三六年保羅所委主張革新的紅衣主教之一;一位以虔敬及博學而享盛譽的人。一五三九年三月當加爾文離開日內瓦,該城內部發生危

機的時候,沙杜裏多利用這個機會,寫了一封勸說的信給日內瓦議會及市民,希圖爭取他們回到教皇治下。這封信以非常巧妙的技術寫成,以中世紀教會的信仰爲根據,針對著讀者對將來拯救的渴望,大下說辭。按照沙杜裏多的說法,得救的附帶條件乃尊奉教會的法規及訓誨,尊行教會所命令的補贖辦法及傳統崇拜儀式,放棄詭譎之徒所倡導的種種革新。加爾文的復信一部分仿效沙杜裏多的作風,把一個羅馬教會的忠實信徒和一個復原派牧師的相反意見戲劇化了。在沙杜裏多的信中,這兩個人各有一段說白,用來解釋所持的理由,並以和對方一起站在審判官面前回話的方式表達出來。裏面有一段當作是復原派牧師的話,說他因爲在教會中不得志,乃引誘許多人脫離教會的規矩,攻擊教皇專製,機巧地利用《聖經》來傾覆教會的權威等等。因此復原派信徒將被判有罪。沙杜裏多堅持教會(指羅馬天主教)不可能錯誤,因爲教會是受聖靈引導。當前復原教宗派之多足見復原教之錯誤。因此他勸諭日內瓦人歸回並順服羅馬母會。

沙杜裏多對他的主張確曾作了有效表達,他個人的聲望更使他的主張增加力量。伯撒在他所著《加爾文的生平》(Life of Calvin) 書中說:「那時候在日內瓦沒有一人能出來答復沙杜裏多的信。」經過一些時候的延擱,這封信才送達在施塔斯堡的加爾文。加爾文以他敏捷的特性,寫成了編入於本選集的這篇答沙杜裏多。

加爾文在開始時以非常禮貌的態度贊揚對方的優美品格,譽之爲「值得敬愛」的人。但和其他改教同道,如米銳及法勒爾等一樣,他對沙杜裏多對牧職之攻擊,極爲不平。他指出他和日內瓦的改革教會有著深切關系,必須幫助它,即使是當他離開了它的時候,至於對他的牧職的攻擊及造謠誹謗的話,他亦必須辯護。這位紅衣主教沙杜裏多之突然對那些他向不關心的日內瓦人發生重大熱情,確是一椿奇異的事。假定他的動機是無可非議的,他那封信的內容也很值得駁斥。加爾文對那誹謗他和法勒爾,說他們二人的動機是爲個人利益的話,憤激地加以駁斥:「如果我要圖謀自己的利益,我永不會離開你們那一群。」他要求查考事實:任教牧職務的人既不貪圖財富,亦不奪取政治權力,或設計將教會款項移入私囊,這些都是眾所周知的事實,作與此等事實相反的論調者,只是貶低他們自己的人格。

加爾文對沙杜裏多所強調的永恆得救表示贊同,但他補充說:「使一個人的思想專注於他自己,而不使他有表彰上帝榮光的熱情(人生的基本目的在此),不能算是健全的神學。我們活著先要爲著上帝,不是爲著我們自己。」

加爾文亦同意沒有其他事情比邪曲的崇拜更爲危險,他把對方的這一論點拿來作爲衛護自己主張的基礎,進而攻擊那認爲教會因得聖靈引導,所以真的崇拜須由教會成例規定的理論;主張崇拜須以上帝的話爲根據。真的教會乃歷代所有聖徒結合的團體,在真理,靈性,信仰及友愛中成爲一體。加爾文又辯稱:「我們和古代教會契合的程度比你們更爲密切」,並以教理、法規、聖禮、及儀式等作爲佐証。他更提出因信稱義的教理,說明善工非得救之因,乃信心所結的果實。主動在乎上帝的憐恤,不在乎人的愛心。他反對對方對改革宗所主張基督身體顯現在聖禮中的錯誤描述,並請對方參考奧古斯丁寫給達大努(Dardanus)討論神的臨在和基督屬天

身體之間的差異的一封信。當他駁斥化質說之無稽時,他承認他所主張的與古代教會的主張相符,對於廢除強迫每人作秘密認罪的主張亦然。他認爲聖徒代求的製度使古代拜偶像的事再度出現,而且從人的思想中消滅了由基督代求的信念。爲死者禱告的事同樣屬於迷信。

加爾文對濫用「教會」名稱以掩蔽邪惡,和把凡尋求教會改革者都當作教會敵人這事,憤激地加以攻擊。沙杜裏多的「怠惰神學」(indolenttheology),認爲那些沒有學問的人當閉著眼睛從教會領袖接受信仰,尤爲加爾文所反對。加爾文相信即使是最無知最簡單的人,爲著自己的真信仰,也有他應打的仗和應作的準備,不能依賴學問較優的人。至於說倡導教會改革者的動機在乎逃避教會的懲戒,加爾文指出羅馬天主教會本身綱紀蕩然,對它的教士根本就沒有懲訓這一回事,作爲答復。

加爾文把對方那段假設一位牧師在審判台前答問的話引申出來。這段話適成為和羅馬教廷分離的最好理由。所謂背棄教會的說法是錯誤的。那位發言者聲稱當他和教會內部的敵人分離時,他心中正盼望著教會的統一。一位復原教平信徒亦登場說話,報告他怎樣在福音派導師的教導下自願擺脫教廷。所說的話對教會備極推崇,並表示對教會統一的熱心,但攻擊羅馬教廷之狂妄要求。

撇下了這一種辯論方法,加爾文再次提出幾個要點,補充先前爲自己和同道們所作的辯護。關於對方指責他分解基督的配偶這一點,他鄭重地加以否認。教會已爲教皇一黨所破壞撕裂,革新派的目的在於復興宗教,並使支離破碎的教會歸於真正統一。這篇信札以一段誠懇勸諭的話結束,希望對方亦能尋求教會的真正統一,這種統一,若基督願將四散的信徒結集起來,與他的身體相結聯,必能實現。

這位紅衣主教的努力並未使羅馬教皇在日內瓦恢復分毫勢力。對加爾文的有力答辯他亦不再試作反駁了。

# 廿四、論聖餐

加爾文的《聖餐短論》是一五四〇年在施塔斯堡的時候以法文寫成的。這是他思考路德和慈運理二人以及追隨他們的人不能合作的主要理由而作的。在前一年加爾文遇著那位博學的,奧斯堡信條的擬具人墨蘭頓,對他非常推崇。一五四〇年墨蘭頓刊行該信條的另一版本,對有關聖餐一條有所修正。一五三〇年版本稱基督的身體及血真實臨在並賜給那些領受的人。一五四〇年的修正版則稱:「對那些領受的人基督的身體及血以餅與酒表現出來。」加爾文對這一條欣然接受;以後的路德派信條卻拒絕這一說法。一五四〇年加爾文希望復原教兩派之間能成立協調的觀點,這一本《聖餐短論》即他本人主張的簡單說明,當作兩派之間的一種妥協提出。加爾文對路德的景仰比對慈運理更大,但認爲他們兩人都是改教大師,都誠懇維護《聖經》的真理。這書的寫作即希望能化爭論爲一致,特別於最後幾段(自第五三至六十節),加爾文小心地論到這種不幸的爭論,並以愛心說明**路德派**及瑞士派雙方面的觀點,指出彼此未能了解以致逐漸疏遠。路德以嚴厲方法主張臨在之

說,而慈運理及厄科蘭巴丟則拒絕接受羅馬教會所主張的臨在於餅與酒之說,忽視了聖禮的真實相通性。加爾文看出了雙方面都缺乏耐心,但對他們在改教工作上的 貢獻表示感激及尊敬。兩派之間雖還沒有共同接受的信條,在基本上卻有相同的信仰:

「我們同聲承認,當我們在信裏面接受聖禮的時候……我們確分領耶穌基督的身體 及血。」

這本書並非學術或專門性質之作,但宗教成分頗重,書中側重信徒的信靠,上帝的至善,對基督的默想,以及屬靈恩賜的可寶貴。餅和酒不只是原來有形的餅和酒,它們是賜恩典的工作。它們非但代表,亦呈現基督的身體和血。分享餅和酒的事是一件不可領悟的屬靈奧秘。聖餐使我們不至於可恥地忘記了基督,並鼓勵我們彼此友愛,我們奉行聖餐必須有敬虔及準備之心,尤其須有愛心。加爾文從早期教會援引一個比喻說:「正如餅是從許多個粒混合製成的,同樣我們應團結在永不動搖的親睦中。」他在書中討論有關聖餐錯誤問題的那部分列舉理由,反對化質說,崇拜聖餅,每年只一度參加聖餐,不將杯分與平信徒和其他屬於羅馬教會的種種不合理製度。但這書的主要作用既非爭論,亦非分析的,而是屬於靈修與和平的。

# 廿五、論教會改革之必要

一五四二年至一五四四年,加爾文密切注意日耳曼內部的復雜糾紛。當時復原 派的諸侯不能團結。克裏維大公 (Duke of Cleves) ——一位復原教信徒——被皇帝 查理第五擊敗;而查理第五,一直到一五四四年九月爲止,和法蘭西斯一世處在交 戰狀態中,和教皇保羅第三之間亦有嚴重沖突,且時時恐懼土耳其人之襲擊。所以 他不得不對復原派教會的要求讓步。一五四四年二月帝國議會在斯拜爾舉行,開會 時間延長到半年之久。議會和路德派所作的妥協招致了教皇對皇帝政策的嚴重譴 責。當議會開會時加爾文「在所有願意基督統治的人名下」寫了一篇謙虛的勸諭文 章,呈獻給議會議員。該文題爲《教會改革之必要》 (The Necessity of Reformingt he Church) ,文中加爾文說當上帝興起路德的那時候,真的教理和真的崇拜正在被 普遍忽略。他更討論當時流行的邪惡和改教家的補救之道,並強調在日耳曼廣泛革 新之迫切需要。在論真崇拜那一部分,他以明確積極的議論爲根據,嚴厲攻擊改革 以前的崇拜情形。他說,崇拜應該以承認上帝爲「一切德行、公義、聖潔、智 慧、真理、權力、至善、仁慈、生命、和拯救的獨一源頭開始。」禱告、讚美、 謝恩、敬拜等,是崇拜中的部分,而儀式之事則處於附屬地位。我們在禮拜中高 **舉上帝,即所以謙卑自己,並學習順服他的旨意**。加爾文堅持凡上帝所沒有明白 命令的崇拜方式,都不是他所喜歡的。這是他用以檢舉錯誤崇拜方式的準則。

在這一篇論文中加爾文熱烈贊許路德的話是值得注意的。他說:「我們都還在 追求能與路德同一目標」,正在尋求教會的潔淨。他在文中一貫用「我們」兩字, 他希望他的主張能夠和路德派的主張聯系起來。當時路德還活著,他和加爾文同樣 希望促使日耳曼皇帝和羅馬教廷分離。但路德不會贊同加爾文對崇拜所下的狹窄定 義,他認爲凡沒有敗壞了的儀式都應該保留,而加爾文卻願廢除凡《聖經》所沒有 直接命令或例証過的儀式。在實行上這是一大差別。加爾文當然會知道日耳曼的路 德派在這件事上不能和他同意,可是他對路德派改教的主要原則備極推尊,這從他 所發表的許多言論中可以証明出來。

加爾文對一切弊端如彌撒及神甫製度等仍繼續暴露攻擊。在說明復原教對這些 弊端之糾正的那一部分,對此亦未忽略。加爾文說:「我們以比慣常所用更崇高的 辭語宣布上帝的榮耀。」在廢除迷信性的崇拜這件事上他認為不只眾先知,即眾教 父亦贊同他的意見。對於**禱告**問題,已見效果的糾正有三事:即貶損基督地位的 聖徒代禱製已被廢棄;人得以依靠信心親近上帝;信徒學習以所熟識的方言禱告。 對比較屬教義性的問題,加爾文極力為「**因信稱義**」的道理辯護:「我們之所以 能得稱義,在乎上帝因基督的緣故使我們與他復和,與我們的善工無關。由於白 白的恩賜我們不再作罪惡的兒女,而稱爲上帝的兒女。」

關於聖禮,都以人民所熟識的語言解釋及舉行。中世紀時代剝奪人民選舉教牧之權,依任命方式指派教牧的製度,今已代之以古代教會所采用的方法,即非有人民同意,上級不得委派教牧。宗教改革已解除了那破壞上帝榮耀以及保羅所衛護之良心自由的那種人爲律例的枷鎖。加爾文攻擊獨身的法律,和私下認罪的弊端。星期五日嘗一嘗內味也不該受比過一年歡淫生活更重要的懲罰!

有人指責改教領袖奪取教會財產以自肥,加爾文對這種指責並不完全否認,他 惋惜宗教改革在處理教會財產方面未能免於弊端;但認為並不如那些懶怠教士之濫 用教會基金及掠奪人民財產的情形那樣壞。

在這裏,如在《答沙杜裏多》一文中一樣,加爾文堅持復原派教會並非主張分裂者。可是許多世紀以來,羅馬教廷的腐敗已使基督聖名爲人嘲笑,怎能成爲眾教會之母?當路德還未脫離教廷的時候,他謙虛地要求教會的改革,終歸徒然。而改革的障礙即教廷自身。教皇在力所能及的時候,從不準許各教會聯合舉行會議。現在教會面臨完全破裂的危機,而教廷卻告訴我們等待一個實際上沒有實現希望的全體會議。讓日耳曼皇帝及諸侯在即將到來的帝國議會上以國家的改革方案來打破這僵局吧!「眼見基督的配偶遭受奸污,……哀求你們的保護,你們還要等多久呢?」加爾文強調危機的急迫:如果日耳曼的掌權者聽從那「不祥的話」,以爲改革可以從緩,那麼日耳曼教會的存在,甚至帝國的存在,就要成問題了。

# 廿六、加爾文學說摘要:上帝與人

耐心閱讀前面對加爾文作品所作分析的讀者們,也許希望能得到關於他的學說 重點的撮要說明。一個像加爾文這樣的作家,他的作品關切到人的生命的廣大范 圍;以後的讀者以及許多興趣不同的個人,當然會把重點放在某些不同的方面。可 是加爾文的思想既如是一貫,無論我們把重點放在那一方面,其他的也都與此有 關。

加爾文所欲描繪的宗教思想途徑非但在滿足一種對秩序系統的渴望,亦在乎作 爲人生的實際向導。加爾文的世界乃上帝所統治的國度。在他所有的作品中,充滿 著**對上帝的謙恭敬畏**。上帝的不可企及的尊嚴與不可究探的智慧之卓越性,表現 於他所造的天地,並普遍存在於人世事之間:在各事上公義,對罪人施仁慈;這一 切是加爾文心中所時刻向往的中心題材。對永生上帝的崇拜,在他思想中亦永不遺 忘。他之時刻感覺到上帝及其能力的同在,造成了他偉大高貴的人格。他的上帝在 自然中向理性顯示自己,並與我們的知識相符,在《聖經》上也顯示自己;但他的 顯示並不解除了他的神秘性,因爲我們的心智不能領悟他的無限存在。「如果我們 進入於他的偉大尊嚴之中,我們必站立不住。」我們應當滿足於對他的部分認識, 並信靠他的憐憫。關於上帝是什麼這一問題,我們不可作無恥的追究。但無論何 時,當我們講到他,可將加爾文所稱爲美德的一些關於他的屬性來形容他:「欲形 成對上帝的觀念,必須認識他的永恆,權力,智慧,至善,真理,公義,和憐 憫。<sub>「</sub>靈,統一,聖潔亦同被提起。這一切完美性格不是用來描寫上帝本身,乃是 說明上帝以此對待我們。加爾文引耶利米第九章第廿四節的話說:「卻因他有聰 明,認識我是耶和華,又知道我喜悅在世上施行慈愛公平和公義,以此誇口。」關 於上帝的完善,他覺得詩篇第一百四十五篇有很完全的敘述。至於那廣大的猜測境 界,加爾文不願進入,他認爲上帝的本體是要受敬拜,而不是要受杳究。我們無須 透視上帝的奧秘,我們應當榮耀他並領受他的救恩。一切把上帝當作奇異題目研究 的神學,加爾文都不贊同。對上帝的認識必須和深刻的虔敬,崇拜及順服互相關 連,這才是他所關切的問題。他在他所作問答書中說:「我們每人心中均須謹記上 帝愛他,願意作他的父,爲他完成拯救工作。只有當我們對上帝的呼召有所回應的 時候,我們才能認識他。我們當愛上帝。」「有了這一種熱烈的情緒,我們的思 想, 意念和我們所追求的一切, 就不至於與這愛相違背。」在羅馬人書第八章第廿 八節的釋義上他說:「敬愛上帝爲一切虔敬之總和。」

從公義聖潔的上帝這方面說,罪是不能容忍的;罪人已招惹了神的憤怒。人之得救乃上帝的憐憫超過了他的憤怒。這憐憫是我們所不配受的。上帝以他的不可測知的意志,揀選了某些人,作爲他施賜恩典憐憫的對像,並使他們在永生中享有上帝;另一些人則被遺棄於他的救恩之外,永遠與他隔離,承受他們罪的後果。這就是加爾文對地獄的觀念;「沒有比不能與上帝同在更悲慘的事了。」上帝的這種可怕責罰不是我們所當追問的。上帝的意志本身就足以自証:「因他定意如此,他所定意的是對。」許多人批評這是對上帝的一種不合倫理的觀念。但加爾文並不是說上帝有權作不公平的事。在他心目中,上帝乃完全公平,完全正直。只是他的命令是在乎我們理解的范圍之外;我們的理解力已因罪而受損傷敗壞。我們應當謹慎,切莫以我們的判斷加於上帝,卻須「尊重他的意旨乃他一切作爲之最公正原因」(見《基督教要義》第一卷第十七章第一節)。

由於神恩的拯救,我們的墮落性質已得糾正治愈。甚至我們天性上的美德——那些屬於今世而對拯救沒有價值的——亦須歸功於恩典。這種「普遍恩典」具有雙重意義:其一爲從內心限製我們的墮落性質;另一乃始組犯罪以前人所有的善性之剩餘部分。但恩典之救治人性,克服邪惡意念,促使靈魂順服,並堅立於至善裏面

等工作,只施於那些蒙選召的人。上帝本身,在作爲這救恩的啓示者及中保的聖子基督的位格上,乃是我們的拯救者。依照加爾文的解釋,**基督論即神論**之擴張。 只有上帝能拯救我們,基督之所以爲救主,乃因他是上帝,雖然爲著人的拯救,他在某一時間內化身爲人(上帝受苦難說)。瑟維特的學說及他在臨終時的禱告——稱基督爲「永生上帝的兒子」,在加爾文眼中看來等於基督教的叛徒;因爲人得救所需要的乃「上帝的永生兒子。」

# 廿七、論《聖經》:新舊兩約的比較

加爾文對自己思想上的某些中心問題,能夠以一種生動活潑的筆調,反複申述,仍使人有新鮮之感。這種成就的部分原因在於**他的卓越的文字天才**,這些天才更受日漸加深的領悟,和一種不知有懷疑或猶豫的信心(至少在最高層的神學上)所不斷激動。對《聖經》的豐富知識是他的最大寶庫,這種知識不僅限於文詞方面,亦有極深的理解。他承認他容許自己的思想受《聖經》的管束,這話是可信的。其他的許多作家亦有同樣的話,但從他們的作品中很難找到比加爾文作品更能証實這話的。

自從加爾文的時代以來,我們對於《聖經》各書的由來,和它們當初的目的等已知道很多。對於這一類學問加爾文必將采取謹慎而有批評性的贊同態度。如果他活在今天,對許多問題必將有不同的見解。他之重視《聖經》的宗教意義使他對《聖經》的許多解釋不至於爲近代《聖經》學者所製造出來的酸質所侵蝕。加爾文很重視舊約;他非但喜歡引用舊約中的虔敬語句,亦同樣引用那些嚴酷或原始性的事例來作爲辯論的佐証;但並不像一班指責他的人所說的那樣漫無限製。他往往能從舊約中那些似乎毫無意義的記載中找出新約的意義。但是他對詩篇和先知書那些優美章句的宗教價值有永不錯誤的感覺。再者,正如富爾漫 (PaulT.Fuhrmann) 所指出的,「和攻擊他的一般偏見剛好相反,加爾文主張上帝的啓示是漸進的。」在這裏我們要征引不常爲人注意的一段話:

「如果我們討論到後期的先知,我們的討論將比較容易。假定我們不難從大衛、約伯、及撒母耳等人的話來証明我們的觀點,我們從後期的先知們將得到更大的方便。因爲這是上帝在施賜他的仁慈之約所定下的次序,時間愈迫近那完全顯現的時期,他的啓示亦逐漸增加。所以最初上帝對亞當的應許恰像一簇微弱的火花,以後應許的逐漸加添使這火花愈增光輝,以至於普照四方,到了最後,所有的黑雲都消散了,基督——公義的太陽——照耀於全世界。」(見《基督教要義》第二卷第十章第廿節)。

加爾文常常假定「新約較舊約優越」之說,雖然在經文應用方面並不完全如此。希伯來人是在一種適合於他們的方法之下接受教導,並從以後充分表現在基督身上的預表接受真理。從舊約到新約是從束縛之約走到了解放之約,從以色列人的拯救到了萬民中上帝所揀選者的拯救(見《基督教要義》第三卷第十一章)。可是在新舊兩約中,我們所得到的是關於同一位上帝的啓示。

《聖經》指示得救的應許;信心所依靠的乃在這應許上面,非在於對責罰的恐懼,而福音所傳乃特別有關「信主的道」(羅 10:8)。「信心若不依靠上帝的憐憫就不能穩固。」因此作爲《聖經》的中心題目的乃是憐憫,而非忿怒。上帝的憐憫往往以上帝公正的忿怒爲背景。**信心之生起乃當《聖經》爲聖靈所光照;**沒有聖靈的幫助,我們無法分辨出上帝的話的訊息。聖靈增加那些爲《聖經》所啓發者的信心,帶領他們一直向天國的路上走。這樣,非但古代的啓示有一種漸進的澄清;而且每個基督徒的歷史,表現了逐漸成熟的虔敬,以及心靈上宗教的逐漸進步(見《基督教要義》第三卷第二章)。信並不只是一種承認,如同一班錯誤的教師們所說的;信是像路德所一再申述的一種生動及富有效果的經驗,往往生出盡心服務他人及服務上帝國的生活。信的結果必然是聖靈所賜的重生;因此「信乃產生一切善工的根源」(見《問答》)。

# 廿八、基督徒的生活與規律

基督徒非但因信及對上帝的認識而有喜樂生活,他們的肩膀上亦有重大的責任。在大神學家當中,再也沒有一位比加爾文對現世事務更爲注意,且更重視基督徒的責任的。他要求我們的生活能像那些委身事主的人一般。我們並不屬於自己,乃是屬於上帝。我們應以放棄自我來順服上帝。加爾文強調以謙卑及放棄自高自愛作爲基督徒行爲的準則。愛的生活之基本動力是愛上帝。但同時我們有愛鄰舍的責任。「我們所享有的福音乃上帝所付托的」,必須「和我們的鄰舍分享」。聖保羅所說基督徒乃同一身體的肢體,這話的含義亦指完全放棄對一切神恩的自私,並在愛的律法之下幫助我們的憐舍。加爾文願意我們放棄私自擁有財產的思想,然而亦不願意我們拒絕物質的恩賜。上帝之創造花卉、植物以及貴重金屬,非但各具有效用,它們的美麗亦足供欣賞,這當中有上帝對人的目的在。我們應當爲著造物主創造它們的目的來利用它們,這樣我們才能夠不辜負所受的付托。

根據這一種精神加爾文製訂了日內瓦法規 (Geneva Discipline)。這法規鼓勵重視日常生活上的宗教意義。加爾文用了《聖經》上「蒙召」這兩字來表明職分的重要;我們應當把我們的職分當作上帝分派給我們的工作,以勤勞忍耐之心擔受。加爾文承認若能榮耀上帝,職分可以變換,但他譴責「散漫輕浮」的作風 (見《哥林多前書釋義》第七章第廿節;《基督教要義》第三卷第十章第六節)。我們所負的十架較之我們的主所負的輕多了,而我們經歷一切苦難,都應追隨主的榜樣。這種把職業當作「爲榮耀上帝而服務人群」的觀念,可減輕我們生命上的重負。「如果我們知道我們的一切憂慮、辛勞、煩悶以及其他重擔都是在他的支配之下,我們將得到多麼大的慰藉。」

從所表現的某些方面判斷,歷史上的「加爾文模範社會」是既重法又嚴酷。在加爾文的工作中亦可看出這種性質,《日內瓦法規》所規定的那些瑣細專製的條例,早已爲許多讀者所熟識。明達的人在那些清教徒的神治政體之中,往往非但發現許多不愉快的瑣細條例,亦發現那用嚴酷方法來促成的一種積極的觀念。可是對於加爾文,他們往往從純神學的觀點來解釋他的立場。只是他們沒有注意到,加爾

文因有了深刻的社會感覺而修正他的預定論。在一個充滿不受約束的罪人的社會中,聖徒相通的事難望興盛。沒有一個道德家或心理學家,比他更明白環境決定道德習慣及社會行為的重要性。從一個敗壞的環境中,究能產生那一種配得進入於聖徒相通之中的好人?我們的整個環境應造成為有利於基督徒德性的發展,並須能夠反映及扶植聖徒的相通。教會「非但要成為崇拜上帝的組織,亦須培養人格,使適宜於崇拜他。」這種製度的活力在乎深刻的宗教信仰和對上帝旨意的順服。無疑的,後代往往有一種抄襲「加爾文模範社會」之外型,忽視此種社會之宗教動力的趨勢,而加爾文式的訓練有時淪於徒具形式而已,這種情形使我們只看到加爾文主義的屍體。除非人把那規範他們行為的法律當作達到某種人生大目標的工具,還是某種有價值的「社會約束」,他們必將視法律為暴虐及不可容忍的。加爾文在日內瓦所推行的社會理想,畢竟得到當地人民的誠懇接受,雖然他所用的方法並非完全值得贊揚。

加爾文的模範社會的模型供給現代社會學家一些最有價值的參考。關於如何維持那以聖餐禮爲標志及約事之團契——即基督徒相通的印記——的純潔,基本上是加爾文思想的產物(在某種限度內曾受他早期在施塔斯堡的同事布塞珥的影響)。這一種原來爲維護教會之純潔的訓練,終於成爲強製執行於一般社會的標準。復原派所注意的「相通」,因此在近代史上促進了一種極爲重要的社會傳統。

# 廿九、教會的大公性

關於教會問題加爾文所主張的要點詳見《基督教要義》第四卷及其他短篇。但 我們須特別注意,對這問題不只他的思想,而且他的政策,以及他所努力的,都集 中於促進教會的大公性。他所說的「教會」往往指有形的大公教會,但亦指出它和 上帝的無形教會的關系——有形教會即無形教會在世上的表現。他關心各地教會的 情形,認爲改革以前的教會非但腐敗,且亦分裂。在討論天特會議的一篇短文中 (一五四七年) 他說:

「教會既然分散於各地……那整體的教會究將如何,我們只能付托在主手中。可是**我們不可怠惰疏忽,須盡我們的能力,貢獻我們所有的聰明才智和精力**,把 破碎的教會建立起來。」

加爾文繼路德之後鼓吹以教會會議來進行改革工作。他對於召集一個自由、普世、有真實代表性的會議不敢存大希望,但亦非完全絕望。一五六〇年他發表聲明,提出這種會議所必需的條件。同時不斷鼓吹盡地理上的可能多舉行聯合會議,類似古代教會所舉行的省級議會。法國,荷蘭,蘇格蘭等教會能夠有此等議會的組織,大半是受加爾文影響。在這些教會裏,各項議案均由選舉的代表機關決定,而平信徒和教牧同樣的有選舉權。一般說來,這些教會都恐懼國家干預他們舉行自由立法會議之權,時存戒備。約翰諾克斯對彌特蘭 (Maitland) 關於此事的批評曾熱烈答辯說:「剝奪了我們聚會的自由,即等於剝奪了我們的福音。」當時各改革宗教會,至少在本國領土范圍之內,對於維護議會的原則所作的奮斗,多少能達到目

的。一六四七年在威斯敏斯德舉行的議會宣稱:「合法的教會議會有省級的,全國性的,和普世議會。」由各單位代表爲基礎的普世組織,迄今仍未實現。可是普世教會運動在目前世界性會議的影響之下,又顯示了新的希望。

加爾文對付原教的統一寄與極誠懇的希望,而對故意造成的分裂極表痛恨。在他的《哥林多前書釋義》第一章第二節及第三章第十一節,他提起教會中的分裂是「極端可怕的」。他認爲**只有完全順從上帝的話,教會才能夠獲得統一的基礎**;但他並不堅持外表形式的一致。一五五五年在他寫給逃亡於法蘭克富的英國人信中,他說:「對於那些無關緊要的事,如**形式儀禮**等,我的態度是**遷就和順應的**。」又在《哥林多前書釋義》第十二章第四節說:「**教會的和諧在乎多方面的一致**,」如同交響樂一般。這是一種和諧地聯合在一起的統一,不是依權力強製的一致。

據我們所看到的,復原教的開始並非一種完整統一的運動。統一它的各派的工 作對十六世紀的領袖們是太大的任務,而且以後復原教會在各地的繁盛擴展,益發 增加統一工作的困難。但加爾文對這任務仍抱希望。在《答沙杜裏多》(一五三九 年) 篇中,他借那位牧師見証的話說:「爲著教會的統一,我的熱情在心中燃燒 著」,這話無異是他的自傳。他主張舉行教會會議,好使瑞士各教會能有更密切的 合作及團契。結果是一五四九年的區利赫合一信 (Consensus of Zurich) ,由加爾文 及布靈爾聯名發表有關聖餐問題的聲明。同時,加爾文不斷地尋求和路德派合作的 途徑,並希望以這合一信條作爲合作的基礎。許多路德派的人亦同具此種希望;但 其中一部分頑固分子因受維斯特法勒 (Joachim Westphal) 及其他作家的煽動,終於 破壞了團結的目標。加爾文在一五五四年說,如果路德當時還活著,「他一定不至 於那麼苛刻和難以相處。」加爾文對英國的改教運動亦經常聯系。爲應克蘭麥 (Cranrner) 之要求,他在一五五二年寫信給大主教,說他「願意遠渡重洋,爲促進 教會的團結奔走。」以後幾年,在伯撒的積極襄助之下,他曾多次和日耳曼神學家 聯絡。他的這些努力終歸失敗,這失敗的部分原因或者在於布靈爾及其他德語區瑞 十教會之不願意和路德派會商。一五八一年日內瓦的一位牧師撒爾佛 (J. F. Salvard) 和伯撒合作,發表正統教會和改革教會信條合參 (Harmony of the Confessions of Orthodoxand Reformed Churches),其序文得到法國及荷蘭教會之認可,要求一切 基督的教會通過一個大會,實行聯合。

# 三十、教會,社會及國家

在加爾文看來,教會爲信徒之母,被選召者的褓母及督導人。它非但是聖徒的團契,上帝改變社會的工具,同時是一種教育的和社會的機關。教會亦常被稱爲上帝的國(或基督的國度),這國度,加爾文認爲是在和撒但的國度作殊死戰、對之作猛烈襲擊。因此須擴展基督的權柄,使他成爲全社會的元首。國家應該爲上帝的國服役,而非僅僅爲屬世權力。加爾文對重洗派所持的觀念——將屬靈生活和屬世生活完全隔開,對一般社會不負責任,對政治不合作——極表憤慨,認爲這等於是失敗主義。他敦促並指引世界各國的掌權者要爲基督統治的神聖使命努力,服從上

帝的話。加爾文並未想像到近代科學所產生的交通工具已強製國與國之間發生頻繁的來往;可是他把整個世界當作上帝活動的場所,各國都處在上帝的旨意及基督的公正管轄之下。因此這世界乃「一個世界」;從他的通訊中可以看出他強烈地感覺到教會和國家在精神聯系及相通方面,必須有一種表明基督國度的共同約束。雖然他把教會和國家的性質及功能分別得很清楚,但認爲在不同的方法上,都是爲著共同的目的。再者,我們服從政府,應視之爲天意之所定。正如他譴責教會分裂,他亦不贊成反叛。一般說來,這是反抗上帝。可是這種對政府的順服亦有限度,正如中國人所說的,政府若殘暴不仁,逆了天命,人民就有反抗的權利。總之,在政治上**加爾文並不是一個革命家**。可是他始終熱烈和堅定地主張一種遲緩的,完美的基督教革命,由於這種革命「世上的國,成了我主和主基督的國」(啓 11:5)。

# 卅一、平信徒的責任

教會和社會都需要平信徒的服務。日內瓦的長老們曾擔任重要的職務,在改革宗教會中平信徒對教會的貢獻多半是通過「長老」這一機構。長老們的職務既如此繁重,責任又如此尊嚴,人們有時以爲他們是牧師的一種。其實在改教時期他們只是平信徒中之比較成熟,熱誠,和有才幹的人,但他們代表平信徒的虔敬精神。許多作家都認爲特別重視平信徒的責任這一點乃加爾文主義的重要主張之一,尤其是關於爲著教會的益處而施行的訓導方面。可是這裏有兩件事我們應加注意,否則我們將不免過分地誇張加爾文在這方面的貢獻。第一,在加爾文以前類似的主張早已有了。好些十四世紀的議會主義者曾堅決主張平信徒有權選派代表參加教會會議。重洗派和瓦勒度派亦強調平信徒宗教。在加爾文以前復原派對教政的計劃,好像一五二六年蘭伯爾特 (Francois Lambert) 代表黑森侯爵 (Margravate of Hesse) 出席何墨堡會議 (Synod of Homburg),即給予平信徒代表權的表示。有一些近代作家認爲布塞珥在施塔斯堡的改教計劃對加爾文影響很大。

另外一點,加爾文主義的傳播,在那些已經有了代議製政府的國家中,比較成功。這些國家的市政省政等已經給予有才幹的人很多活動機會。然而無論如何,加爾文對於平信徒之積極參加教會事務,確曾給予很大的推動力。爲著証明這一點,我們不妨拿法國加爾文派教會的法規作爲例証:在教會法庭(Consistory)的組織上,牧師和長老共同負責維持地方教會的秩序及訓導,並依投票方式決定重要事件。由各教會代表所組成的議會(Colloquy)每一教會必須有長老一人參加。在省級議會(Provincial Synod),每一牧師須有一名,或最多兩名由各個別教會法庭選出的長老,伴同前往,而他們和牧師有同等的選舉權。教會的最高機關爲全國議會(National Synod),由每一省級議會推選牧師及長老各二人組成之。總之,整個教會機構的設計在乎使平信徒和教牧有同等權力,是一種長老製的議會主義。

幾乎有同樣重要意義的是加爾文之規定執事的職能,並在日內瓦及各改革宗教 會盡量利用他們工作。一五四一年頒布的《聖會律例》有一篇序言,說明該律例目 的,其中有「濟助貧民的慈惠院」一語,這種救濟貧病孤寡的工作即指定了由執事 擔任。中世紀教會的慈善工作著重於施舍,但不如加爾文派在日內瓦所作的那麼有 系統。早期的路德主義認爲積極的救濟工作並不屬於教會的活動范圍之內。執事爲教會的次要職員,他們的產生程序和長老的產生相同。執事必須有良好的行政才能,並能爲貧苦的人請命。重要政策均由執事會議自行決定。他們計劃終止行乞行爲及消除貧窮現像,指定醫生負責慈惠工作,並特別注意患病貧民。他們對公眾的服務工作大部分得到市政當局的支持。十七世紀改革宗教會的慈善事業在執事的指導下極爲活躍,尤其是在荷蘭,各種性質不同的救濟機關紛紛成立。

在上述情形下平信徒的各種活動和整個社會發生了密切關系。對職業的觀念亦是如此。加爾文對職業問題的訓誨側重於鼓吹責任感。也就是在這種道德范圍之內他勉強地容許貸款取息的辦法。有人根據亞裏斯多德的學說及《聖經》譴責貸款取息的辦法;可是當加爾文時代,因新興商業的發展,這種辦法極爲普遍。加爾文認爲貸款取息與收取房屋稅金爲同一性質,但他堅持限製超額利息。若借貸者爲貧民,即使貸款人根據日內瓦條例所規定的百分之五取息,加爾文亦不贊成,因利息之處理須不違背基督教的愛及公平的原則。若說加爾文在這方面的教訓曾影響到資本主義的發展,那麼這種影響,與其說是因爲加爾文對利息製度之不加譴責,勿寧說是他對勤奮儉樸等美好德性的贊許,以及對一切浪費時間,精力,財富等事的攻擊。加爾文派平信徒的典型生活形態乃在於對上帝國有貢獻的職業上能夠有高度的效率。

一般平信徒的職業沒有比充任行政官吏更尊貴的。處在那政治情況紛亂,極端需要對政府問題有明確理論的時代,這位復原派神學家能夠根據自然律及神權,對政治采取積極的態度,實具重要意義。這種對政治的積極立場和下列兩種主張成為極明顯對照,其一爲當時重洗派之主張基督徒應當完全擺脫政治生活,其二爲羅馬天主教之要求在政治上的特權。加爾文主義的目的在發展上一般具有政治意識的平信徒,訓練他們,使他們知道在政治上的責任,並能夠以承認基督爲元首及以榮耀上帝來作爲判斷執政者及其行爲的標準。執政的人雖受尊敬,但他們仍須在這一觀點之下接受一般基督徒的批評,因爲他們的職責在乎爲全體謀求福利。正如伯撒所說的:「人民並非爲官吏而生,官吏乃爲人民而生。」在後期的西洋史上,例如在荷蘭、蘇格蘭、英國、和美國史上,加爾文著作中的這些雛型觀念對於建立以後的民主政府占有相當重要地位,較之當時加爾文所預期的更大。

# 卅二、教育:日內瓦書院

一個典型的加爾文派平信徒非但是熱誠的信徒,同時是受良好訓練,爲著基督的國度,隨時能夠在社會或政治事上貢獻力量的基督徒。日內瓦的教育製度即所以配合這種理想。一五五九年日內瓦書院 (Academy of Geneva) 成立。這書院 (在某限度上模仿斯圖麥約翰 John Sturm 在施塔斯堡所創辦的學校) 提供符合於文藝復興概念的高等教育。教學方面以古典著作爲基礎,有哲學及倫理學,數學,物理學,辯論學,詩文及歷史等。神學及《聖經》亦屬重要課程。兒童均入預備學校,作爲以後研究高深學問的準備,此種學校分爲七級。多數時間學習歌詠及聖樂。每逢星期三及星期六有三小時的娛樂,此外有復習及辯論課。學生在幼年時即授以拉丁文及

希臘文,到了較高年級即選讀古典作品。在十二至十五歲這一段都熟讀各名家,如俄維丟 (Ovid),西色柔,威吉流 (Virgilius),謝挪芬 (Xenophon),荷馬,及德摩西尼 (Demosthenes) 等的作品,希臘文新約《聖經》亦在教授之列。學生能將長篇法文作品譯成拉丁文。當時有一句話說:「日內瓦兒童的談吐有如所爾波恩的博士。」

品格養成爲這一書院的主要目標。學生上課均依學力編爲小組,每組十人,無社會階級或年齡之分。因此,師生間關系頗爲密切。教師施教均須著重於「愛上帝及恨罪惡」的道理,鼓勵敏捷、整齊和絕對誠實的德性。特別聰穎的學生可縮短學程,無需按步升級。現代教育家不以古典文學用爲教育的基本材料;可是加爾文是活在科學及方言文學發達的時代以前。他重視他年青時代對人文學科所下的功夫,認爲嚴格的書院訓練可以產生有才智,有服務能力,及道德堅定,宗教信仰健全的人材。

加爾文對歐洲文化的影響多半自這一書院發出。通過了這一教育機關,他力求統一健全的學問和純正的宗教。加爾文主義所到的地方,對教育事業都有同樣的努力。吉斐斯 (Olive Griffiths) 曾寫過一部書 (暈書的最適當名稱爲《宗教與學術》Religionand Learning) 檢討加爾文派在英國的學術工作。加爾文委實有一些貴族知識階級的氣質,他對於思想上的懶惰和對宗教上的錯誤,同樣不能忍受。一些加爾文派的人極度贊揚加爾文在教育方面對世界的貢獻;平心而論,這方面他所遺留給世界的的確極重要、極有價值。在無數學校中,宗教及道德熱情培養著好學的精神;學者在一種基督教的信仰及行動的氣氛中研究世界文學及歷史。正如綽意詩(Eugene Choisy) 所說的,「加爾文是一個有才智的人,但不是一個唯智論者。」他尊重人的思想,但人的思想必須處在那「人生的最大目標——認識創造人類的上帝」的訓練之下。在加爾文看來這知識包括在對上帝憐憫的感激當中奉獻自己的心思意志,爲著他的永恆國度努力。

# 卅三、科學,藝術,音樂

加爾文對社會問題一向是積極的,他不能忍受一種逃避社會責任的宗教。他不叫人遁世,相反地,他指示一種生活於現世社會的適當方法,這方法包括著和上帝國一致的一種社會改造運動。他對現社會的理想牽涉到一切人類活動的部門。他贊揚一切藝術及真的科學,認爲它們對幫助人認識上帝及指導人生都有貢獻(見《林前釋義》第八章第三節)。在純科學部門他沒有什麼貢獻。現代科學在他那時代還是幻弱的嬰孩,他並沒有看出它將來的發展。白拉赫(Brahe)、吉勒伯(Gilbert)、克普勒(Kepler)和伽利略(Galileo)諸人的工作尚未出現。加爾文對哥白尼(Copernicus)並不欣賞,這不過說明他和當代學者,連同許多科學家在內都有同樣態度。

加爾文對創造的觀念的主要根據是從《聖經》得到的,而他對自然界的觀點純粹是宗教性的,可是他全力贊同科學研究者對自然界的研究工作。這種工作不在他

的范圍之內,在科學知識方面他亦不曾把自己當作權威。他攻擊那僞科學的占星 學,是因爲它違背基督教對上帝權威及權力的觀念,而不是爲要使真科學擺脫僞科 學的纏絆。凡具有才智,能夠發展我們對宇宙的知識者,加爾文都願意鼓勵他們, 祝福他們,因爲他們是在幫助我們更能看出上帝的智慧及榮耀。下面討論關於上帝 的創造作爲的一段話,可以表明他的態度。摩西告訴我們穹蒼的大小兩種光,似乎 是指月球的體積在天體中是次大的。可是加爾文說:「天文學家根據可靠理由,已 証明土星,因距離長遠顯示得體積最小,實際上卻比月球大。差別就在這裏:摩西 以最淺顯的方法說明事物,普通人但憑常識,即能了解;但天文學家悉心研究一切 人類的聰敏心智所能領悟的事物。這類的研究,無論如何不可非難,科學亦不容排 斥……因爲天文學非但是有趣,而且是有用的學問;它顯示了上帝的令人敬服的智 慧,這是無可懷疑的。因此聰明才智者用在這方面的精上帝是值得欽佩的;凡有時 間及能力的人,對此亦不應忽視。摩西亦非真的要我們放棄在這方面的追求……, 只是他被立作爲博學的人的導師,亦作爲愚庸不學的人的導師,他若非應用通俗的 方法施教,必無法履行任務……天文學家若研究星辰的準確體積,必發見月球比土 星為小;但這種發展比較是屬於抽像的,因為我們眼睛所看到的並不如此……讓天 文學家們保持他們的更準確的知識吧。同時,那些在夜間欣賞美麗月華的人,若非 承認這是出乎上帝的恩典,必被責以剛愎忘恩之罪。」(見《創世記釋義》第一章 第十六節)。

當加文爾時代,實驗科學在初等及中等教育的課程上還沒有固定地位,加爾文亦不曾把它放在那地位上。可是他尊重「探求真理的慾望」,認為這種精神乃人類墮落以後仍然「繼續發光的火花」之一。他的「研究自由」的原則,和他主張學者探求事實有不受限製之權,都表示出他尊重科學精神的態度。那位和他同時代而比他年輕的隨從者宰恩齊 (Girolamo Zanchi) 的宇宙觀頗受重視,甚至有人稱宰恩齊為伽利略的先驅者。

有人批評加爾文爲「厭惡藝術」的人,這種批評完全是不公道的。加爾文是愛美的人;我們不難從他的著作中搜集許多歌頌自然美的句段,正如從任何和他同時代的著名作家作品中所能搜集到的一樣多。這類句段許多是充滿著高尚精神的。他從未曾排斥純藝術,但他反對把藝術應用於迷信及偶像方面。他說:「因爲知道雕刻和繪畫是上帝的恩賜,我要求對它們有純潔合理的應用。」但同時他亦不容許以它們代表那看不見和聖潔的神,「以免上帝的尊嚴爲錯誤的幻想所歪曲。」(見《基督教要義》第一卷第十一章第十二節)。要求從道德上和宗教上來解釋藝術的效用並不等於是厭惡藝術。他堅決主張「一切藝術出自上帝,應該當作是上帝的創作。」(《出埃及記釋義》第三十一章第二節)。這種原則絕對不是消極的,其用意在乎避免在崇拜中應用藝術品,因爲加爾文認爲這非但是濫用藝術,且亦敗壞崇拜。正如許多在他以前的基督徒的道德家,他亦反對教堂中應用樂器,但不反對普通社會之有樂器音樂,他認爲音樂具有一種神秘和幾乎難以置信的感人力量,是上帝爲著世人的娛樂而賜給世人的高尚禮物之一(見《基督教要義》第三卷第廿章第卅一至卅三節)。在《創世記釋義》第四章第二十節他說:豎琴和其他樂器,不能因爲是屬於娛樂性質,而把它們當作是多餘的。只要不用於公共崇拜,用於普通娛

樂是合宜的。加爾文之拒絕那可能有助於崇拜的樂器一事實屬錯誤。只是在另一方面,在他的鼓勵之下,波喬 (Bourgeois),古地米 (Goudimel),和其他優秀作曲家所產生的日內瓦聖歌,對聖樂方面的貢獻極大。加爾文以詩篇歌詠作爲全體會眾高尚崇拜的方法,並以之奮與基督徒家庭。垂十六年之久,波喬協助加爾文訓練日內瓦青年「以心靈及感悟」歌唱。加爾文曾以音樂上的「交響樂」作爲對教會的比喻之一,在某次証道時他以「許多哥喉合唱」的旋律勸勉基督徒的契結。由於他喜從古典文學中征引詩句,在日內瓦書院編排的課程,以及他本人的創作(其中最有名的一首乃「向耶穌基督頂禮」(Salutationto Jesus Christ)),足証他對詩的濃厚興趣。

宗教與神學問題在加爾文心中始終占最重要地位,他的時間精力大部分都用在這方面;對其他部門的貢獻比較不多,且多半是間接的。可是他鼓勵歌唱的貢獻是富有意義的。他曾說:「我們從經驗得知,歌唱之振奮人心,使人以更熱烈迫切的心情禱告贊美上帝,其力量是偉大的……」某些人慣於把加爾文性格描繪爲無情,冷酷和嚴格。他們忽視了加爾文性格上的重心和主要成分。其實在他的嚴格和聰慧的性格中有一個純粹的屬情感的核心,就是響應上帝之拯救的情感。他的印記上所用的圖案是一顆燃著的心,握在一只伸出的手中,加上了一句格言——靈敏誠懇地爲主工作——這實在並非徒然。加爾文過世以後,在他後期生活和他接觸最密的朋友伯撒說了下面的幾句話:「正如太陽沉下去時……那在世界上引導上帝教會的最偉大明燈已給取回天上去了!」

加爾文的事工和他的著作已給了復原派一個穩固的地位,並使它成爲近世的一大動力。爲著要在紛亂的世代復興上帝的教會,導引人心,使能在上帝尊嚴之前悔悟敬拜,在各事上完全順服他的旨意,他以不屈不撓的熱情,把他的全部精力心血都貢獻了出來。

加爾文的主要影響不在乎他在神學上或在教會組織上法規上創造了某種製度,而在於他能從智力上和感情上去把握基督教的信仰。許多批評他的邏輯過於嚴謹的人對他的宗教透識卻極喜愛。他的敵人和他的學生當中,很少有人能夠把他的偉大衡量出來的。他曾成爲偏見及固執者的攻擊目標。他的著作在宗教史上已充分証明了他是一位宗教天才,如巴文克 (Herman Bavinck) 所說的:「他看整個生命都受了上帝榮耀的光照。」

# ccn-tv.com 加爾文基督教要義卷 1-3

# 加爾文,《基督教要義》選錄:卷一

真智慧就是:認識上帝,認識自己 TRUE WISDOM: KNOWLEDGE OF GOD, KNOWLEDGE OF OURSELVES

**Institutes 1.1.1-3** 

卷一第一章:對上帝的認識,和對自己的認識是相關的。

Chapter 1 – The Knowledge of God and that of Ourselves are Connected.

1.1.1. 沒有對自己的認識,就沒有對上帝的認識。

Without knowledge of self there is no knowledge of God

# 認識上帝與認識我們自己之間的關係

(修譯:)我們所擁有的**真的智慧**,意思是,真正、確實的智慧,包括兩部份:**對上帝的認識與對我們自己的認識。**但是,因為兩者之間有著很密切的關係,究竟誰先誰後,就不容易判斷了。首先,沒有一個人能觀察自己,而不馬上就把思念轉向上帝,因為人是在上帝裹「生活和動作」的(徒 17: 28)。因為,非常明顯地,我們所有的各樣偉大恩賜和才幹,都不是靠自己而有的;誠然,我們的存有本身就是靠獨一上帝(在祂裏面)的生存。因此,我們被這些從天上而來的恩賜沐浴,如露水一樣,它們像溪水帶領我們到泉源那裏。是的,我們的貧乏本身更能顯明在上帝那裏的無限好處(福份)。我們因始祖的背叛而陷入的可悲敗壞,這種敗壞特別催逼我們向上仰視。因此,我們不僅如饑饉者追求飲食,而且因被恐懼激發而去學習謙卑。因為人類既然面對諸般的愁苦,我們上帝聖的衣裳玷污了,我們羞恥,赤身露體,暴露出各樣的殘缺。

每人因深深被自己的不快樂所刺透了,而得着激發我們對上帝起碼的認識。我們因 感到自己的無知,虚妄,貧乏,軟弱,更感覺到自己的墮落與敗壞,於是引發我們 去認識上帝,於是我們承認,祇有在主裏才有真正智慧的亮光,堅實的美德,完 整、豐富的各樣美善,與無疵純潔的公義。這樣,我們自己的不完全,催逼我們思念上帝的完全。我們若不開始對自己不滿,不會認真地追求上帝。因為有誰不願意維持自己的現狀呢?當人不明瞭自己真正的處境,而以自己的天賦為滿足,忘記或茫然不知自己的不幸之時,有誰不願意自滿自得呢?所以,自我認識不僅激勵人尋求上帝,更好像拖住我們的手一樣,領我們找到上帝。

徒 17: 28

<sup>28</sup> 我們生活、動作、存留,都在乎他。就如你們作詩的,有人說:我們也是他所生的。

Nearly all the wisdom we possess, that is to say, true and sound wisdom, consists of two parts: the knowledge of God and of ourselves. But, while joined by many bonds, which one precedes and brings forth the other is not easy to discern. In the first place, no one can look upon himself without immediately turning his thoughts to the contemplation of God, in whom he "lives and moves" [Acts 17:28]. For, quite clearly, the mighty gifts with which we are endowed are hardly from ourselves; indeed, our very being is nothing but subsistence in the one God. Then, by these benefits shed like dew from heaven upon us, we are led as by rivulets to the spring itself. Indeed, our very poverty better discloses the infinitude of benefits reposing in God. The miserable ruin, into which the rebellion of the first man cast us, especially compels us to look upward. Thus, not only will we, in fasting and hungering, seek thence what we lack; but, in being aroused by fear, we shall *learn humility*. For, as a veritable world of miseries is to be found in mankind, and we are thereby despoiled of divine raiment, our shameful nakedness exposes a teeming horde of infamies. Each of us must, then, be so stung by the consciousness of his own unhappiness as to attain at least some knowledge of God. Thus, from the feeling of our own ignorance, vanity, poverty, infirmity, and – what is more - depravity and corruption, we recognize that the true light of wisdom, sound virtue, full abundance of every good, and purity of righteousness rest in the Lord alone. To this extent we are prompted by our own ills to contemplate the good things of God; and we cannot seriously aspire to him before we begin to be come displeased with ourselves. For what man in all the world would not gladly remain as he is – what man does not remain as he is – so long as he does not know himself, that is, while content with his own gifts, and either ignorant or unmindful of his own misery? Accordingly, the knowledge of ourselves not only arouses us to seek God, but also, as it were, leads us by the hand to find him.

Acts 17:28

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>28</sup> 'For in him we live and move and have our being.' As some of your own poets have said, 'We are his offspring.'

# 1.1.2 沒有對上帝的認識,就沒有對自己的認識

# Without knowledge of God there is no knowledge of self

(中譯: )另一方面,人若不先想念上帝的性格,繼而觀察自己,即得不著 真正的自我認識,這是很明顯的。我們因與生俱來的驕傲,總以為自己是公正,無 辜, 聖潔, 和聰明的; 除非我們因證據確鑿而深知自己的不義, 邪惡, 愚蠢, 和卑 污的話,我們若祇注意自己而不也注意主,就不能有這種判斷,因為惟有上帝是這 種判斷的準繩。我們既然生性慣於假冒為善, 所以虚有義的外表而無其實, 便足以 使我們滿足。當我們所想的祇限於人的敗壞,而那在我們內外四圍的既然都是污穢 不堪的,所以我們祇要看到稍許潔淨一點的東西,便以為是極其聖潔。正如人看慣 了黑色,便以略帶白色或甚而棕色之物為極白的。誠然,我們的感官很可以幫助我 們發現我們對精上帝能力估計的極大錯誤。我們在午間看地面和四周的物體,覺得 一目了然,目光敏銳,但當舉目注視太陽之時,即覺雙目昏花,於是祇好承認,我 們的目光雖能洞察地上的東西, 而對著太陽看, 就祇有模糊不清了。論到我們精上 帝上的稟賦,也是如此。因為我們的眼光若祇限於塵世,以自己的公義,智慧和力 量為滿足,我們必然得意洋洋,自視為半個上帝明。可是如果我們一旦把思想提 高,想到上帝,祂的特性,與祂那理當作為我們標準的公義,智慧和能力的無上完 全,那末,以前冒稱公義而使我們心醉的,將要被看為是最大的不義:以前假冒之 名蒙蔽我們的,將要被看輕為極端愚妄;以前看來似乎有力量的,將要被證明是最 可憐的無能。我們所看為最完全的,與上帝的純潔卻有天淵之別。

(重譯: ) 另一方面,**人若不先注視上帝的面光,然後來省察自己,就永 遠獲不到清晰的自我認識,**這是肯定的。**因為我們總以為自己是公義、正直、智** 慧、和聖潔的 - 這驕傲是與生俱來的 - 除非我們因證據確鑿而被說服自己是不 **裁、污穢、愚蠢、和不潔的。**再來,我們若只注目看自己而不同時注視主的話, 也不能有這種判斷,因為惟有主是衡量這種判斷的獨一的準繩。因為,我們既然 **本性傾於假冒為善**,所以虛有義的外表而無真實的形像,使我們非常的滿足。只 要我們所想的僅限於人的敗壞,因在我們內外四圍的都因極大的不道德而污穢不 堪, 所以我們一看到稍為乾淨一點的東西, 便以為是極其聖潔的。正如人看慣了黑 的東西, 便以略帶白色或甚而棕色之物為極白的了。誠然, 我們可以從感官發現, 我們對靈魂的能力的估計,是多麼的糊塗。我們若在午間看地面和四周的物體,會 覺得一目了然,目光敏銳;**但當我們舉目正視太陽,就馬上覺得雙目昏花,於是** 必須承認,我們的目光雖能洞察地上所有的東西,一看太陽,則完全模糊不清。 論到衡量我們靈魂的天賦,也是如此。我們的眼光若不超越塵世,以自己的公義、 智慧、和美德為滿足,我們必定得意洋洋,自視為小神明。*可是我們若提升我們* 的思維去思想上帝,默想祂的本性,祂的公義、智慧、和權能是多麼的無上完全 (這就是塑造我們的準繩),那麼,以前冒稱公義而使我們心醉的,必被看為最邪 惡的污穢; 以前假冒智慧之名蒙蔽我們的, 必發出它極愚妄的臭味; 以前看來似乎

有能力的,必被證實是最可憐的無能。我們以前認為為完全的,與上帝的純潔一分 別,就顯出它的卑賤。

Again, it is certain that man never achieves a clear knowledge of himself unless he has first looked upon God's face, and then descends from contemplating him to scrutinize himself. For we always seem to ourselves righteous and upright and wise and holy - this pride is innate in all of us - unless by clear proofs we stand convinced of our own unrighteousness, foulness, folly, and impurity. Moreover, we are not thus convinced if we look merely to ourselves and not also to the Lord, who is the sole standard by which this judgment must be measured. For, because all of us are inclined by nature to *hypocrisy*, a kind of empty image of righteousness in place of righteousness itself abundantly satisfies us. And because nothing appears within or around us that has not been contaminated by great immorality, what is a little less vile pleases us as a thing most pure – so long as we confine our minds within the limits of human corruption. Just so, an eye to which nothing is shown but black objects judges something dirty white or even rather darkly mottled to be whiteness itself. Indeed, we can discern still more clearly from the bodily senses how much we are deluded in estimating the powers of the soul. For if in broad daylight we either look down upon the ground or survey whatever meets our view round about, we seem to ourselves endowed with the strongest and keenest sight; yet when we look up to the sun and gaze straight at it, that power of sight which was particularly strong on earth is at once blunted and confused by a great brilliance, and thus we are compelled to admit that our keenness in looking upon things earthly is sheer dullness when it comes to the sun. So it happens in estimating our spiritual goods. As long as we do not look beyond the earth, being quite content with our own righteousness, wisdom, and virtue, we flatter ourselves most sweetly, and fancy ourselves all but demigods. Suppose we but once begin to raise our thoughts to God, and to ponder his nature, and how completely perfect are his righteousness, wisdom, and power - the straightedge to which we must be shaped. Then, what masquerading earlier as righteousness was pleasing in us will soon grow filthy in its consummate wickedness. What wonderfully impressed us under the name of wisdom will stink in its very foolishness. What wore the face of power will prove itself the most miserable weakness. That is, what in us seems perfection itself corresponds ill to the purity of God.

# ccn-tv.com 加爾文基督教要義券 1-4

# 1.1.3 人,在上帝的尊貴榮耀的面前

Man before God's majesty

(修譯: ) 因此《聖經》 **通常描述聖徒感受上帝的同在的時候,是如何的 恐懼戰兢。**我們看到有些人,不站在上帝面前的時候是強壯的堅定的,可是當上 帝顯現祂的榮耀的時候便發抖無聲,被死亡的恐懼壓倒:他們這樣充滿恐懼,差不 多要氣絕。所以我們必須這樣推論: **人若非與上帝的威嚴來比較,絕不會充分因 認識自己卑賤的地位而感動的。**再者,在士師記和先知書中,有許多這樣驚恐的 例子,以致在上帝的百姓中流行著這樣的說法:「我們必要死,因為看見了上帝| (士 13: 22; 賽 6: 5; 結 2: 1; 1: 28; 士 6: 22-23 等; )。約伯的故事形容上 帝的智慧、權能、與聖潔,其主旨是要人感到自己的愚蠢、無能、與敗壞而被壓倒 (約38:1起)。這是不無道理的:因為我們看見亞伯拉罕一但接近、仰望主的榮 耀,就更清楚地承認自己不過是塵土(創 18: 27); 主的顯現如此的可畏,以致 以利亞不蒙著臉,則不能承受等候主的來臨(參王上 19: 13)。若是天使尚且因 恐懼而蒙上臉(賽6:2),何況污穢、敗壞(伯13:28)、如蟲一般(伯7:5: 詩 22: 6) 的人呢? 先知以賽亞就是說到這點: 「月亮要蒙羞,太陽要慚愧,因為 萬軍之主必作王」(賽 24: 23); 就是說,當祂顯現自己的榮耀,使之臨近人的 時候, 最光亮的東西在祂面前都顯得黑暗。

認識上帝與認識我們自己雖然如此互相關連,但正當教導的次序必須先討論對上帝 的認識, 然後討論對自己的認識。

### 士 13: 22

"瑪挪亞對他的妻說:我們必要死,因為看見了上帝。

### 士 6: 22-23

- ※基甸見他是耶和華的使者,就說:哀哉!主耶和華啊,我不好了,因為我覿面 看見耶和華的使者。
- 23 耶和華對他說:你放心,不要懼怕,你必不致死。

### 賽6:5

『那時我說:禍哉!我滅亡了!因為我是嘴唇不潔的人,又住在嘴唇不潔的民中, 又因我眼見大君王-萬軍之耶和華。

### 結 2: 1

└他對我說話的時候﹐靈就進入我裏面﹐使我站起來﹐我便聽見那位對我說話的聲 音。

## 結1:28

潛下雨的日子,雲中虹的形狀怎樣,周圍光輝的形狀也是怎樣。這就是耶和華榮耀 的形像。我一看見就俯伏在地,又聽見一位說話的聲音。

伯 38: 1

1 那時,耶和華從旋風中回答約伯說:

創 18: 27

"亞伯拉罕說:我雖然是灰塵,還敢對主說話。

王上19:13

13. 以利亞聽見,就用外衣蒙上臉,出來站在洞口。有聲音向他說:以利亞啊,你在這裏做什麼?

賽6: 2

<sup>2</sup> 其上有撒拉弗侍立,各有六個翅膀:用兩個翅膀遮臉,兩個翅膀遮腳,兩個翅膀 飛翔:

伯 13: 28

※ 我已經像滅絕的爛物,像蟲蛀的衣裳。

伯7:5

5 我的肉體以蟲子和塵土為衣:我的皮膚才收了口又重新破裂。

詩 22: 6

6 但我是蟲,不是人,被眾人羞辱,被百姓藐視。

賽 24: 23

<sup>②</sup> 那時,月亮要蒙羞,日頭要慚愧;因為萬軍之耶和華必在錫安山,在耶路撒冷作 王;在敬畏他的長老面前,必有榮耀。

賽 2: 10

10 你當進入巖穴,藏在土中,躲避耶和華的驚嚇和他威嚴的榮光。

Hence that dread and wonder with which Scripture commonly represents the *saints* as stricken and overcome whenever they felt the presence of God. Thus it comes about that we see men who in his absence normally remained firm and constant, but who, when he manifests his glory, are so shaken and struck dumb as to be laid low by the dread of death – are in fact overwhelmed by it and almost annihilated. As a consequence, we must infer that man is never sufficiently touched and affected by the awareness of his lowly state until he has compared himself with God's majesty. Moreover, we have numerous examples of this consternation both in The Book of Judges and in the Prophets. So frequent was it that this expression was common among God's people: "We shall die, for the Lord has appeared to us" [Judg. 13:22; Isa. 6:5; Ezek. 2:1; 1:28; Judg. 6:22-23; and elsewhere]. The story of Job, in its description of God's wisdom, power, and purity, always expresses a powerful argument that overwhelms men with the realization of their own stupidity, impotence, and corruption [cf. Job 38:1ff.]. And not without cause: for we see how Abraham recognizes more clearly that he is earth and dust [Gen. 18:27] when once he had come nearer to beholding God's glory; and how Elijah, with uncovered face,

cannot bear to await his approach, such is the awesomeness of his appearance [I Kings 19:13]. And what can man do, who is rottenness itself [Job 13:28] and a worm [Job 7:5; Ps. 22:6], when even the cherubim must veil their faces out of fear [Isa. 6:2]? It is this indeed of which the prophet Isaiah speaks; "The sun will blush and the moon be confounded when the Lord of Hosts shall reign" [Isa. 24:23]; that is, when he shall bring forth his splendor and cause it to draw nearer, the brightest thing will become darkness before it [Isa. 2:10, 19 p.].

Yet, however the knowledge of God and of ourselves may be mutually connected, the order of right teaching requires that we discuss the former first, then proceed afterward to treat the latter.

### Judg. 13:22;

<sup>22</sup> "We are doomed to die!" he said to his wife. "We have seen God!"

### Isa. 6:5;

<sup>5</sup> "Woe to me!" I cried. "I am ruined! For I am a man of unclean lips, and I live among a people of unclean lips, and my eyes have seen the King, the LORD Almighty."

### Ezek. 2:1

<sup>1</sup> He said to me, "Son of man, stand up on your feet and I will speak to you."

### Ezek. 1:28

<sup>28</sup> Like the appearance of a rainbow in the clouds on a rainy day, so was the radiance around him. This was the appearance of the likeness of the glory of the LORD. When I saw it, I fell facedown, and I heard the voice of one speaking.

### Judg. 6:22-23

- When Gideon realized that it was the angel of the LORD, he exclaimed, "Ah, Sovereign LORD! I have seen the angel of the LORD face to face!"
- <sup>23</sup> But the LORD said to him, "Peace! Do not be afraid. You are not going to die."

### Job 38:1

<sup>1</sup> Then the LORD answered Job out of the storm. He said:

### Gen. 18:27

<sup>27</sup> Then Abraham spoke up again: "Now that I have been so bold as to speak to the Lord, though I am nothing but dust and ashes,

### Job 13:28

<sup>28</sup> "So man wastes away like something rotten, like a garment eaten by moths.

### I Kings 19:13

When Elijah heard it, he pulled his cloak over his face and went out and stood at the mouth of the cave. Then a voice said to him, "What are you doing here, Elijah?"

### Job 7:5;

<sup>5</sup> My body is clothed with worms and scabs, my skin is broken and festering.

### Ps. 22:6

<sup>6</sup> But I am a worm and not a man, scorned by men and despised by the people.

### Isa. 6:2

Above him were seraphs, each with six wings: With two wings they covered their faces, with two they covered their feet, and with two they were flying.

### Isa. 2:10, 19

- <sup>10</sup> Go into the rocks, hide in the ground from dread of the LORD and the splendor of his majesty!
- <sup>19</sup> Men will flee to caves in the rocks and to holes in the ground from dread of the LORD and the splendor of his majesty, when he rises to shake the earth.

1.2.1 對上帝的知識就是:我們應當知道的:怎樣榮耀

上帝:知識就是敬虔:上帝不偷閑:對上帝的認識不是抽象 的知識: 認識上帝與我們的關係: 信靠上帝, 敬畏上帝, 向 上帝虔誠,敬拜上帝

KNOWELDGE OF GOD: WHAT IS RIGHT TO KNOW; KNOWLEDGE CONDUCIVE TO GLORY OF GOD, PIETY

GOD IS NOT IDLE; KNOWLEDGE OF GOD NOT ABSTRACT; KNOWLEDGE OF GOD IN RELATION TO OURSELVES: FAITH, FEAR, REVERENCE, WORSHIP

Institutes, 1.2.1

卷一 第二章: 認識上帝的意義; 認識上帝的目的

Chapter II – What it is to know God, and to what Purpose the knowledge of him tends

### 1.2.1 要認識上帝,必須虔誠(雙重 Piety is requisite for the knowledge of God

(中譯:) 我所謂對上帝的認識,不單止要有這樣一位上帝的觀念,而且要熟 悉*一切我們對上帝所當知道的,而有助於祂的榮耀和我們的幸福之事。*因為嚴格 說來,我們說認識上帝,卻沒有宗教或敬虔,這就是不對的。我在這裏所說的,並 不是失喪與被定罪之人所藉以認識上帝在中保基督裏為救贖者的那種知識: 我所說 的, 祇是亞當若保存著天真, 自然的真秩序必會引我們到達的那種最初而純粹的知 識。因為在人性目前的腐敗情況中,雖然除了藉著基督為中保,沒有人會認識上帝 是父,是救主,或是慈爱的;可是,*晓得我們的創造者上帝以祂的權能扶持我* 們,以祂的護理照顧管理我們,以祂的美善養育我們,並以各種福祉加惠於我 *們,*是一回事,*而領受那在基督裏賜予我們的和好的恩典,*又是另一回事。所 以,上帝既然首先在宇宙的機構與《聖經》的要義裏。祇顯明為創造者,以後在基 督裹啟示自己為救贖主,對祂的認識因而有兩方面:我們且先論前者,後者留待適 當之處再談。因為,**雖然我們未有想到上帝而不多少敬拜祂的,可是僅知道祂是** 普遍敬拜與景仰的惟一正當對象是不夠的,我們還要確信祂是美善的泉源,而專 *心追求祂。*我如此主張,不但是因為祂以無限的權力支持祂所創造的宇宙,以智 慧管理它,以仁慈保存它,尤其是以公義和審判統治人類,向他們容忍施憐憫,保 護他們; 我如此主張, 乃是因為一切智慧, 亮光, 公義, 權能, 正直, 與真理, 沒

有不是有祂而來,也無不認祂為創造者; 所以我們應該向祂追求這一切,並感謝祂 所賜予的。*因為上帝之完全的這種意識,為的是要以那產生宗教的虔敬教導我* 們。我所謂敬虔,是指那從認識祂的福祉而生的敬愛上帝之心。因為直到人知 道,他們所有的無不是來自上帝,他們是受祂的父愛所支持,他們所享的福都是祂 所賜,也沒有一樣東西可是得之於上帝以外,人不會自動地服從祂的權威;除非他 們惟獨依賴祂得根基上, 他們絕不會誠心地服事上帝。

### 林後4:6

6 那吩咐光從黑暗裏照出來的上帝,已經照在我們心裏,叫我們得知上帝榮耀的光 顯在耶穌基督的面上。

Now, the knowledge of God, as I understand it, is that by which we not only conceive that there is a God but also grasp what befits us and is proper to his glory, in fine, what is to our advantage to know of him. Indeed, we shall not say that, properly speaking, God is known where there is no religion or piety. Here I do not yet touch upon the sort of knowledge with which men, in themselves lost and accursed, apprehend God the Redeemer in Christ the Mediator; but I speak only of the primal and simple knowledge to which the very order of nature would have led us if Adam had remained upright. In this ruin of mankind no one now experiences God either as Father or as Author of salvation, or favorable in any way, until Christ the Mediator comes forward to reconcile him to us. Nevertheless, it is one thing to feel that God as our Maker supports us by his power, governs us by his providence, nourishes us by his goodness, and attends us with all sorts of blessings - and another thing to embrace the grace of reconciliation offered to us in Christ. First, as much in the fashioning of the universe as in the general teaching of Scripture the Lord shows himself to be simply the Creator. Then in the face of Christ [cf. II Cor. 4:6] he shows himself the Redeemer. Of the resulting twofold knowledge of God we shall now discuss the first aspect; the second will be dealt with in its proper place.

### II Cor. 4:6

<sup>6</sup> Now, brothers, I have applied these things to myself and Apollos for your benefit, so that you may learn from us the meaning of the saying, "Do not go beyond what is written." Then you will not take pride in one man over against another.

Moreover, although our mind cannot apprehend God without rendering some honor to him, it will not suffice simply to hold that there is One whom all ought to honor and adore, unless we are also persuaded that he is the fountain of every good, and that we must seek nothing elsewhere than in him. This I take to mean that not only does he sustain this universe (as he once founded it) by his boundless might, regulate it by his wisdom, preserve it by his goodness, and especially rule mankind by his righteousness and judgment, bear with it in his mercy, watch over it by his protection; but also that no drop will be found either of wisdom and light, or of righteousness or power or rectitude, or of genuine truth, which does not flow from him, and of which he is not the cause. Thus we may learn to await and seek all these things from him, and thankfully to ascribe them, once received, to him. For this sense of the powers of God is for us a fit teacher

of piety, from which religion is born. I call "piety" that reverence joined with love of God which the knowledge of his benefits induces. For until men recognize that they owe everything to God, that they are nourished by his fatherly care, that he is the Author of their every good, that they should seek nothing beyond him – they will never yield him willing service. Nay, unless they establish their complete happiness in him, they will never give themselves truly and sincerely to him.

我所謂**敬虔**,是指那從認識祂的好處美善而生的敬畏上帝之心。因為直到人知道,他們所有的無不是來自上帝,他們是受祂的父愛所支持,他們所享受的美福都是祂所賜,也沒有一樣東西可以得之於上帝以外,他們總不會自動地服從祂的權威;除非他們惟獨依賴祂得根基上,他們絕不會誠心誠意地服事上帝。|

True piety: "a reverence and love toward God conjoined together, to which we are attracted, knowing the good that it does us." 1,2,1.

# 1.2.2 認識上帝必須信靠祂,敬畏祂

## Knowledge of God involves trust and reverence

(中譯:)討論上帝本質之人的空論,乃是冷酷而無情的,其實祂的性格,並知道什麼是和祂的性格相宜的對我們更有益處。因為像以彼古羅一樣,承認有一位偷安好逸,對宇宙全不關心的上帝,有甚麼意義呢?認識一位與我們無關的上帝,有什麼好處呢?我們對上帝的認識,理當首先教我們存敬畏之心,其次教我們向祂求一切的美善,並為我們所領受的讚美祂。因為,你想到上帝,怎能不同時想到,你既然是祂所創造的,所以你理當服從上帝的權威呢?並想到你的生命是由祂而來的呢?你所行所做的,都必須與上帝有關呢?既然如此,你的生活不受服從祂的願望所調度,就會敗壞不堪,因為祂的旨意理當是我們行為的準則。你若不知道上帝是美善的來源,也就不能清楚認識祂。人心若不受本身的敗壞所誘,偏離思考的正路,這種對上帝的認識就會使我們尋求與上帝聯合(修譯),與信靠祂的心。

甚至在最初之時(修:因為從開始以來),信徒並非夢想一位想像中的上帝, 而是*默想一位獨一無二的真上帝*;他們對祂並不憑空幻想,乃是以相信祂自己的 為足(修: 乃是*以相信上帝的自我啟示為滿足*), 小心翼翼, 免得因粗率鹵莽地 違犯祂的旨意而陷於錯誤(修:敬虔的心會殷勤**,免得偏離正路,敢於違反祂的** *旨意*)。凡這樣認識祂,*知道萬有都受祂所支配的人,就一心信祂為保護者,將* 自己完全交託祂。那確信一切美善都是祂所賜的人,一遇著急難欠缺,就會立刻 求祂保護援助。他既然深知祂的美善和慈悲,就一心信靠祂,知道在祂的寬大愛 護之下,可以找到脫離一切患難的出路。他既知道祂是主,是父,就認定自己應 *該凡事服從祂的支配,敬仰祂的莊嚴,努力歸榮耀於祂,並聽從祂的誡命。*他既 把上帝看為一位罰惡從嚴的公正法官,就常存戒慎恐懼之心,不敢干犯上帝。他雖 然恐懼祂的審判,可是縱有逃避的機會,也不逃避;他喜愛主的懲惡與喜愛主的賞 善一般,因為他相信,對不敬之人事以刑法,與對善人報以永生,同是歸榮耀於上 帝所不可少的。此外,他禁止自己犯罪,不祇是因為怕懲罰,乃是因為他敬愛上帝 如父,尊崇祂如主,即令沒有地獄,也不敢存心冒犯祂。這就是純正宗教的性質。 這樣的宗教包括信仰,兼有真敬畏上帝的心,出乎自願的尊敬,與合乎律罰諸訓戒 的合法崇拜。這一點尤須特別注意,因為人對上帝大都祇有形式上的崇拜,而少有 真心尊敬祂的;在儀式上雖普遍地盡量鋪張,而誠心卻不多見。

What is God? Men who pose this question are merely toying with *idle* speculations. It is more important for us to know of what sort he is and what is consistent with his nature. What good is it to profess with Epicurus some sort of God who has cast aside the care of the world only to amuse himself in idleness? What help is it, in sort, to know a God with whom we have nothing to do? Rather, our knowledge should serve first to teach us fear and reverence; secondly, with it as our guide and teacher, we should learn to seek every good from him, and, having received it, to credit it to his account. For how can the thought of God penetrate your mind without your

realizing immediately that, since you are his handiwork, you have been made over and bound to his command by right of creation, that you owe your life to him? – that whatever you undertake, whatever you do, ought to be ascribed to him? If this be so, it now assuredly follows that your life is wickedly corrupt unless it be disposed to his service, seeing that his will ought for us to be the law by which we live. Again, you cannot behold him clearly unless you acknowledge him to be the fountainhead and source of every good. From this too would arise the desire to cleave to him and trust in him, but for the fact that man's depravity seduces his mind from rightly seeking him.

For, to begin with, *the pious mind* does not dream up for itself any god it pleases, but contemplates the one and only true God. And it does not attach to him whatever it pleases, but is content to hold him to be as he manifests himself; furthermore, the mind always exercises the utmost diligence and care not to wander astray, or rashly and boldly to go beyond his will. It thus recognizes God because it knows that he governs all things; and trusts that he is its guide and protector, therefore giving itself over completely to trust in him. Because it understands him to be the Author of every good, if anything oppresses, if anything is lacking, immediately it betakes itself to his protection, waiting for help from him. Because it is persuaded that he is good and merciful, it reposes in him with perfect trust, and doubts not that in his loving-kindness a remedy will be provided for all its ills. Because it acknowledges him as Lord and Father, the pious mind also deems it meet and right to observe his authority in all things, reverence his majesty, take care to advance his glory, and obey his commandments. Because it sees him to be a righteous judge, armed with severity to punish wickedness, it ever holds his judgment seat before its gaze, and through fear of him restrains itself from provoking his anger. And yet it is not so terrified by the awareness of his judgment as to wish to withdraw, even if some way of escape were open. But if it embraces him no less as punisher of the wicked than as benefactor of the pious. For the pious mind realizes that the punishment of the impious and wicked and the reward of life eternal for the righteous equally pertain to God's glory. Besides, this mind restrains itself from sinning, not out of dread of punishment alone; but, because it loves and reveres God as Father, it worships and adores him as Lord. Even if there were no hell, it would still shudder at offending him alone.

# 信心 + 敬畏上帝 + 敬虔 + 敬拜 FAITH + FEAR OF GOD + REVERENCE + WORSHIP

(新譯:)這就是真正的,純潔的敬虔/宗教:信心加上誠懇的敬畏上帝的心,這種敬畏同時包含了樂意敬畏祂,以合法的方法敬拜祂,也就是說以輔覆合上帝律法所規定的敬拜祂。我們必須更殷勤注意這一點:人類對上帝都有一種模糊的敬仰,可是很少人真正敬畏祂;特別在繁瑣禮儀(天主教),太少人以真心的去敬拜祂。

Here indeed is pure and real religion: faith so joined with an earnest fear of God that this fear also embraces willing reverence, and carries with it such legitimate worship as is prescribed in the law. And we ought to note this fact even more diligently:

all men have a vague general veneration for God, but very few really reverence him; and wherever there is great ostentation in ceremonies, sincerity of heart is rare indeed.

# 1.13.3 人對上帝自然本性的認識: 都是愚拙 (乏味) All Man's Own Thoughts About God Are Foolishness (without Savour) 1.13.3

(重譯;)因為當我們論到上帝的時候,我們談論祂的時候要非常的謹慎,因為我們若靠自己思想上帝,都是愚笨,我們所說的都荒謬和乏味的。

"For I do not feel that concerning God we should speak with less conscientiousness than we should think, since whatever by ourselves we think concerning him is foolish, and whatever we speak, absurd (without savour)."

# 1.5.9 人應當默想上帝的作為,而不是好奇地猜測上帝的榮耀 MEDITATE ON GOD'S WORK, DON'T SPECULATE ON GOD'S GLORY From 1.5.9

### (重譯:)

「尋求上帝的正當方法,遵循最好的準則,不是強迫自己用太過放膽的好奇心去探索上帝的威嚴。**我們要敬拜祂,要默想祂的創造大工來默想祂。**上帝藉著祂的作為讓祂自己與我們親近,使我們認識祂,我們甚至於可以說,上帝藉此與我們溝通。」

"The right way to seek God, and the best rule we can follow, is not to force ourselves with too bold a curiosity to inquire into his majesty, which we ought rather to worship than investigate too curiously, but to contemplate him in his works, by which he renders himself near and familiar to us and, we might say, communciates himself." 1.5.9.

# ccn-tv.com 加爾文基督教要義卷 1-5

1.13.21 只有上帝才能靠自己認識自己: 我們只知道上帝所宣稱的,所啟示的 ONLY GOD KNOWS HIMSELF BY HIMSELF; WE KNOW GOD AS HE REVEALS HIMSELF TO US From 1.13.21

(重譯):

「我們理當將上帝對祂自己的認識這件事,歸給上帝。**因為只有上帝才能自我見證,因唯有祂自己為自我見證;惟有祂藉祂自己認識自己。**那麼,我們怎樣才算是將屬於上帝的事歸給上帝呢?**我們應該按照上帝對自己所宣稱的來認識祂,**除了藉著祂的話語以外,我們不經其他途徑去詢問祂或問什麼關於上帝的事情。」(神是無所不知,盡都透知的;神是可知的,神在永恆裏計劃了,神具體在宇宙中、歷史中啓示自己。)

Leave to God the privilege of knowing himself; for *it is he only who is able to bear witness of himself who knows himself by himself alone*. And we shall be leaving him what belongs to him if we understand him as he declares himself, and ask nothing at all concerning him except through his word." 1.13.21

1.13.21 不要超越《聖經》,做哲學的探究必須謙虛;人的思想不能衡量宇宙無限;只有上帝靠自己認識自己,為自己作見證

DON'T GO BEYOND BIBLE; PLAY PHILOSOPHER MODERATELY; HUMAN MIND CANNOT MEASURE THE MEASURELESS; ONLY GOD KNOWS HIMSELF IN HIMSELF, WITNESSES TO HIMSELF

不但如此,撒但為要搖動我們信仰的基礎,對關於子與靈的上帝性,以及位格的差別等問題,惹起見很大的爭端;並且幾乎在每一世代都掀起不敬虔的人。在這事上困擾正統派的教師們。今天,撒但仍舊利用餘燼,燃燒新的火焰,因此在這裏駁斥那麻醉人的邪惡虛幻觀念,確有必要。過去我們主要的目的是教訓馴良的人,不和頑固好事的人計較;現在我們既已證明了真理,就必須盡力擁護,不顧一切惡人的責難,雖然我的主要目標是在乎使那些聽從上帝道的人有堅定可靠的立場。關於這一點,我們必須有比對聖經的其它奧秘更加謙虛,更加慎重的推究態度,免得我們的思想和語言,超乎上帝道範圍之外。太陽雖是我們每天所想所見之物,我們對它的本質尚且不能作定論;人對自己的本性尚且不能理解,又怎能靠自己的努力,去識透上帝的本體呢?因此,還是讓我們把認識上帝的問題,交託於祂自

**己好啦。**正如希拉流所說的,「**唯獨祂自己可算是本身的見證,因為祇有祂自己能理解本身。**」假如我們對祂的概念與祂對我們所顯現的是相符合,而且我們關於祂的研究,又祇限於祂的話,我們當然會將這問題交託於祂。關於這個辯論,屈檢多模反對非律派(Anomoei)的講道錄尚存有五篇;但這還不足以制止詭辯家的饒舌,因為他們在這宗事上並不比在別事上謙遜些。他們的魯莽的不幸結果,警告我們以後對這問題的研究須更誠懇,不可狡猾;研究上帝須根據聖道,無論是觀念上想到祂,或在語言上說及祂,都要以祂的教訓為準繩。如果因為難明父,子,靈同一上帝性的區別,而引用了徒勞無益的解釋,他們應當記得,人的思想若過於好奇,必將陷入迷宮,所以他們對上帝的奧秘,雖覺高深莫測,也當服從上帝論的指導。

Moreover, Satan, in order to tear our faith from its very roots, has always been instigating great battles, partly concerning the divine essence of the Son and the Spirit, partly concerning the distinction of the persons. He has during nearly all ages stirred up ungodly spirits to harry orthodox teachers over this matter and today also is trying to kindle a new fire from the old embers. For these reasons, it is important here to resist the perverse ravings of certain persons. Hitherto it has been my particular intention to lead by the hand those who are teachable, but not to strive hand to hand with the inflexible and the contentious. But now the truth which has been peaceably shown must be maintained against all the calumnies of the wicked. And yet I will exert special effort to the end that they who lend ready and open ears to God's Word may have a firm standing ground. Here, indeed, if anywhere in the secret mysteries of Scripture, we ought to play the philosopher soberly and with great moderation; let us use great caution that neither our thoughts nor our speech go beyond the limits to which the Word of God itself extends. For how can the human mind measure off the measureless essence of God according to its own little measure, a mind as yet unable to establish for certain the nature of the sun's body, though men's eyes daily gaze upon it? Indeed, how can the mind by its own leading come to search out God's essence when it cannot even get to its own? Let us then willingly leave to God the knowledge of himself. For, as Hilary says, he is the one fit witness to himself, and is not known except through himself. But we shall be "leaving it to him" if we conceive him to be as he reveals himself to us, without inquiring about him elsewhere than from his Word. On this question there are extant five homilies of Chrysostom Against the Anomoeans; yet not even these could restrain the presumptuous Sophists from giving their stuttering tongues free rein. For in this matter they have behaved no more modestly than they usually do everywhere. We ought to be warned by the unhappy outcome of this presumption so that we may take care to apply ourselves to this question with teachableness rather than to subtlety. And let us not take it into our heads either to seek out God anywhere else than in his Sacred Word, or to think anything about him that is not prompted by his Word, or to speak anything that is not taken from that Word. But if some distinction does exist in the one divinity of Father, Son, and Spirit – something hard to grasp – and occasions to certain minds more difficulty and trouble than is expedient, let it be remembered that men's minds, when they indulge their curiosity, enter into a labyrinth. And so let them yield themselves to be ruled by the heavenly oracles, even though they may fail to capture the height of the mystery.

# ccn-tv.com 加爾文基督教要義卷 1-6

1.14.1 由於世界的創造,《聖經》辨別真上帝與假神 WE CANNOT AND SHOULD NOT GO BEHIND GOD'S **ACT OF CREATION IN OUR SPECULATION 1.14.1** 

敬拜偶像者從世界並不認識真上帝是誰: 我們遲鈍, 需要比非信徒更 清楚認識上帝

上帝: 宇宙的心靈? 我們需要更親密地認識上帝:

因此上帝向我們啟示了宇宙的歷史

IDOLATERS DO NOT LEARN, FROM WORLD, WHO THE TRUE GOD IS WE ARE DULL, NEED TO KNOW GOD MORE DISTINCTLY THAN NON-CHRISTIANS

GOD: MIND OF UNIVERSE? WE MUST KNOW GOD MORE **INTIMATELY:** 

### SO GOD REVEALED TO US THE HISTORY OF CREATION

雖然以賽亞責備一班敬拜假上帝的人未能從地的根基,與諸天的運行認識誰 是真上帝為愚拙,但是由於我們的愚魯遲鈍,必須將真上帝更明白地顯示出來,以 免信徒陷入於異教的虚妄。因為哲學家們給我們的最可容忍的敘述,即上帝是世界 的心靈, 也是完全沒有價值的, 所以我們對上帝必須以位格和關係的認識, 以免我 們永久陷在疑信參半的境地中。因此祂喜歡給我們一部創造的歷史, 作為教會的信 仰的根據。叫教會除了摩西所說,即建立宇宙和創造世界的上帝以外,不要尋找別 的上帝。

### 賽 40: 21-22

- 21 你們豈不曾知道嗎?你們豈不曾聽見嗎?從起初豈沒有人告訴你們嗎?自從立地的 根基,你們豈沒有明白嗎?
- 22 上帝坐在地球大圈之上;地上的居民好像蝗蟲。他鋪張穹蒼如幔子,展開諸天 如可住的帳棚。

Isaiah rightly charges the worshippers of false gods with obtuseness, because they have not learned from the foundations of the earth and the circle of the heavens who is the true God [Isa. 40:21; cf. v. 22; see Comm.]. Despite this, such is the slowness and dullness of our wit that, to prevent believers from deserting to the fabrications of the heathen, we must depict the true God more distinctly than they do. Since the notion of

God as the mind of the universe (in the philosophers' eyes, a most acceptable description) is ephemeral, it is important for us to know him more intimately, lest we always waver in doubt. Therefore it was his will that the history of Creation be made manifest, in order that the faith of the church, resting upon this, might seek no other God but him who was put forth by Moses as the Maker and Founder of the universe.

Isa. 40: 21-22

上帝創造世間:因此我們可以認識萬物的起源,人的來源: 認識永恆的上帝,宇宙 -> 拒絕異教的上帝話: 追究上帝所隱藏的事,沒有用處

GOD MARKS TIME; WE MAY KNOW ORIGIN OF MAN, ALL THINGS; KNOWING ETERNAL GOD, CREATION -> RESIST PAGAN MYTHS; NOT USEFUL TO KNOW WHAT GOD HAS HIDDEN

在這歷史當中,首先特別提出的一宗事,即是「時間」,使信徒由繼續不斷的 年歲,可以找出人類和萬物最初的起源。這種知識的用處很大,不但可以糾正從前 埃及和別國的錯誤寓言,而且可以使我們對上帝的永恆,有更清楚的觀念,和更大 的崇敬。我們也不應該被世俗的嘲笑所動搖,奇怪為甚麼上帝早不計劃創造天地, 而使大好光陰不知白白的過去多少,因為祂儘可以在千萬世代以前就創造了世界, 而現在將近末世,世界還不到六千多年呢。要查問上帝延擱了這麼長久的原因,既 不合法,也不合宜;如果人們的思想必欲識透這一問題,雖然經百次的嘗試,也將 失敗; 其實, 上帝為試驗我們心的謙虚, 特地使這事諱莫如深, 所以我們用不著去 探究。某次有一個嘲笑宗教的人以開玩笑的態度問一位虔敬的老人, *上帝在創造 世界以前,究竟在做些什麼事。*這老人回答得很妙,他說*上帝那時正在為好奇心* 的人造地獄。

Therein time was first marked so that by a continuing succession of years believers might arrive at the primal source of the human race and of all things. This knowledge is especially useful not only to resist the monstrous fables that formerly were in vogue in Egypt and in other regions of the earth, but also that, once the beginning of the universe is known, God's eternity may shine forth more clearly, and we may be more rapt in wonder at it. And indeed, that impious scoff ought not to move us: that it is a

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>21</sup> Do you not know? Have you not heard? Has it not been told you from the beginning? Have you not understood since the earth was founded?

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>22</sup> He sits enthroned above the circle of the earth, and its people are like grasshoppers. He stretches out the heavens like a canopy, and spreads them out like a tent to live in.

wonder how it did not enter God's mind sooner to found heaven and earth, but that he idly permitted an immeasurable time to pass away, since he could have made it very many millenniums earlier, albeit the duration of the world, now declining to its ultimate end, has not yet attained six thousand years. For it is neither lawful nor expedient for us to inquire why God delayed so long, because if the human mind strives to penetrate thus far, it will fail a hundred times on the way. And it would not even be useful for us to know what God himself, to test our moderation of faith, on purpose willed to be hidden. When a certain shameless fellow mockingly asked a pious old man what God had done before the creation of the world, the latter aptly countered that he had been building hell for the curious.

猜測: 邪惡, 有害: 上帝的智慧, 權能, 公義 = 不是我們 可以知的:

上帝向我們啟示摩西的歷史,像一面鏡子,我們應當接受上 帝隱藏的旨意:

若是要知道比上帝更高的旨意以外的成因: 是得罪了上帝 的

SPECULATIONS: WICKED, HURTFUL GOD'S WISDOM, POWER, **RIGHTEOUSNESS = INCOMPREHENSIBLE**;

GOD REVEALS MOSES' HISTORY TO US AS A MIRROR ACCEPT **GOD'S HIDDEN PURPOSES** 

DEMANDING A CAUSE HIGHER THAN GOD'S WILL = DO WRONG TO GOD

願我現在用嚴肅的勸免,可以約束好奇的人,*妄作無益的猜測。*最後,我們 應該記得,那無形的,具有不能了解的智慧,權能,和公義的上帝,已經把摩西的 歷史,放在我們面前當作鏡子發亮,藉以反映祂的形像。正如目力一般,或因年老 而模糊,或因疾病而遲鈍,非有眼鏡的幫助,就看不清楚;我們之尋找上帝,也是 如此低能,若沒有《聖經》的指導,立刻就陷於迷途。但那些沉溺於狂妄的人,因 對他們的勸告無效,等到知道可怕的毀滅,已經太遲了。與其以誹謗玷污上蒼,不 如以戒慎敬畏的心,順從上帝的密諭為是。**奧古斯丁說得對,若追問事物的範 圍,超乎上帝的旨意,便是侵犯上帝。**他在別的地方鄭重地警告我們說,爭論無 限的時間,是和爭論無限的空間同樣的荒謬。不論諸天的運行有多廣,但總有它的 廣度。如果有人和上帝辯論說,太空比祂所定的要大百倍以上,這樣的狂妄, 豈不 為所有敬虔誠的人所厭惡?有些人責備上帝懶惰,不按照他們的心願,預先在若干 世紀以前,就創造世界,像這樣的人,也可說是瘋狂的人。為滿足過份的好奇心,

他們想超越世界的範圍以外,仿佛在廣大的天地間,沒有無數的物體環繞著我們, 而這些物體,都能以無量的光華,吸引我們的感覺;仿佛在六千年的過程中,上帝 還沒有給我們充份的教訓,訓練我們的心靈,去默想它們。所以,讓我們愉快地在 上帝約束我們的界限以內,先知我們的心思,叫它不致漂泊與狂妄的推測之中。 (從略)

Let this admonition, no less grave than severe, restrain the wantonness that tickles many and even drives them to wicked and hurtful speculations. In short, let us remember that that invisible God whose wisdom, power, and righteousness are incomprehensible, sets before us Moses' history as a mirror in which his living likeness glows. For just as eyes, when dimmed with age or weakness or by some other defect, unless aided by spectacles, discern nothing distinctly; so, such is our feebleness, unless Scripture guides us in seeking God, we are immediately confused. They who, indeed, indulge their own wantonness, since they are now warned in vain, will feel too late by a dreadful ruin how much better it would have been for them reverently to accept God's secret purposes than to belch forth blasphemies by which to obscure heaven. And Augustine rightly complains that wrong is done to God when a higher cause of things than his will is demanded. Elsewhere the same man wisely warns that it is no less wrong to raise questions concerning immeasurable stretches of time than of space. Indeed, however widely the circuit of the heavens extends, it still has some limit. Now if anyone should expostulate with God that the void exceeds the heavens a hundredfold, would not this impudence be detestable to all the godly? Into such madness leap those who carp at God's idleness because he did not in accord with their judgment establish the universe innumerable ages before. To gratify their curiosity, they strive to go forth outside the world. As if in the vast circle of heaven and earth enough things do not present themselves to engross all our sense with their incomprehensible brightness! As if within six thousand years God has not shown evidences enough on which to exercise our minds in earnest meditation! Therefore let us willingly remain enclosed within these bounds to which God has willed to confine us, and as it were, to pen up our minds that they may not, through their very freedom to wander, go astray.

# 1.5.1 對上帝的認識表現在宇宙的構造與繼續管理中 THE KNOWLEDGE OF GOD SHINES FORTH IN THE FASHIONING OF THE UNIVERSE AND THE **CONTINUING GOVERNMENT OF IT**

# 1.5.1 上帝自我啟示的清晰性,使我們無可推諉

The clarity of God's self-disclosure strips us of every excuse

完全的快樂生活既包括於對上帝的認識之中(修譯: *完全有福生命的目標, 在* 於認識上帝), 所以上帝為要使每人都可以達到幸福的境地起見, **不但把宗教的 種子**撒在人心裏,而且**在宇宙各部份創造中表現了自己,又每天向眾人顯現,叫 他們睜開眼睛沒有看不見祂的。**祂的本體真是不能了解的,所以祂的威嚴不是人 的感官所能看到的; 但祂卻已把祂的榮耀的印記般清楚地表現在祂的一切工作上, 雖下愚也不能托詞無知而自恕。所以詩人說:「祂披上亮光,如披外袍」(詩 104: 2): 他無異是說, 祂最初以可見的外表顯現, 是在宇宙受造之時候, 祂那時 所表現的榮光,在各方面現在還是顯著的。這詩人在同一地方把廣闊陣地天空比作 宫殿, 說: 「在水中立樓閣的棟梁, 用雲彩為車, 藉著風的翅膀而行: | 又以風和 電光為祂的使者。因為祂權能與智慧的光榮更燦爛的在地上照耀,於是廣大穹蒼便 被稱為祂的宮殿。你目光所及之處,沒有不從宇宙間的每一原子之中看到祂榮光 的。當你看到宇宙這一部美侖美奐的機器,你對它無限的光華不勝驚異之至。所以 希伯來書的作者巧妙地把世界看為無形事物的表現(參來 11: 3),因為宇宙的勻 稱得體正如一面鏡子,叫我們可以在它裏面看到那原是無形無像的上帝。所以詩人 說,諸天以都能明瞭的言語,使世上最無知的人,因它們的明顯見證也對上帝有所 認識。可是保羅更清楚肯定地論到這有助於對上帝至認識的顯現,說:「自從造天 地以來,上帝的永能和上帝性是明明可知的,雖是眼不能見,但藉著所造之物,就 可以曉得| (羅1:20)。

詩 104: 2-4

- 2 披上亮光,如披外袍,鋪張穹蒼,如鋪幔子,
- 3 在水中立樓閣的棟梁,用雲彩為車輦,藉著風的翅膀而行,
- 4 以風為使者,以火焰為僕役,

詩 11: 4

4 耶和華在他的聖殿裏; 耶和華的寶座在天上; 他的慧眼察看世人。

詩 19: 2

2 這日到那日發出言語;這夜到那夜傳出知識。

來 11: 3

3 我們因著信,就知道諸世界是藉上帝話造成的,這樣,所看見的,並不是從顯然之物造出來的。

羅 1: 19-20

- 19上帝的事情,人所能知道的,原顯明在人心裏,因為上帝已經給他們顯明。
- 20 自從造天地以來,上帝的永能和上帝性是明明可知的,雖是眼不能見,但藉著所造之物就可以曉得,叫人無可推諉。

The final goal of the blessed life, moreover, rests in the knowledge of God. Lest anyone, then, be excluded from access to happiness, he not only sowed in men's minds that seed of religion of which we have spoken but revealed himself and daily discloses himself in the whole workmanship of the universe. As a consequence, men cannot open their eyes without being compelled to see him. Indeed, his essence is incomprehensible; hence, his divineness far escapes all human perception. But upon his individual works he has engraved unmistakable marks of his glory, so clear and so prominent that even unlettered and stupid folk cannot plead the excuse of ignorance. Therefore the prophet very aptly exclaims that he is "clad with light as with a garment' [Ps. 104:2 p.]. It is as if he said: Thereafter the Lord began to show himself in the visible splendor of his apparel, ever since in the creation of the universe he brought forth those insignia whereby he shows his glory to us, whenever and wherever we cast our gaze. Likewise, the same prophet skillfully compares the heavens, as they are stretched out, to his royal tent and says that he has laid the beams of his chambers on the waters, has made the clouds his chariot, rides on the wings of the wind, and that the winds and lightning bolts are his swift messengers. [Ps. 104:2-4.] And since the glory of his power and wisdom shine more brightly above, heaven is often called his palace [Ps. 11:4]. Yet, in the first place, wherever you cast your eyes, there is no spot in the universe wherein you cannot discern at least some sparks of his glory. You cannot in one glance survey this most vast and beautiful system of the universe, in its wide expanse, without being completely overwhelmed by the boundless force of its brightness. The reason why the author of The Letter to the Hebrews elegantly calls the universe the appearance of things invisible [Heb. 11:3] is that this skillful ordering of the universe is for us a sort of mirror in which we can contemplate God, who is otherwise invisible. The reason why the prophet attributes to the heavenly creatures a language known to every nation [Ps. 19:2 ff.] is that therein lies an attestation of divinity so apparent that it ought not to escape the gaze of even the most stupid tribe. The apostle declares this more clearly: "What men need to know concerning God has been disclosed to them, ... for one and all gaze upon his invisible nature, known from the creation of the world, even unto his eternal power and divinity" [Rom. 1:19-20] p.].

Ps. 104:2

### Ps. 11:4

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>2</sup> He wraps himself in light as with a garment; he stretches out the heavens like a tent

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>4</sup> The LORD is in his holy temple; the LORD is on his heavenly throne. He observes the sons of men; his eyes examine them.

### Ps. 19:2

<sup>2</sup> Day after day they pour forth speech; night after night they display knowledge.

Heb. 11:3 <sup>3</sup> By faith we understand that the universe was formed at God's command, so that what is seen was not made out of what was visible.

### Rom. 1:19-20

- <sup>19</sup> since what may be known about God is plain to them, because God has made it plain to
- <sup>20</sup> For since the creation of the world God's invisible qualities—his eternal power and divine nature—have been clearly seen, being understood from what has been made, so that men are without excuse.

### 1.3.1 人類都有上帝的意識; 「宗教的種子」 MEN HAVE SENSE OF DIVINITY; "SEED OF RELIGION"

### 卷一 第三章: 認識上帝是人心的天賦

Chapter 3 – The Knowledge of God has been naturally implanted in the minds of men

### 1.3.1. The character of this natural endowment

上帝種植對祂的意識在人裏;人被自己的見證定罪;無知不是藉口; 最原始的民族都有宗教的種子

GOD IMPLANTED AWARENESS OF DIVINITY IN MAN; MAN CONDEMNED BY OWN TESTIMONY; IGNORANCE NO EXCUSE THE MOST "BACKWARD" PEOPLES HAVE SEED OF RELIGION

人心甚至由於自然的本能,也有些對上帝的感覺(修: **人的心思裏,特別因** *為本能,對上帝是有所意識的*),我們認為這一點是無可爭辯的。上帝使人人都 多少知道祂的存在(修: **上帝在每一個人心中種植了一種對祂神聖威嚴的理解**) (參羅 1: 20),又不時暗中叫人想起祂,為的是要使人無可推諉。人既然都知道 有上帝,**而且知道上帝是他們的創造者,他們必按自己的口供(修:見證),定 自己不敬拜祂,不獻身為祂服役之罪。**我們若要尋找毫不知道有上帝的人,恐怕 只有在最愚蠢,最不開化的部落中才找得著。然而,正如著名的西色柔所說:沒有 一個國家或民族, 野蠻到不相信有一位上帝。即使在某方面與禽獸相去不遠的人, 總也保留著多少宗教意識: 人心是充份地被這種與他們固有天性相交織著的普通原 理所支配著的。自有世界以來, 既沒有一家一國是完全沒有宗教的, 這就是默認, 每人心上總刻有多少對上帝的意識。

There is within the human mind, and indeed by natural instinct, an awareness of divinity (divinitatis sensum). This we take to be beyond controversy. To prevent anyone form taking refuge in the pretence of ignorance, God himself has implanted in all men a certain understanding of his divine majesty. Ever renewing its memory, he repeatedly sheds fresh drops. Since, therefore, men one and all perceive that there is a God and that he is their Maker, they are *condemned by their own testimony* because they have failed to honor him and to consecrate their lives to his will. If ignorance of God is to be looked for anywhere, surely one is most likely to find an example of it among the more backward folk and those more remote from civilization. Yet there is, as the eminent pagan says, no nation so barbarous, no people so savage, that they have not a deep-seated conviction that there is a God. And they who in other aspects of life seem least to differ from brutes still continue to retain some seed of religion. So deeply does the common conception occupy the minds of all, so tenaciously does it inhere in the hearts of all! Therefore, since from the beginning of the world there has been no region, no city, in short, no household, that could do without religion, there lies in this a tacit confession of a sense of deity inscribed in the hearts of all.

偶像崇拜本身便足以證明這看法。因為我們知道,人是多麼不願意貶抑自己以高舉其他受造之物的。人以敬拜一塊木頭或石頭,總覺比沒有上帝好些,正足以證明人心對上帝有深刻的印象,要消減這種印象,比完全改變人的本性還要困難呢。人丟棄本性上的驕傲,自甘卑下到拜上帝的地步,這真是本性改變了。

Indeed, *even idolatry is ample proof* of this conception. We know how man does not willingly humble himself so as to place other creatures over himself. Since, then, he prefers to worship wood and stone rather than to be thought of as having no God, clearly this is a most vivid impression of a divine being. So impossible is it to blot this from man's mind that natural disposition would be more easily altered, as altered indeed it is when man voluntarily sinks from his natural haughtiness to the very depths in order to honor God!

(部份重譯:)「我們相信,人人在心裏都有上帝的意識 (sense of divinity);不但如此,對這個意識還有一種自然的傾向。因為上帝要使人無可推諉,所以在每一個人心中刻印了對祂的認識,而且常常加深這個回憶。上帝使這種知識在我們裏面煉淨,因此我們從始至終都知道,宇宙中有一位上帝,是祂創造了我們。我們因自己見證而自我定罪,因為我們沒有尊崇祂,也沒有將自己的生命獻給祂,順服祂。」

"We think it beyond doubt that men have a sense of divinity in them, nay even of a natural movement (thereto). For so that none should take refuge in the plea of ignorance, God has imprinted in everyone a knowledge of himself, the recollection of which he renews in us, distilling it as it were drop by drop, so that, seeing that we know form first to last that there is a God and that he made us, we should be condemned by our own knowledge that we had not honoured him and had not dedicated our lives in obedience to him." 1.3.1.

### ccn-tv.com 加爾文基督教要義卷 1-7

### 上帝的啟示到處可見;上帝從來不會沒有見證者 GOD'S REVELATION CAN BE SEEN EVERYWHERE; GOD IS NEVER WITHOUT A WITNESS

### **Preface to Bible of Olivetan**

(新譯:)

「在宇宙的每一角落,天和地,都有可以說有上帝的「筆錄」,上面刻著祂權能,良善,智慧與永恆的榮耀。因此聖保羅所說的誠然是真的:「上帝從來沒有不留下祂的見證人,甚至對那些上帝沒有賜下祂話語的知識的人,也是如此。因為所有受造之物,從穹蒼到地極,都可以是上帝對人類的見證者,全然者,在述說祂的榮耀,吸引人去尋求祂,找到祂之後按照祂所配得的尊貴去服事祂,尊崇祂,因為祂是一位多麼良善,有能,智慧和永在的主。受造之物在見證上帝這事上還彼此幫助呢。因為小鳥向上帝歌唱,動物愛戴祂,風雨敬畏祂,大山在祂面前回響,河流泉源都不時仰望祂,花草都在祂面前微笑。因此事實上我們不需要從遠處尋求上帝,因為我們已經看到,每一個人都可以在自己的裏面找到上帝,因為我們都被上帝在我們裏面不斷所作的善工所托住,我們每一刻都是靠祂存留的。」

"In every part of the world, in heaven and on earth, he has written and as it were engraven the glory of his power, goodness, wisdom and eternity. Truly indeed, then, has St. Paul said that the Lord never left himself without a witness, even to those to whom he has sent no knowledge of his word. For all creatures, from the firmament even to the centre of the earth, could be witnesses and messengers of his glory to all men, drawing them on to seek him and, having found him, to do him service and honour according to the dignity of a Lord so good, so potent, wise and everlasting; they were even helping each one in his place upon that quest. For the little singing birds sang of God, the animals accalimed him, the elements feared and the mountains resounded with him, the rivers and springs threw glances toward him, the grasses and the flowers smiled. So that in truth there was no need to seek him afar, seeing that everyone could find him within himself, inasmuch as we are all sustained and preserved by his virtue abiding in us." Preface, *Bible of Olivetan*, Opp., 9, 793-5.

# 1.5.1 人一睜開眼就能看見上帝在大自然的啟示 WHE MAN OPENS HIS EYES, HE CANNOT BE SE GOD'S REVELATION IN CREATION From 1.5.1

(重譯:)

「上帝藉著天地這麼美妙的結構向人啟示祂自己, 在宇宙中每天向人顯明自己,表現自己,因此人一睜開眼睛,就不能沒有責任去看見祂。」

"God has so manifested himself (to men), in such a beautiful and exquisite edifice of heaven and earth, showing and presenting himself there every day, that they cannot open their eyes without being obliged to perceive him." 1.5.1.

### 1.3.3 無上帝是不可能的

### **GODLESSNESS IS IMPOSSIBLE 1.3.3**

在通達人看來,**上帝的觀念刻在人的心版上,乃是很明顯的事實。**人人在天性中都有上帝存在的信念,根深蒂固有如人體之一部,我們從惡人的拼命想免除對上帝的恐懼而終歸無效一事,可以找到許多證據。雖然狄亞哥羅(Diagoras)之流的人,嘲笑各時代都相信的宗教,雖然丟尼修(Dionysius)嘲笑天的審判,這都不過是強為歡笑而已,因為他們受有罪的良心所苦,更甚於受熱鐵的燒灼

(修: 他們受良心繼續的折磨和腐蝕甚於熱鐵的燒灼)。我不同意西色柔所說的,錯誤日久則消滅,而宗教則逐日改善,有增無已。因為不久我們就要提及,世界正在極力排除一切對上帝的認識,又用盡方法破壞對他的敬拜。我僅說,惡人因為想用愚昧來助長輕視上帝之心,因而感受困擾,他們所切心要消滅的上帝的觀念,不但加強,而且不時表露出來。所以我們可以說,這個教理不是在學校裏學來,乃是各人有生以來自己學會的,也是許多人雖想竭力消滅它,而本性卻不讓任何人忘掉的教理。

Men of sound judgment will always be sure that a sense of divinity which can never be effaced is engraved upon men's minds. Indeed, the perversity of the impious, who though they struggle furiously are unable to extricate themselves form the fear of God, is abundant testimony that this conviction, namely, that there is some God, is naturally inborn in all, and is fixed deep within, as it were in the very marrow. Although Diagoras and his like may jest at whatever has been believed in every age concerning religion, and Dionysius may mock the heavenly judgment, this is sardonic laughter, for the worm of conscience, sharper than any cauterizing iron, gnaws away within. I do not say, as Cicero did, that errors disappear with the lapse of time, and that religion grows and becomes better each day. For the world (something will have to be said of this a little later) tries as far as it is able to cast away all knowledge of God, and by every means to corrupt the worship of him. I only say that though the stupid hardness in their minds, which the impious eagerly conjure up to reject God, wastes away, yet the sense of divinity, which they greatly wished to have extinguished, thrives and presently burgeons. From this we conclude that it is not a doctrine that must first be learned in school, but one of which each of us is master from his mother's womb and which nature itself permits no one to forget, although many strive with every nerve to this end.

那麼,人若是為認識上帝而生,而對上帝的認識若不達到這目的就是不可靠而無用的,這樣,人所想所行若不是朝著這方向走,就是與他們被造的定律相反,這是顯而易見的,關於這一點,異教的哲學家們並非不知道。柏拉圖的意思是: 靈魂的至善在於與上帝相類似,而靈魂對祂既有了清楚的認識,就完全改變,成為祂的樣子。這也是格裹盧(Gryllus)在蒲魯他克(Plutarch)的著作中的非常正確的推理,就是說,人而無宗教,不僅與禽獸無殊,而且在許多方面招惹罪惡,始終在紛擾不安的生活中度日,以致比禽獸更為可憐。因此,惟有敬拜上帝可以使人超乎禽

### 獸,又使人有永生的指望。(修:因此,*就是因為人敬拜上帝,所以他是超乎動* 物,透過敬拜,人追求永生。)

Besides, if all men are born and live to the end that they may know God and yet if knowledge of God is unstable and fleeting unless it progresses to this degree, it is clear that all those who do not direct every thought and action in their lives to this goal degenerate from the law of their creation. This was not unknown to the philosophers. Plato meant nothing but this when he often taught that the highest good of the soul is likeness to God, where, when the soul has grasped the knowledge of God, it is wholly transformed into his likeness. In the same manner also Gryllus, in the writings of Plutarch, reasons very skillfully, affirming that, if once religion is absent from their life, men are in no wise superior to brute beasts, but are in many respects far more miserable. Subject, then, to so many forms of wickedness, they drag out their lives in ceaseless tumult and disquiet. Therefore, it is worship of God alone that renders men higher than the brutes, and through it alone they aspire to immortality.

人類的邪惡,歪曲,無知,忽略上帝在創造的榮美: 上帝賜真知識給人,可是人須要聖靈的光照,僅靠自然不夠 MANKIND IS WICKED, PERVERTED, IGNORANT, NEGLECT GLORY IN CREATION: GOD GRANTS TRUE KNOWLEDGE, BUT MAN NEEDS ILLUMINATION BY SPIRIT; NATURE NOT **SUFFICIENT** 

### 徒 17: 27 注釋

"要叫他們尋求上帝,或者可以揣摩而得,其實他離我們各人不遠;

### (新譯:)

[人的無知與愚蠢與他們的邪惡摻雜,因此他們雖有謹慎的判斷,卻錯過 了上帝真正榮耀的一切印記,就是在天、在地燦爛地顯明的標記。我們既然知 道,真正認識上帝是上帝美善的特別恩惠,也知道真認識上帝所需的信心只從 聖靈的光照而來,因此我們的心思意念若只靠本性的帶領,是不能真正認識上 帝的。上

"There is such a perversity mixed with the ignorance of men and with their stupidity that, destitute of right judgment, they let pass by without any true feeling all the signs of the true glory of God, as shiningly manifest in heaven as upon earth. Seeing indeed that the true knowledge of God is a singular gift of his goodness, seeing also that the faith by which alone it is rightly known proceeds only from illumination by the Holy Spirit, it follows that our minds cannot enter into it by the guidance of nature alone." Opp., 48, 416 – Comm. Acts 17:27.

### Acts 17:27

<sup>27</sup> God did this so that men would seek him and perhaps reach out for him and find him, though he is not far from each one of us.

### 人(異教徒)的傾向: 敬拜偶像

MAN'S TENDENCY (PAGANS): IDOLATRY

### 羅 1: 22 注釋; 來 11: 6 注釋: 申命記講道

羅 1: 22

22 自稱為聰明,反成了愚拙,

#### 來 11: 6

<sup>6</sup> 人非有信,就不能得上帝的喜悅,因為到上帝面前來的人必須信有上帝,且信他 賞賜那尋求他的人。

### 人離開上帝,必然按自己的形象捏造假上帝; 異教徒敬拜的是偶像, 是假上帝

## Apart from God, Man will Manufacture Idols; the Pagans Worship False Gods

#### (新譯:)

「人類有一樣惡習,不只限於哲學家,就是在認識上帝這事上自以為智慧。世上每個國家的人都是如此自以為聰明。世上沒有人不把上帝的榮耀限制在他自己理解的觀念中,把上帝造成一個他可以藉感官來掌握的東西。|

#### 羅 1: 22

22 自稱為聰明,反成了愚拙,

"It is a vice that has been by no means peculiar to philosophers to think oneself wise in the knowledge of God, but one that is common to all nations and all states. For there is not one of them who has not wanted to confine the majesty of God within the conception of his own understanding and make a God such as he could grasp with his senses." Opp. 49, 25 – Comm. Romans 1:22.

Rom. 1: 22

<sup>22</sup> Although they claimed to be wise, they became fools

## 世上的宗教不可能真的認識上帝,都是虚妄,徒勞無功且有害處

The World's Religions Do Not Understand God Truly; They Are Vain and Harmful

(新譯:)

「人若不知道正確的道路的話,無論如何服事上帝都徒勞無功。而世界上的宗教,就是那些沒有對上帝真正的,確定的認識的宗教,他們的總和加起來不單是虚妄,而且是有害;因為那些不懂分辨真上帝和偶像的人,就無法到上帝那裏去的。」

#### 來 11:6

<sup>6</sup> 人非有信,就不能得上帝的喜悅;因為到上帝面前來的人必須信有上帝,且信他 賞賜那尋求他的人。

"Man labour in vain to serve God, if they do not know the right way, and that the religions that have nothing of the true and certain knowlwdge of God, all added together, are not only vain but harmful, for all those who do not distinguish God from idols are unable to have access to him." Opp. 55, 148 – Comm. Hebrews 11:6.

Heb. 11:6

And without faith it is impossible to please God, because anyone who comes to him must believe that he exists and that he rewards those who earnestly seek him.

## 異教徒所敬拜的,都是自己所想像的 THE PAGANS WORSHIP THEIR OWN IMAGINATIONS

### 申命記講道第55篇

55<sup>th</sup> Sermon on Deuteronomy

(新譯:)

「當異教徒說:『我敬拜上帝』的時候,他們說的都是荒謬。因為,他的意思 是什麼?只不過是夢,是幻想。因為,當人沒有認識上帝而認為自己在敬拜上帝的 時候,無疑地他們是在敬拜偶像。回教徒今天會說,他們在敬拜那位創造天地的上帝,可是他們只不過在敬拜一個偶像。」

"The pagans were talking nonsense when one of them said, 'I worship God.' For what did he mean by that? Dreams, fantasies. For when men profess to worship God without having known him, there is no doubt that they are worshipping idols. The Turks themselves will say today that they worship God the creator of heaven and earth, but it is only an idol that they worship." Opp, 26, 427: 55<sup>th</sup> sermon on Deuteronomy.

2.2.16 人文:哲學家有對上帝的認識的開端;加爾文:哲學家不一致,使人混淆;上帝給人關於祂的香氣;人無可推諉

HUMANITIES: PHILOSOPHERS HAVE BEGINNING OF KNOWLEDGE OF GOD; PHILOSOPHERS = INCONSISTENT, CONFUSE MEN; GOD GIVES THEM SAVOR OF HIMSELF, THEY'VE NO EXCUSE; BUT WHAT THEY SEE = FAR FROM THE TRUTH From 2.2.16

### 加爾文與人文主義者之分歧: 哲學家對上帝的想像是混亂的

(重譯:)

「我不否認在哲學家的作品中,散佈著一些零星的句子,寫得美,甚至可以說是上帝所賜的一般的恩賜。可是在這些言詞中,不斷混雜了互相矛盾的現象,所以他們對上帝只不過有些模糊不清的幻想而已。事實上上帝已讓他們略略嘗到祂的上帝性,因此他們不能以自己的無知為托辭,推託為什麼沒有寫一些可以說服自己相信上帝的話語。不過他們所看見的,是在那麼暗淡的光中看見,這些的知識不可能向他們宣講真理。他們離開真理非常的遠。」

"I do not deny that here and there we can see in the books of the philosophers some sentences said to be of God, well written; but in these there is always an appearance of such inconsistency that one can clearly see that they had only confused imaginings of him. It is true enough that God gave them some small savour of his divinity, so that they could not claim ignorance in excuse of his impiety, and without moving them to speak one of those sentences by which they might have been convinced; but what they did see they saw in such a light that it could not have addressed them to the truth. They are far from having attained it."

### 2.2.18 我們了解的有限

#### THE LIMITS OF OUR UNDERSTANDING 2.2.18

關於上帝與救恩:哲學家的斷言偶然有亮光的片斷, 因為上帝給他們上帝意識,因此他們沒有無知的藉口; 可是他們的著作充滿著謊言與混亂 RE.: KNOWLEDGE OF GOD AND SALVATION: PHILOSOPHERS – APT STATEMENTS, MOMENTARY FLASHES, BECAUSE GOD GAVE SENSE OF DIVINITY -> NO EXCUSE OF IGNORANCE; BUT: MONSTROUS LIES, CONFUSION

現在我們要研究,關於上帝的國和屬靈的智慧等問題,人的理智能夠發現些什麼。屬靈的智慧包括三件事,即:認識上帝,認我們所賴以得救的祂的父愛,和認識那依照律法規範生活的方法。雖最聰明的人對前兩點,特別是第二點,比鼴鼠還更 盲目。我不否認在哲學家的著作中,也**散見對上帝審慎而適當的見解,**不過他們*總是表現一種混亂的想像*。我說過,*主已經給了他們一些對於祂上帝性的感覺。好叫他們不能以無知為不信的託辭,有時還迫使他們吐露真情,叫他們以自己的口供定自己的罪。*但他們所見的不能使他們趨向真理,更不能達到真理;正如一個在曠野夜行的人,看見一道遙遠的閃光,這閃光一閃即滅,對他的夜行毫無補益;他還走不到一步,又重陷在黑暗中摸索。此外,他們的著作雖偶然含有些少真理,但其所含的虛偽更不知有多少。最後,他們竟毫不知道上帝所給我們的恩惠的確據;沒有這認識,人的知識勢必陷於模糊紛亂。因此,人的理性決不能接近,也決不會越向於這真理,庶幾認識誰是真實的上帝,和他向我們顯現自己的方式。

We must now analyze what human reason can discern with regard to God's kingdom and to spiritual insight. This spiritual insight consists chiefly in three things: (1) knowing God; (2) knowing his fatherly favor in our behalf, in which our salvation consists; (3) knowing how to frame our life according to the rule of his law. In the first two points – and especially in the second – the greatest geniuses are blinder than moles! Certainly I do not deny that one can read competent and apt statements about God here and there in the philosophers, but these always show a certain giddy imagination. As was stated above, the Lord indeed gave them a slight taste of his divinity that the might not hide their impiety under a cloak of ignorance. And sometimes he impelled them to make certain utterances by the confession of which they would themselves be corrected. But they saw things in such a way that their seeing did not direct them to the truth, much less enable them to attain it! They are like a traveler passing through a field at night who in a momentary lightning flash sees far and wide, but the sight vanishes so swiftly that he is plunged again into the darkness of the night before he can take even a step – let alone be directed on his way by its help. Besides, although they may chance to

sprinkle their books with *droplets of truth*, how *many monstrous lies defile them!* In short, they never even sensed that assurance of God's benevolence toward us (without which man's understanding can only be filled with boundless confusion). Human reason, therefore, neither approaches, nor strives toward, nor even takes a straight aim at, this truth: to understand who the true God is or what sort of God he wishes to be toward us.

墮落之後:認識上帝的意志有所缺欠,上帝只能咒詛人;人沒有能力來親近上帝;為自己的無能負

AFTER FALL: WILL TO KNOW GOD = DEPRIVED; GOD BUT CURSES MAN

MAN = CANNOT APPROACH GOD; RESPONSIBLE FOR INABILITY

卷一 第六章: 我們看見到處上帝的咒詛, 是公義的; 我們心思意念蒙蔽, 看不見真理

KNOWLEDGE OF GOD USELESS WITHOUT FAITH; WE SEE GOD'S CURSE EVERYWHEFRE – GOD JUSTLY DISOWNS US OUR BLIND MINDS DO NOT PERCEIVE WHAT IS TRUE

### 2.6.1 唯獨中保基督能幫助墮落的人

Only the Mediator helps fallen man

全人類都在亞當衰滅亡了,我們原來的尊貴於我們無益,我們陷於更甚的玷污,直到那否認人類腐化敗壞是祂工作的上帝,在祂獨生子裏面來作救贖者。所以,既然我們墮落,由生入死,那末,我們雖認識上帝為創造的主宰,也沒有用處,除非能繼之以信仰,在基督裏面認識上帝是我們的父。按著自然的秩序,世界的構造猶如一所學校,使我們學習虔敬,並因之導向永生和永遠的福樂。但自從墮落以後,我們眼光所及之處都充滿了上帝的咒詛,這咒詛既然使無辜的受造之物陷入我們罪債的漩渦裏,就叫我們的心靈感覺非常失望。雖然上帝仍然用種種方法表示祂的父愛,我們仍不能由觀察世界而斷定祂是我們的父,因為良心譴責我們,叫我們知道自己的罪足以使上帝丟棄我們,不再認我們為祂的兒女。我們的心遲鈍,因為我們的心瞎眼了看不見真理,並且我們的全部感官既然都扭曲了,我們的科學就強取了上帝的榮耀。

The whole human race perished in the person of Adam. Consequently that original excellence and nobility which we have recounted would be of no profit to us but would rather redound to our greater shame, until God, who does not recognize as his handiwork men defiled and corrupted by sin, appeared as Redeemer in the person of his only-begotten Son. Therefore, since we have fallen from life into death, the whole knowledge of God the Creator that we have discussed would be useless unless faith also followed, setting forth for us God our Father in Christ. The natural order was that the frame of the

universe should be the school in which we were to learn piety, and from it pass over to eternal life and perfect felicity. But after man's rebellion, our eyes – wherever they turn – encounter God's curse. This curse, while it seizes and envelopes innocent creatures through our fault, must overwhelm our souls with despair. For even if God wills to manifest his fatherly favor to us in many ways, yet we cannot by contemplating the universe infer that he is Father. Rather, conscience presses us within and shows in our sin just cause for his disowning us and not regarding or recognizing us as his sons. Dullness and ingratitude follow, for our minds, as they have been blinded, do not perceive what is true. And as all our senses have become perverted, we wickedly defraud God of his glory.

所以我們必須贊同保羅的聲明:「人憑自己的智慧,既不認識上帝,上帝就樂意用人所當作愚拙的福音,拯救那些信的人;這就是上帝的智慧了」林前 1:21)。他們所謂上帝的智慧,是指充滿無數上帝跡的壯麗天地,叫我們應當從觀看這一切而認識上帝。但因為我們在這方面的進步太少,他就提醒我們信仰基督,這就是那因為好似愚拙而被不信之人藐視的信仰。

### 林前 1: 21

<sup>21</sup> 世人憑自己的智慧,既不認識上帝,上帝就樂意用人所當作愚拙的道理,拯救那些信的人:這就是上帝的智慧了。

We must, for this reason, come to Paul's statement: "Since in the wisdom of God the world did not know God through wisdom, it pleased God through the folly of preaching to save those who believe" [I Cor. 1:21]. This magnificent theater of heaven and earth, crammed with innumerable miracles, Paul calls the "wisdom of God." Contemplating it, we ought in wisdom to have known God. But because we have profited so little by it, he calls us to the faith of Christ, which, because it appears foolish, the unbelievers despise.

#### I Cor. 1:21

<sup>21</sup> For since in the wisdom of God the world through its wisdom did not know him, God was pleased through the foolishness of what was preached to save those who believe.

宣講十字架的道理是不符合人的意願的;我們必須謙卑的接 受十字架的道理回歸上帝

因此:基督白白的恩典,向邪惡的世人提供了永生

PREACHING OF CROSS = AGAINST OUR WILL; WE MUST EMBRACE IT TO RETURN TO GOD

THUS: OFFERING HEAVEN TO ALL W/O GRACE OF CHRIST = VILE

所以,我們若要回到我們所疏遠了的,那創造我們的上帝面前,求祂重新作我們的父,那麼,十字架的道理雖是不合乎人的理性,我們還是應以謙虛之心接受。自從第一個亞當墮落以後,若不藉著中保,就不能有對上帝的認識,而使我們得救。基督所說:「認識你獨一的真上帝,並且認識你所差來的耶穌基督,這就是永生」(約 17: 3),不僅是指祂那世代,而是包括萬代。《聖經》一致以基督為唯一拯救的門,所以有人不顧基督的恩典,而為不信者和俗人大開拯救的天門,是徒然加重了他們的愚蠢。如果有人以為基督這句話局限於他宣傳福音的時代,我們就準備加以駁斥。那離棄上帝,被咒詛和被稱為忿怒之子的人,若不經復和決得不著祂的喜悅,這是各世代各民族的共同意見。

#### 羅 1: 16

<sup>16</sup> 我不以福音為恥;這福音本是上帝的大能,要救一切相信的,先是猶太人,後是 希利尼人

### 哥前 1: 24

<sup>24</sup> 世人憑自己的智慧,既不認識上帝,上帝就樂意用人所當作愚拙的道理,拯救那些信的人:這就是上帝的智慧了。

#### 約17:3

3 認識你—獨一的真上帝,並且認識你所差來的耶穌基督,這就是永生。

#### 約10:9

9 我就是門:凡從我進來的,必然得救,並目出入得草吃。

### 弗 4: 18

18 他們心地昏昧,與上帝所賜的生命隔絕了,都因自己無知,心裏剛硬;

#### 加 3: 10

<sup>10</sup> 凡以行律法為本的,都是被咒詛的;因為經上記著:凡不常照律法書上所記一切 之事去行的,就被咒詛。

#### 弗 2: 3

<sup>3</sup> 我們從前也都在他們中間,放縱肉體的私慾,隨著肉體和心中所喜好的去行,本 為可怒之子,和別人一樣。

Therefore, although *the preaching of the cross does not agree with our human inclination*, if we desire to return to God our Author and Maker, from whom we have been estranged, in order that he may again begin to be our Father, we ought nevertheless to *embrace it humbly*. Surely, after the fall of the first man no knowledge of God apart from the Mediator has had power unto salvation [cf. Rom. 1:16; I Cor. 1:24]. For Christ

not only speaks of his own age, but comprehends all ages when he says: "This is eternal life, to know the Father to be the one true God, and Jesus Christ whom he has sent" [John 17:3 p.]. Thus, all the more vile is the stupidity of those persons who open heaven to all the impious and unbelieving without the grace of him whom Scripture commonly teaches to be the only door whereby we enter into salvation [John 10:9]. But if anyone would like to restrict this statement of Christ to the publishing of the gospel, there is a ready refutation: it was the common understanding of all ages and all nations that men who have become estranged from God [cf. Eph. 4:18] and have been declared accursed [cf. Gal. 3:10] and children of wrath [cf. Eph. 2:3] without reconciliation cannot please God.

#### Rom. 1:16

<sup>16</sup> I am not ashamed of the gospel, because it is the power of God for the salvation of everyone who believes: first for the Jew, then for the Gentile.

#### I Cor. 1: 24

<sup>24</sup> but to those whom God has called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ the power of God and the wisdom of God.

#### John 17:3

<sup>3</sup> Now this is eternal life: that they may know you, the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom you have sent.

### John 10:9

I am the gate; whoever enters through me will be saved. [a] He will come in and go out, and find pasture.

### Eph. 4:18

They are darkened in their understanding and separated from the life of God because of the ignorance that is in them due to the hardening of their hearts.

#### Gal. 3:10

<sup>10</sup> All who rely on observing the law are under a curse, for it is written: "Cursed is everyone who does not continue to do everything written in the Book of the Law." [c]

#### Eph. 2:3

<sup>3</sup>All of us also lived among them at one time, gratifying the cravings of our sinful nature [a] and following its desires and thoughts. Like the rest, we were by nature objects of wrath.

### ccn-tv.com 加爾文基督教要義卷 1-8

上帝賜《聖經》給人,不是要滿足他的好奇心,乃是 要教導美好的教義,安慰我們,勸誡我們,使我們完全行各 樣善事:《聖經》造就我們,要我們信靠上帝,敬畏上帝, 認識上帝取自《日內瓦聖經》序言

God Gave Bible Not to Satisfy Curiosity, But to Teach Good Doctrine, To Comfort, Exhort Us to Do Good, Edify Us to Trust, Fear, Know God From the Preface to the Geneva Bible

#### (新譯:)

「**上帝賜《聖經》給我們,不是為了滿足我們愚拙的好奇心或野心。** 保羅告 訴我們《聖經》是有益的;為什麼?*為了教導(訓)我們美好的教義,安慰我們,勸* **滅我們使人歸正,使我們在每一件善事上完全, 教導人學義。**因此,讓我們從《聖 經》裏得到這些的好處。若有人問我們:我們從《聖經》所應得的造就(生活)是什 麼?我們回答:總的來說就是,我們藉著《聖經》信靠上帝,走敬畏祂的道路(生 活)。再者,耶穌基督既成全了律法和先知,耶穌基督是福音的本體(實質),我們 心中應無其他的願望,只盡心的認識祂。」

### 提後 3: 16-17

16《聖經》都是上帝所默示的(或作:凡上帝所默示的《聖經》),於教訓、督 責、使人歸正、教導人學義都是有益的,

"The Scripture is not given us to satisfy our foolish curiosity or to serve our ambition. But it is useful St. Paul tells us; and why? To teach us good doctrine, to console us, exhort us and render us perfect in every good work. So to that use let us put it. If we are asked: what is all this edification that we ought to receive from it, the answer, in a word, is that we learn thereby to put our trust in God and to walk in fear of him. And, inasmuch as Jesus Christ is the fulfilment of the Law and the Prophets and is the substance of the Gospel, that we incline towards no other end but to know him." Opp. 9, 825: Preface to the Geneva edition of the Bible.

#### 2 Tim 3:16

<sup>16</sup> All Scripture is God-breathed and is useful for teaching, rebuking, correcting and training in righteousness,

<sup>17</sup> 叫屬上帝的人得以完全,預備行各樣的善事。

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>17</sup> so that the man of God may be thoroughly equipped for every good work.

### 《威敏斯特信條》 The Westminster Confession of Faith

### 第一章 論《聖經》

## Chapter 1 THE HOLY SCRIPTURE

### 《聖經》的必須性

### The Necessity of Scripture:

- 一、雖然自然之光 (light of nature)、上帝的創造、護理工作彰顯上帝的善良、智慧、權能,叫人無可推諉 (a),卻不足以使人認識上帝及其旨意,以致得救 (b)。所以上帝願意多次多方將自己向祂的教會啟示,並向教會宣佈祂的旨意 (c);之後為了更加保守、傳揚真理,更加堅立、安慰教會,抵擋肉體的敗壞、撒但與世界的惡意,就把這些全部記載下來 (d),因此《聖經》是最必需要的 (e),因為上帝先前啟示祂旨意給祂百姓的方法,現在已經不再有新的啟示了 (f)。
- 1. Although the light of nature and the works of creation and providence manifest the goodness, wisdom, and power of God, to such an extent that men are without excuse (a), yet they are not sufficient to give that knowledge of God and of his will which is necessary for salvation (b). Therefore it pleased the Lord, at various times and in diverse ways, to reveal himself and to declare his will to his church (c): and afterward for the better preserving and propagating of the truth, and for the more sure establishment and comfort of the church against the corruption of the flesh and the malice of Satan and of the world to commit this revelation wholly to writing (d). Therefore Holy Scripture is most necessary (e), God's former ways of revealing his will to his people having ceased (f).

### 《聖經》的正典,與旁經

### The Canon of Scripture and Apocrypha:

二、稱為《聖經》,或「記載下來的聖言」的,包括舊新約全書,即舊約 39 卷,新約 27 卷 (書卷名從略)。這些書都是上帝所默示的 (g) ,作信仰與生活的準則。 2. Under the name of Holy Scripture, or the written Word of God, are all the books of the Old and New Testaments, namely: (names of 66 books – omitted here) All these are given by inspiration of God to be the rule of faith and life (g).

- 三、通稱為「旁經」的各卷書,不是上帝的默示,所以不屬《聖經》正典,在上帝的教會中沒有權威,不能認為它高過其他人的著作而使用(h)。
- 3. The books commonly called the Apocrypha, because they are not divinely inspired, are not part of the canon of Scripture, and therefore are of no authority in the church of God and are not to be approved, or made use of, in any manner different from other human writings (h).

### 信服《聖經》權威的根據: 上帝為作者

Basis of Scripture's Authority: God Its Author

四、我們應信服《聖經》的權威,這權威不在乎任何人或教會的見證,乃完全在乎上帝(祂自己就是真理)。上帝是《聖經》的作者,所以我們應當接受《聖經》,因為《聖經》是上帝的話(i)。

4. The authority of the Holy Scripture, because of which it ought to be believed and obeyed, does not depend upon the testimony of any man or church, but entirely upon God, its author (who is truth itself); therefore it is to be received, because it is the Word of God (i).

五、我們可能受教會的見證的感動與影響,因而高舉聖經、敬重《聖經》(k)。對《聖經》屬天的性質、教義的效力、文體的莊嚴、各部的一致、整體的要旨(將一切的榮耀歸給上帝),人類惟一得救之道的完整彰顯,和其他許多無比卓越、全然完美之處,都足以證明《聖經》本身就是上帝的話。雖然如此,最讓我們完全確信《聖經》無謬真理與屬上帝權威的原因,是聖靈在我們心中作見證,藉著上帝的話在我們心中所作的見證,也與上帝的話在我們心中一同作見證(l)。

5. We may be moved and induced by the testimony of the church to a high and reverent esteem for the Holy Scripture (k). The heavenly character of its content, the efficacy of its doctrine, the majesty of its style, the agreement of all its parts, the scope of the whole (which is to give all glory to God), the full disclosure it makes of the only way of man's salvation, its many other incomparable excellencies, and its entire perfection, are arguments by which it gives abundant evidence that it is the Word of God. Nevertheless, our full persuasion and assurance of its infallible truth and divine authority is from the inward work of the Holy Spirit bearing witness by and with the Word in our hearts (l).

《聖經》的完備性,聖靈光照的必須,和《聖經》規則管理的教會, 社團詳情:

The Sufficiency of Scripture, Necessity for Spirit's Illumination, and Matters Concerning Church Government, etc.:

六、上帝全備的旨意,與上帝自己的榮耀、人的得救,信仰、和生活有關的一切必要之事,《聖經》都明明記載,或是可以用正當且必要的推論,從《聖經》引申出

- 來。所以無論在任何時刻都不可加添;無論是藉著「聖靈的新啟示」,或憑人的遺傳,都不能加添《聖經》的內容成為最高權威(m)。不過我們承認: (1)除非聖靈在我們裹面光照我們,否則我們對《聖經》啟示的上帝全備旨意,即使有某種程度的認識,這樣的認識也不足以使我們得救(n);(2)有時候上帝和教會行政,也與人類的行事為人原則有相通,這時我們就應該用人的「自然之光」、基督徒的判斷、按照《聖經》的一般規則(這原是我們應該一直遵守的)來規定有關敬拜上帝、教會行政的相關事務(o)。
- 6. The whole counsel of God concerning all things necessary for his own glory and man's salvation, faith, and life, is either expressly stated in Scripture or by good and necessary inference may be deduced from Scripture, unto which nothing at any time is to be added, whether by new revelations of the Spirit or by traditions of men (m). Nevertheless, we acknowledge that the inward illumination of the Spirit of God is necessary for the saving understanding of such things as are revealed in the Word (n). We also acknowledge that there are some circumstances concerning the worship of God and the government of the church circumstances common to human activities and societies which are to be ordered by the light of nature and Christian prudence, according to the general rules of the Word, which are always to be observed (o).

### 《聖經》的清晰性,與理解《聖經》的普通方法:

The Clarity (Perspicuity) of Scripture, and Ordinary Means to Understand Scripture

- 七、《聖經》的內容並不是每個地方都同樣清楚,也不是對每個人都同樣明白 (p);但是得救所必須知道、相信、遵守的事,我們總能在《聖經》找到,而且解 釋得非常清楚明白;不但有學問的人,就是無學問的人,不必用什麼巧妙的辨法,只要用一般的方法,就能充分理解 (q)。
- 7. Not all things in Scripture are equally plain in themselves or equally clear to all (p); yet those things which are necessary to be known, believed, and observed for salvation are so clearly stated and explained in one place or another in Scripture, that not only the educated but also the uneducated may gain a sufficient understanding of them by a proper use of the ordinary means (q).

### 《聖經》的語言與可靠性,及翻譯《聖經》之必需

The Language of Scripture, Its Reliability, and Need for Translation into Ordinary People's Languages

八、舊約是用希伯來文寫成(這是古時上帝選民的母語),新約是用希臘寫成(這是當時各國最通行的語言)。希伯來文舊約,和希臘文新約,都是受上帝直接的默示,因此上帝在歷世歷代都以獨特的方式照顧護理,保守純正,所以是真確的(r);一切信仰上的爭議,教會最後都要以《聖經》為最高依歸(s)。但因上帝的百

姓並不都通曉這些《聖經》原文,可是他們對《聖經》都有權利,也都有份,而且上帝吩咐他們以敬畏上帝的態度誦讀查考《聖經》(t);所以凡《聖經》所到之處,都應譯成當地通行的語言(u),使上帝的話可以豐豐富富地存在眾人心裏,他們就可以用上帝所喜悅的方式敬拜祂(w),並可以因《聖經》所生的忍耐和安慰得著盼望(x)。

8. The Old Testament in Hebrew (which was the native language of the people of God of old) and the New Testament in Greek (which at the time it was written was the language most generally known to the nations), being directly inspired by God and by his unique care and providence kept pure in all ages, are therefore authoritative (r), so that in all controversies of religion the church is finally to appeal to them(s). But, because these original languages are not understood by all the people of God, who have a right to, and a vital interest in, the Scriptures and are commanded to read and search them in the fear of God (t), therefore the Scriptures are to be translated into the common language of every nation to which they come (u); so that, the Word of God dwelling abundantly in all, they may worship him in an acceptable manner (w) and by perseverance and the encouragement of the Scriptures may have hope (x).

### 解釋《聖經》的規則: 以經解經:

### The Rule of Interpreting Scripture: Interpret Scripture by Scripture:

九、只有一個解釋《聖經》的規則不會產生錯誤,就是以經解經。所以當我們對任何一處《聖經》的真實完整意義(每處《聖經》都只有一個意思,而沒有多種意思)有疑問時,就當查考《聖經》其他比較清楚的經文,以明白其真義(y)。

9. The infallible rule of interpretation of Scripture is the Scripture itself. Therefore, when there is a question about the true and full meaning of any Scripture (which is not manifold, but one), that meaning must be searched out and ascertained by other places that speak more clearly (y).

### 《聖經》裁判所有宗教爭論

### Scripture Final Authority for Religious Controversy

十、在處理信仰上一切爭論,教會會議一切決議、古代作者意見,人的道理、個人屬靈領受事務時,我們可以放心:其裁判最高審判者只有一位,就是在《聖經》中說話的聖靈(z)。

10. The supreme judge by whom all controversies of religion are to be settled and all decrees of councils, opinions of ancient writers, doctrines of men, and claims to private revelations are to be examined, can be only the Holy Spirit speaking in the Scripture. With his decision we are to be satisfied (z).

### 1.7.1 上帝在《聖經》裏向我們說話,發表祂的真理 GOD SPEAKS TO US IN SCRIPTURE: PUBLISHES HIS TRUTH

### Inst., 1.7.1

卷一 第七章:《聖經》必須由聖靈的見證證實。因此《聖經》的權威被證實;若教導說《聖經》的可信性是依靠教會的判斷,是邪惡的虛妄。

Scripture must be confirmed by the witness of the Spirit. Thus may its authority be established as certain; and it is a wicked falsehood that its credibility depends on the judgment of the Church.

### 1.7.1 《聖經》的權威來自上帝,不來自教會。

Scripture has its authority from God, not from the Church.

我在討論別的以前,應當先略為論及**《聖經》的權威,**不僅為著叫人尊敬《聖經》,也為了要掃除一切疑惑。《聖經》既被公認是上帝的話,除非一個人毫無常識和人性,否則誰都不敢荒唐僭妄,以致貶損那**發言者的可信性**。因為我們既不能每天從天上得到上帝論,而主也只在《聖經》中筆錄下來永遠保存了祂的真理,**所以信徒若信《聖經》肇端於上帝,那麼,《聖經》之對他們的信仰和權威,正如他們聽到上帝親自說話一般。**這個問題,真是值得從長討論,精細考查的。但我僅按本書計劃所許可的,而不按本題所需要涉及的來充份討論,這是要請讀者原諒的。

約5:39

<sup>39</sup> 你們查考聖經(或作:應當查考聖經),因你們以為內中有永生;給我作見證的就是這經。

Before I go any farther, it is worth-while to say something about *the authority of Scripture*, not only to prepare our hearts to reverence it, but to banish all doubt. When that which is set forth is acknowledged to be the Word of God, there is no one so deplorably insolent – unless devoid also both of common sense and of humanity itself – as to dare impugn *the credibility of Him who speaks*. Now daily oracles are not sent from heaven, for it pleased the Lord to hallow his truth to everlasting remembrance in the Scriptures alone [cf. John 5:39]. Hence *the Scriptures obtain full authority among believers only when men regarded them as having sprung from heaven, as if there the* 

*living words of God were heard.* This matter is very well worth treating more fully and weighing more carefully. But my readers will pardon me if I regard more what the plan of the present work demands than what the greatness of this matter requires.

John 5:39

<sup>39</sup> You diligently study<sup>[c]</sup> the Scriptures because you think that by them you possess eternal life. These are the Scriptures that testify about me,

可是,有一種流行而非常有害的大錯誤,就是以為《聖經》的權威限於教會 公意所給予的,仿佛上帝永恆而不可磨滅的真理,是以人武斷的意旨為基礎的。 他們存心藐視聖靈,居然質問: 誰敢保證上帝是《聖經》的作者呢? 誰敢確實保 證,《聖經》聖經保存至今而絕不失本來面目呢? 誰能使我們相信,這本書應該恭 敬接受,那本書應被刪除,除非經由教會的決議所規定呢? 所以他們說,如何尊 重《聖經》和如何選訂經典(修: 正典),都是由教會所決定的。這樣,褻瀆者 只要能夠強逼愚民承認教會可以為所欲為,他們就會假教會之名,肆行專斷,全不 顧及自己以何等的荒唐使自己和別人受困惑。如果《聖經》對永生的一切應許不過 以人的判斷為根據,那麼,那些良心難過,想尋求永生保證的人,將處何境地呢? 是否他們接受了這樣的答覆,就會消除猶豫和恐怖呢?倘若《聖經》只具有以人意 見為基礎的不可靠的權威,試問,不敬的人將怎樣譏消我們的信仰,而使大家懷疑 《聖經》呢?

But a most *pernicious error* widely prevails that Scripture has only so much weight as is conceded to it by the consent of the church. As if the eternal and inviolable truth of God depended upon the decision of men! For they mock the holy Spirit when they ask: Who can convince us that these writings came from God? Who can assure us that Scripture has come down whole and intact even to our very day? Who can persuade us to receive one book in reverence but to exclude another, unless the church prescribe a sure rule for all these matters? What reverence is due Scripture and what books ought to be reckoned within its canon depend, they say, upon the determination of the church. Thus these sacrilegious men, wishing to impose an u bridled tyranny under the cover of the church, do not care with what absurdities they ensnare themselves and others, provided they can force this one idea upon the simple-minded: that the church has authority in all things. Yet, if this is so, what will happen to miserable consciences seeking firm assurance of eternal life if all promises of it consist in and depend solely upon the judgment of men? Will they cease to vacillate and tremble when they receive such an answer? Again, to what mockeries of the impious is our faith subjected, into what suspicion has it fallen among all men, if we believe that it has a precarious authority dependent solely upon the good pleasure of men!

4.8.9 聖靈的默示: 使徒們是聖靈的記錄者 (notaries); 使徒以後的傳道人,只不過宣講《聖經》裏所印的教導

HOLY SPIRIT'S INSPIRATION: APOSTLES ARE MERLEY SPIRIT'S NOTARIES: PREACHERS AFTER APOSTLES ONLY TEACH WHAT IS SEALED IN SCRIPTURE 4.8.9

### (新譯: )要句:

「使徒們不過是聖靈的合法(法庭)書記員經過宣誓之後,因此他們所寫下的《聖經》真實的是聖靈的真理;使徒們以後的人牧師們,只是被委任託付教導在《聖經》裏所讀到的話而已。」

### Key Statement:

"The apostles were only the sworn notaries of the Holy Spirit, so that their Scriptures might be held authentic; the successors have no other commission than to teach what they find contained in the Holy Scriptures." 4.8.9.

#### 連使徒們也不可隨意超越《聖經》:後來的人更加不 4.8.9 可

Apostles not free to go beyond the Word: much less their successors

使徒們言講的教義都是根據從上帝所領受的,因此教會學到純正的道 理: 我們必須排除萬難, 保存上帝論令的權威: 這是屬靈武器(林後 10: 4-5)

APOSTLES MPART WORD AS FROM GOD -> CHURCH LEARNS PURE WORD; REMOVE ALL OBSTACLES, THAT GOD'S DECREES REMAIN IN FORCE THIS IS SPIRITUAL WEAPON (II Cor. 10:4-5)

根據這樣,彼得-他從主領受教導,知道應如何作-沒有為自己或他人保留 什麼不說,他*宣講了從上帝領受的一切教義*。他說: 「若有講道的,要按著上帝 的聖言講」(彼前 4: 11); 意思是說,不要拖延,不要懼怕,這是邪惡的良心講 話的習慣;*一位滿有從上帝領受確實命令的僕人應滿有膽量。這*裏的意思豈不是 說,**要拒絕一切人為思想的創作(不論從誰的思想而發),好叫上帝純正的聖言 在信徒的教會中被教導,被學習**? 意思就是說,我們須排除人為的指示和創作 (不論他們的等級多高),好讓上帝曉諭的權威存留。《聖經》的話是攻破一切營 壘的屬靈武器;上帝的精兵靠它們攻破一切叫人自高自大,阻擋人認識上帝的思 想,好叫一切的心思意念信服基督(林後10:4-5,參注釋)。

### 彼前 4: 11

11 若有講道的,要按著上帝的聖言講;若有服事人的,要按著上帝所賜的力量服 事,叫上帝在凡事上因耶穌基督得榮耀。原來榮耀、權能都是他的,直到永永遠 遠。阿們!

#### 林後 10:4-5

- 4 我們爭戰的兵器本不是屬血氣的,乃是在上帝面前有能力,可以攻破堅固的營
- 5 將各樣的計謀,各樣攔阻人認識上帝的那些自高之事,一概攻破了,又將人所有 的心意奪回, 使他都順服基督。

Accordingly, Peter, who was well instructed by the Master as to how much he should do, reserves nothing else for himself or others except to *impart the doctrine as it* had been handed down by God. "Let him who speaks," he says, "speak only the words of God" [I Pet. 4:11]; that is, not hesitatingly and tremblingly as evil consciences are accustomed to speak, but with the high confidence which befits a servant of God furnished with his sure commands. What is this but to reject all inventions of the human mind (from whatever brain they have issued) in order that God's pure Word may be taught and learned in the believers' church? What is it but to remove the ordinances, or rather inventions of all men (whatever their rank), in order that the decrees of God alone may remain in force? These are those spiritual "weapons ... with power form God to demolish strongholds"; by them God's faithful soldiers "destroy stratagems and every height that rises up against the knowledge of God, and take every thought captive to obey Christ" [II Cor. 10:4-5, Comm.].

#### I Pet. 4:11

<sup>11</sup> If anyone speaks, he should do it as one speaking the very words of God. If anyone serves, he should do it with the strength God provides, so that in all things God may be praised through Jesus Christ. To him be the glory and the power for ever and ever. Amen.

#### II Cor. 10: 4 - 5

- <sup>4</sup> The weapons we fight with are not the weapons of the world. On the contrary, they have divine power to demolish strongholds.
- <sup>5</sup> We demolish arguments and every pretension that sets itself up against the knowledge of God, and we take captive every thought to make it obedient to Christ.

### 教會的牧師們領受了上帝話語的主權能力;靠上帝的話有膽 量作一切的事

CHURCH'S PASTORS = ENDOWED WITH SOVEREIGN POWER OF GOD'S WORD; DARE TO DO ALL THINGS BY GOD'S WORD

這裏我們看到教會的牧師們,不論他們的頭銜,應當領受怎樣的屬靈能 力。他們應該充滿膽量,根據上帝的話作一切的事:呼籲所有屬世的權柄、榮 耀、智慧、和在位者在祂的威嚴面前降服,來順服祂;靠祂能力的支持,吩咐從 最高的到最低的: 建立基督的家, 攻破撒但的權勢: 餵養基督的羊, 驅逐豺狼: 教導,勸勉那些受教的;指控、責備、馴服那些背逆的,頑固的;釋放,束縛; 若有需要,大發雷霆;但一切都須按上帝的話而作。

Here, then, is the sovereign power with which the pastors of the church, by whatever name they be called, ought to be endowed. That is that they may dare boldly to do all things by God's Word; may compel all worldly power, glory, wisdom, and exaltation to yield to and obey his majesty; supported by his power, may command all from the highest even to the last; may build up Christ's household and cast down Satan's; may feed the sheep and drive away the wolves; may instruct and exhort the teachable; may accuse, rebuke, and subdue the rebellious and stubborn: may bind and loose; finally, if need be, may launch thunderbolts and lightings; but do all things in God's Word.

1.7.4 認識上帝 = 領受《聖經》所教導的; 聖靈與《聖經》同作見證,印證在我們心中 KNOWING = RECEIVING WHAT SCRIPTURE TEACHES; SPIRIT BEARS WITNESS, SEALS SCRIPTURE IN HEARTS 1.7.4

### 1.7.4 聖靈的見證比任何證據更有力

The witness of the Holy Spirit: this is stronger than all proof

正如我在前面說過的,我們要堅信一條教理,必先相信上帝是這教理的創作者。*所以《聖經》的主要證據,*往往是從發言之上帝的性格得來(修*: 就是在於上帝在《聖經》衰親自說話這事實)。*眾先知和使徒並沒有誇耀自己的天才或取信聽眾的能力,也沒有堅持以理性為辯論的証據,他們不過宣揚上帝的聖名,使全世界順從祂而已。我們現在必須注意,這樣使用上帝的名義既不是草率,也不是荒唐;這是基於明證,而不是由於或然的揣測。我們為求良心的好處,使良心不動搖,也不因最小的事而猶豫顧慮,我們對《聖經》的信念必須超乎人的理智,判斷或測度,即聖靈中的見證。若有上帝在天,祂就是律法,預言,和福音的作者,假如我們要辯論這一點的話,有許多事可供證明,雖然許多有學問而深於判斷的人窮其心思起來反對,可是他們除非廉恥喪盡,否則也得承認,《聖經》非常明顯地表現了,那在《聖經》中發言的乃是上帝,所以《聖經》中的教理都是出於上帝意。以下我們可以看出,《聖經》各卷都遠超乎其它著作。我們若以清潔的眼和正確的心去讀《聖經》。就可以立刻看到上帝的榮美,這尊嚴可以克服我們狂妄的矛盾,使我們順從祂。

We ought to remember what I said a bit ago: credibility of doctrine is not established until we are persuaded beyond doubt that God is its Author. Thus, the highest proof of Scripture derives in general from the fact that God in person speaks in it. The prophets and apostles do not boast either of their keenness or of anything that obtains credit for them as they speak; nor do they dwell upon rational proofs. Rather, they bring forward God's holy name, that by it the whole world may be brought into obedience to him. Now we ought to see how apparent it is not only by plausible opinion but by clear truth that they do not all upon God's name heedlessly or falsely. If we desire to provide in the best way for our consciences – that they may not be perpetually beset by the instability of doubt or vacillation, and that they may not also boggle at the smallest quibbles - we ought to seek our conviction in a higher place than human reasons, judgments, or conjectures, that is, in the secret testimony of the Spirit. True, if we wished to proceed by arguments, we might advance many things that would easily prove - if there is any god in heaven - that the law, the prophets, and the gospel come from him. Indeed, ever so learned men, endowed with the highest judgment, rise up in opposition and bring to bear and display all their mental powers in this debate. Yet, unless they

become hardened to the point of hopeless impudence, this confession will be wrested from them: that they see manifest signs of God speaking in Scripture. From this it is clear that the teaching of Scripture is from heaven. And a little later we shall see that all the books of Sacred Scripture far surpass all other writings. Yes, if we turn pure eyes and upright senses toward it, the majesty of God will immediately come to view, subdue our bold rejection, and compel us to obey.

可是,企圖以爭論產生對《聖經》的純正信仰,乃是不合理的舉動。我雖不善 辭令,但是若要我和那些存心炫耀自己才智,以削弱《聖經》的權威,藐視上帝的 最狡猾的人辯論,我相信將毫無困難塞住他們喋喋不休的口,只要駁倒他們的強辯 有任何用處的話,我也很容易抑制他們的驕傲,叫他們不敢再私下在暗角裏自誇。 我們即使為《聖經》辯護,使它不遭誹謗,這並不是說,我們就此能使他們心中得 著真敬虔所必須的保證。在庸俗人看來,宗教似乎是完全以意見為主,他們為避免 相信愚笨而無理智的事物起見,所以想要我們以理性證明,摩西和眾先知都是以上 帝的靈感而發言的。但我答覆說, **聖靈的見證高於一切理智。正如唯有上帝能為** 祂的話作見證,同樣,《聖經》在未經聖靈內心的見證所堅立,便得不著人的完 **全信任。**因此那藉先知說話的同一聖靈,務須進到我們心裏,叫我們深信他們所 說的是上帝付託他們的。下面所引的,即是最好的說明:「我加給你的靈,傳給你 的話,必不離你的口,也不離你的後裔與你後裔之後裔的口,從今直到永遠」(賽 59:21)。有些好人看見惡人毫無忌憚地發怨言反對上帝的話,自己卻不能隨時以 明確的證據去反駁他們,因而心裏甚為不安,好像聖靈沒有為之「印證」和「憑 據」 [林後 1: 22] 是為著虔誠者的信仰,除非聖靈光照以前,他們是常在疑團中動 搖的。

### 賽 59: 21

<sup>21</sup> 耶和華說:至於我與他們所立的約乃是這樣:我加給你的靈,傳給你的話,必不離你的口,也不離你後裔與你後裔之後裔的口,從今直到永遠;這是耶和華說的。

### 林後1:22

22 他又用印印了我們,並賜聖靈在我們心裏作憑據(原文是質)。

Yet they who strive to build up firm faith in Scripture through disputation are doing things backwards. For my part, although I do not excel either in great dexterity or eloquence, if I were struggling against the most crafty sort of despisers of God, who seek to appear shrewd and witty in disparaging Scripture, I am confident it would not be difficult for me to silence their clamorous voices. And if it were a useful labor to refute their cavils, I would with no great trouble shatter the boasts they mutter in their lurking places. But even if anyone clears God's Sacred Word from man's evil speaking, he will not at once imprint upon their hearts that certainty which piety requires. Since for unbelieving men religion seems to stand by opinion alone, they, in order not to believe anything foolishly or lightly, both wish and demand rational proof that Moses and the prophets spoke divinely. But I reply: *the testimony of the Spirit is more excellent than* 

all reason. For as God alone is a fit witness of himself in his Word, so also the Word will not find acceptance in men's hearts before it is sealed by the inward testimony of the Spirit. The same Spirit, therefore, who has spoken through the mouths of the prophets must penetrate into our hearts to persuade us that they faithfully proclaimed what had been divinely commanded. Isaiah very aptly expresses this connection in these words: "My Spirit which is in you, an the words that I have put in your mouth, and the mouths of your offspring, shall never fail" [Isa. 59:21 p.]. Some good folk are annoyed that a clear proof is not ready at hand when the impious, unpunished, murmur against God's Word. As if the Spirit were not called both "seal" and "guarantee" [II Cor. 1:22] in confirming the faith of the godly; because until he illumines their minds, they ever waver among many doubts!

#### II Cor. 1:22

set his seal of ownership on us, and put his Spirit in our hearts as a deposit, guaranteeing what is to come.

#### Isa. 59:21

<sup>21</sup> "As for me, this is my covenant with them," says the LORD. "My Spirit, who is on you, and my words that I have put in your mouth will not depart from your mouth, or from the mouths of your children, or from the mouths of their descendants from this time on and forever," says the LORD.

## 基督乃是《聖經》的目的與中心;我們只在基督裏認識上帝;

因此,要藉著《聖經》尋找基督

CHRIST = AIM AND CENTER OF SCRIPTURE; WE KNOW GOD ONLY IN CHRIST; THUS, FIND CHRIST IN SCRIPTURE

要在《聖經》裏尋找基督;不然,有學問也不能找到真理 Seek Christ in the Bible; Otherwise, the Learned Cannot Find Truth Comm. John 5:39

#### (新譯:)

「我們研讀《聖經》是要從這種心意來讀,就是在《聖經》裏找到基督。若從這個目標偏離,人雖然終生自我折磨在學術上研究《聖經》一倍子,也找不到真理,認識真理。沒有上帝真正的智慧,我們怎麼會有真正的智慧或學問呢?」

"The Scriptures must be read with this intention, that in them we find Christ. Whoever turns aside from this purpose, even though he torments himself with learning all his life long, will never attain to the knowledge of the truth. For what sagacity or intelligence can we have without the Wisdom of God?" Commentary John 5:39; Opp, 47, 125.

### ccn-tv.com 加爾文基督教要義卷 1-9

4.8.5 因為基督是上帝人之間唯一中保;

因此: 在基督(鏡子) 裹尋找上帝;

上帝只藉著祂兒子顯明自己

CHRIST = ONLY MEDIATOR BETWEEN GOD AND MAN; THUS: SEEK GOD IN CHRIST (A MIRROR); GOD ONLY MANIFESTS HIMSELF BY CHRIST 4.8.5

### 4.8.5 啟示的統一性與多元性

Unity and multiplicity of revelation

上帝的僕人必須教導他們從基督所學的;不同學習的方法: 基督 =上帝永恆的道;上帝只藉祂兒子向人啟示;不同方法 GOD'S SERVANTS MUST TEACH WHAT THEY LEARN FROM CHRIST VS. DIVERSE WAYS OF LEARNING: CHRIST = ETERNAL WISDOM OF GOD; GOD HAS REVEALED TO MEN ONLY THROUGH SON; IN DIVERSE WAYS

(新譯:)

但是,雖然這項原則從最初的教會就開始使用,上帝的僕人不應該教導任何 不是從祂學到的東西,但是,因為歷史有不同的處境,他們學習的方法也有所不 同。不過,現今的秩序和先前的時代非常不同的。

But although this principle has prevailed in the church from the beginning and ought to prevail today, that the servants of God should teach nothing which they have not learned from him, still, according to the diversity of the times, they have had diverse ways of learning. But the present order differs very much from what existed in former times.

首先,基督所說的若是真的:「除了子和子願意指示的,沒有人知道(見過)父」(太 11: 27) - 那些願意得到關於上帝的知識的人,應該完全由那永恆的智慧指導。因為,他們怎能用自己的心思來理解或述說上帝的奧秘,除非按照基督的教導: 祂就是唯獨從父領受奧秘的啟示的那位?因此,古時候的聖徒認識上帝,只在基督裏,好像在鏡子裏看見祂一樣(參: 林後 3: 8)。我這樣說的意思

是,上帝向人啟示祂自己,除了藉著祂的兒子,就是祂的唯一智慧,亮光與真理之 外,沒有其它方法。亞當,挪亞,亞伯拉罕,以撒,雅各,所領受的一切屬天教 導,都來自這個泉源。所有的先知也從這泉源吸收他們所宣告的屬天曉諭。

#### 太 11: 27

"一切所有的,都是我父交付我的;除了父,沒有人知道子;除了子和子所願意指 示的,沒有人知道父。

### 林後3:8

<sup>®</sup> 何況那屬靈的職事豈不更有榮光嗎?

First, if what Christ says is true - "No one sees the Father except the Son and anyone to whom the Son chooses to reveal him" [Matt. 11:27] - surely they who would attain the knowledge of God should always be directed by that eternal Wisdom. For how could they either have comprehended God's mysteries with the mind, or have uttered them, except by the teaching of him to whom alone the secrets of the Father are revealed? Therefore, holy men of old knew God only by beholding him in his Son as in a mirror (cf. II Cor. 3:8). When I say this, I mean that God has never manifested himself to men in any other way than through the Son, that is, his sole wisdom, light, and truth. From this fountain Adam, Noah, Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, and other drank all that they had of heavenly teaching. From the same fountain, all the prophets have also drawn every heavenly oracle that they have given forth.

#### Matt. 11:27

<sup>27</sup> "All things have been committed to me by my Father. No one knows the Son except the Father, and no one knows the Father except the Son and those to whom the Son chooses to reveal him.

### II Cor. 3:8

<sup>8</sup> will not the ministry of the Spirit be even more glorious?

因為這智慧用不同的方法顯明自己。上帝向列祖用奧秘的啟示,但同時為了 證實這些啟示,祂加上外在的記號,好叫人們毫無疑問地知道,向他們說話的是上 帝。而列祖所領受的,他們傳了給他們的後代。因為主把啟示交託給他們有這個條 件:他們必須傳下去。當上帝在人裏面頒佈諭令的時候,列祖的子孫,和子孫的子 孫都知道,他們所聽到的乃是從天上,不是從地上而來。

For this Wisdom has not always manifested itself in one way. Among the patriarchs God used secret revelations, but at the same time to confirm these he added such signs that they could have no doubt that it was God who was speaking to them. What the patriarchs had received they handed on to their descendants. For the Lord had left it with them on this condition, that they should so propagate it. The children and children's children knew when God dictates within what they heard was from heaven, not from earth.

## 1.6.1 如何認識上帝?讓《聖經》教導我們;用新的心,藉信心讀《聖經》

### HOW? BE TAUGHT BY SCRIPTURE; WITH NEW HEART, BY FAITH

卷一 第六章: 若有人要親近上帝, 創造主, 必須以《聖經》為指導, 教師

Scripture is needed as guide and teacher for anyone who would come to God the Creator

# 1.6.1 上帝只在《聖經》裏賜給我們關於祂的真知識 God bestows the actual knowledge of himself upon us only in the Scriptures

因此,雖然天地間那昭在人眼前的光輝,足以使人的忘恩無從獲恕(因上帝為要人類都同被定罪,就藉著受造之物,向每一個人顯示了祂的莊嚴偉大),但我們還需要更多幫助,好引導我們到創世主之前,所以祂增加了祂的話的亮光,以顯明祂自己而使人得救,並將此特權賜給祂要與自己有更密切關係的人。因祂知道人的心思都受不安定的情緒所搖動,所以祂既以猶太人為祂的選民,就如羊一般範圍他們,使他們不致隨從其他民族的虛妄。祂以同一方法保守我們,使我們不失去對祂的純潔認識,不是沒有理由的;否則那些表面似乎站立得穩的,將要快快跌倒了。正如你把一本好書給年老或目力昏花的人看,他們只看見白紙黑字,模糊不清,可是,有了眼鏡就可以看得明白;同樣,《聖經》能清除我們心衰對上帝混亂觀念的黑暗,使我們對真上帝的認識更為清楚。所以,上帝為教導教會,不但使用那些不能言語的教師,甚至開自己的聖口,這乃是一種奇妙的恩惠;祂不但宣告有某種上帝應受敬拜,而且同時宣告祂自己即是那應受敬拜的物件;祂不但教訓選民要有上帝的觀念,而且顯明祂自己即是他們默念的目標。祂對教會自始所採用的方法,就是除了以普通的教訓指導他們以外,還以自己的話傳給他們,作為分辨祂和一切假上帝的正確標準。

That brightness which is borne in upon the eyes of all men both in heaven and on earth is more than enough to withdraw all support from men's ingratitude – just as God, to involve the human race in the same guilt, sets forth to all without exception his presence portrayed in his creatures. Despite this, it is needful that another and better help be added to direct us aright to the very Creator of the universe. It was not in vain, then, that he added the light of his Word by which to become known unto salvation; and

he regarded as worthy of this privilege those whom he pleased to gather more closely and intimately to himself. For because he saw the minds of all men tossed and agitated, after he chose the Jews as his very own flock, he fenced them about that they might not sink into oblivion as others had. With good reason he holds us by the same means in the pure knowledge of himself, since otherwise even those who seem to stand firm before all others would soon melt away. Just as old or bleary-eyed men and those with weak vision, if you thrust before them a most beautiful volume, even if they recognize it to be some sort of writing, yet can scarcely construe two words, but with the aid of spectacles will begin to read distinctly; so Scripture, gathering up the otherwise confused knowledge of God in our minds, having dispersed our dullness, clearly shows us the true God. This, therefore, is a special gift, where God, to instruct the church, not merely uses mute teachers but also opens his own most hallowed lips. Not only does he teach the elect to look upon a god, but also shows himself as the God upon whom they are to look. He has from the beginning maintained this plan for his church, so that besides these common proofs he also put forth his Word, which is a more direct and more certain mark whereby he is to be recognized.

### (《聖經》裏兩方面關於上帝的知識)

(Two sorts of knowledge of God in Scripture)

毫無疑問地,亞當,挪亞,亞伯拉罕,以及其他族長,都靠這助力而得著那使他們與不信者有別的親切的認識。我且不提及那叫他們有永生的特殊啓示。因為他們既已由死入生,就必已認識上帝不但是造物主,也是救贖主(修: 為了使他們出死入生,他們必須認識上帝不單是造物主,也是救贖主);他們必是從祂的話而獲得這兩種知識。然而那以上帝為創造主和統治者的認識是在先,然後才有那叫死心靈有生氣的認識,就是不但認識上帝是創世主,是萬物唯一的裁判者。而且認識地是以中保的身份為救贖者。但我既然還沒有討論到人的墮落和自然的腐化,我也暫且不談補救之道。所以讀者要知道,我並非在討論上帝為承嗣亞伯拉罕子孫所立的約,和那建立在基督身上而藉以區別信徒和其他民族的教理;我只在指出應該怎樣從《聖經》學習,好從眾假上帝中清楚區別那創世界的上帝。我們討論過這一連串的題目以後,就要進而討論救贖的工作。雖然我們要大量從新約中,也要略略從那明明提到基督律法和先知之部,引申見證,但它們都一致證明,《聖經》為的是對我們表現上帝為創世主,而且聲明我們對祂應如何感悟,好使我們不致在迷宮中尋找假神。

There is no doubt that Adam, Noah, Abraham, and the rest of the patriarchs with this assistance penetrated to the intimate knowledge of him that in a way distinguished them from unbelievers. I am not yet speaking of the proper doctrine of faith whereby they had been illumined unto the hope of eternal life. For, that they might pass from death to life, it was necessary to recognize God not only as Creator but also as Redeemer, for undoubtedly they arrived at both from the Word. First in order came that kind of knowledge by which one is permitted to grasp who that God is who founded and governs

the universe. Then that other inner knowledge was added, which alone quickens dead souls, whereby God is known not only as the Founder of the universe and the sole Author and Ruler of all that is made, but also in the person of the Mediator and as the Redeemer. But because we have not yet come to the fall of the world and the corruption of nature, I shall now forego discussion of the remedy. My readers therefore should remember that I am not yet going to discuss that covenant by which God adopted to himself the sons of Abraham, or that part of doctrine which has always separated believers from unbelieving folk, for it was founded in Christ. But here I shall discuss only how we should learn from Scripture that God, the Creator of the universe, can by sure marks be distinguished from all the throng of feigned gods. Then, in due order, that series will lead us to the redemption. We shall derive many testimonies from the New Testament, and other testimonies also from the Law and the Prophets, where express mention is made of Christ. Nevertheless, all things will tend to this end, that God, the Artificer of the universe, is made manifest to us in Scripture, and that what we ought to think of him is set forth there, lest we seek some uncertain deity by devious paths.

### 1.6.2 《聖經》就是上帝的話語 THE WORD AS HOLY SCRIPTURE 1.6.2

不論上帝對諸族長啟示自己,是用上帝諭和異象,或是藉人(修:藉人的事 工)來啟示什麼是應由傳說遺下給子孫的,但這教理的確(修: *但這教義的確實* **性)已經深印在他們心裏,叫**他們堅信所得的資訊(修: **他們所領受的)是從上** 帝而來,這是無庸懷疑的,因為上帝使祂的言語具有高於人一切見解的可靠信譽 (加: *使信心永遠毫不含糊*)。至終,祂為要使真理存留於世,垂訓萬代,就將 祂所交付與諸族長的上帝諭公開記錄下來。因此祂公佈律法,以後又加上眾先知 (修: 先知書) 為律法的詮釋者。正如以後在適當之處將要說明的,雖然律法的用 途很多, 而摩西和眾先知的特意也在指示人與上帝(修: 上帝與人) 和好的方式 (所以保羅稱基督為「律法的總結」羅 10:4),但是我還得重述,**除了那以基督** *為中保的*信和悔改的特殊教理(修: *信心與悔改的個別教義*)*之外,《聖經》以某種* 性格與稱號來區別那獨一無二的真上帝為宇宙的創造者和掌管者,好叫祂與眾假 **上帝不相混雜。**雖然每人好同身在這所華美的戲院中,理當細察上帝的工作,但 他應當以注意上帝的話為主,好得著更大的利益。所以,那些生在黑暗裏的人越來 越愚蠢(修: 那些生在黑暗理的人的心越來越剛硬),是不足為奇的,因為只有少 數人存受教之心去注意上帝的話,約束自己不越乎這話所指定的範圍,反而以自己 的虚妄為誇耀。因此,我們若要得著真宗教的亮光,必從天而來,而人若不服膺 《聖經》必無法認識真實健全的教理。所以一切真智慧都產生在我們恭敬地接受上 帝對祂自己的見證。因為順服不只是絕對完全之信心根源,也是對上帝的正確認識 之本。上帝的確在這方面特別垂念各時代的人。

#### 羅 10:4

But whether God became known to the patriarchs through oracles and visions or by the work and ministry of men, he put into their minds what they should then hand down to their posterity. At any rate, there is no doubt that firm certainty of doctrine was engraved in their hearts, so that they were convinced and understood that what they had learned proceeded from God. For by his Word, God rendered faith unambiguous forever, a faith that should be superior to all opinion. Finally, in order that truth might abide forever in the world with a continuing succession of teaching and survive through all ages, the same oracles he had given to the patriarchs it was his pleasure to have recorded, as it were, on public tablets. With this intent the law was published, and the prophets afterward added as its interpreters. For even though the use of the law was manifold, as will be seen more clearly in its place, it was especially committed to Moses and all the prophets to teach the way of reconciliation between God and men, whence also Paul calls "Christ the end of the law" [Rom. 10:4]. Yet I repeat once more: besides the specific doctrine of faith and repentance that sets forth Christ as Mediator, Scripture adorns with unmistakable marks and tokens the one true God, in that he has created and governs the universe, in order that he may not be mixed up with the throng

<sup>4</sup> 律法的總結就是基督,使凡信他的都得著義。

of false gods. Therefore, however fitting it may be for man seriously to turn his eyes to contemplate God's works, since he had been placed in this most glorious theater to be a spectator of them, it is fitting that he prick up his ears to the Word, the better to profit. And it is therefore no wonder that those who were born in darkness become more and more hardened in their insensibility; or there are very few who, to contain themselves within bounds, apply themselves teachably to God's Word, but they rather exult in their own vanity. Now, in order that true religion may shine upon us, we ought to hold that it must take its beginning from heavenly doctrine and that no one can get even the slightest taste of right and sound doctrine unless he be a pupil of Scripture. Hence, there also emerges the beginning of true understanding when we reverently embrace what it pleases God there to witness of himself. But not only faith, perfect and in every way complete, but all right knowledge of God is born of obedience. And surely in this respect God has, by his singular providence, taken thought for mortals through all ages.

#### Rom. 10:4

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>4</sup> Christ is the end of the law so that there may be righteousness for everyone who believes.

## ccn-tv.com 加爾文基督教要義卷 1-10

## 1.7.5 《聖經》是自證自明的

### **SCRIPTURE BEARS ITS OWN AUTHENTICATION 1.7.5**

所以我們要承認, **凡內心受了聖靈之教的人,對《聖經》必完全同意,並承認《聖經》它自證的, 乃是自明的**, 不應該成為理智上爭辯與論證的問題, **卻因為聖靈的見證(修:印證),理當得著我們的信任**。它本身的莊嚴雖足以引起我們對它的敬重,但**在聖靈未向我們內心證實(修:印證)以前,它不能感動我們。**所以,我們既蒙祂啟迪(修:光照)了,就不再憑自己或他人的判斷而相信《聖經》是導源於上帝; **乃是確信它是出於上帝的口,藉著人所傳與我們的;它的可靠遠超乎人的判斷,**猶如直覺地看見上帝本身在其中一般(修:**猶如我們親眼直接仰視上帝的榮耀一般)。**我們並不尋找論據支持我們的判斷,乃是使我們的判斷和理解服從《聖經》,像服從我們所不能判斷的事物一樣。我們不像那些汲汲於接受自己所不能瞭解之事,但一經查考以後,就立刻不滿意的人,因為我們確信是掌握著牢不可破的真理。我們也不像那些作迷信之奴的不幸的人,乃是因為我們在真理中看見了上帝威嚴的能力(修:因為我們毫無疑問地感覺,**上帝的威嚴在祂的話裏活著,猶如祂自己的呼吸一樣**),就是那吸引與鼓勵我們認識祂,自願服從祂的,而其活力和效率遠優於人的意志和知識的,上帝的能力。

Let this point therefore stand: that those whom the Holy Spirit has inwardly taught truly rest upon Scripture, and that Scripture indeed is self-authenticated; hence, it is not right to subject it to proof and reasoning. And the certainty it deserves with us, it attains by the testimony of the Spirit. For even if it wins reverence for itself by its own majesty, it seriously affects us only when it is sealed upon our hearts through the Spirit. Therefore, illumined by his power, we believe neither by our own nor by anyone else's judgment that Scripture is from God; but above human judgment we affirm with utter certainty (just as if we were gazing upon the majesty of God himself) that it has flowed to us from the very mouth of God by the ministry of men. We seek no proofs, no marks of genuineness upon which our judgment may lean; but we subject our judgment and wit to it as to a thing far beyond any guesswork! This we do, not as persons accustomed to seize upon some unknown thing, which, under close scrutiny, displeases them, but fully conscious that we hold the unassailable truth! Nor do we do this as those miserable men who habitually bind over their minds to the thralldom of superstition; but we feel that the undoubted power of his divine majesty lives and breathes here. By this power we are drawn and inflamed, knowingly and willingly, to obey him, yet also more vitally and more effectively than by mere human willing or knowing!

所以上帝藉著以賽亞極公正地說,先知和眾人都是祂的見證人,因為他們既受了預言的教,就確知那說話的是上帝(參賽 43: 10)。所以**這是不需要理智的信念;是有最高理性所支援的認識,**人心以這認識為根據比任何理性更為安全穩

定;最後,是一種若不來自天上的啟示,就不能產生的覺悟。我所說的,都是每個信徒的內心都感受過的,不過我拙於言辭,不能詳加說明這問題而已。

#### 賽 43: 10

<sup>10</sup> 耶和華說: 你們是我的見證, 我所揀選的僕人。既是這樣, 便可以知道, 且信服我, 又明白我就是耶和華。在我以前沒有真上帝(真: 原文是造作的); 在我以後也必沒有。

God, therefore, very rightly proclaims through Isaiah that *the prophets* together with the whole people are *witnesses to him;* for they, instructed by the prophecies, unhesitatingly held that God has spoken without deceit or ambiguity [Isa. 43:10]. Such, then, is *a conviction that requires no reasons; such a knowledge with which the best reason agrees – in which the mind truly reposes more securely and constantly than in any reasons; such, finally, feeling that can be born only of heavenly revelation. I speak of nothing other than what each believer experiences within himself – though my words fall far beneath a just explanation of the matter.* 

#### Isa. 43:10

<sup>10</sup> "You are my witnesses," declares the LORD, "and my servant whom I have chosen, so that you may know and believe me and understand that I am he. Before me no god was formed, nor will there be one after me.

有許多事我暫且略下不提,因為在別處還要討論。在此有一點要明白的,即是: **唯獨上帝之靈在我們內心所印證的,才是真信仰。**每位謙虛受教的讀者會知道,以賽亞是因這理由而預言說:新教會的"兒女都要受上帝的教訓"(賽 54:13)。上帝在此是以非常的特權賜給祂那從全人類當中區別出來的選民。**因為除了敏捷恭聽上帝的聲音以外,**什麼是真學問的開端呢?(修:**什麼是認識真理教養的開端呢?)**祂藉著摩西的口,要我們注意:「你不要心裏說,誰要升到天上去?或誰要下到陰間去呢?這道正在你口裏」(參申 30;羅 10 章)。假如上帝旨意要把智慧的隱藏留給祂的兒女,那麼,難怪俗人如此無知和愚笨了。我也用「眾人」這稱謂指那最有才能和居最高職位的人,直到他們加入教會。再者,以賽亞既知道,先知的教理不僅被外邦人相信,恐怕那些自以為屬於上帝家的猶太人也未必相信,所以祂同時加上一個理由,即主的膀臂不會向所有人顯露(參賽 53:1)。所以,我們若因感覺信徒太少而心裏不安,就當在另一方面牢記,除了那些蒙上帝賜與的人,誰都不能瞭解上帝的奧秘。

#### 賽 54: 13

13 你的兒女都要受耶和華的教訓;你的兒女必大享平安。

#### 申 30: 12.14

- <sup>12</sup> 不是在天上, 使你說: 誰替我們上天取下來, 使我們聽見可以遵行呢?
- 14 這話卻離你甚近,就在你口中,在你心裏,使你可以遵行。

詩 107: 26

26 他們上到天空,下到海底;他們的心因患難便消化。

詩 106: 26

26 所以,他對他們起誓: 必叫他們倒在曠野,

馬 13: 11

11 耶穌回答說:因為天國的奧祕只叫你們知道,不叫他們知道。

賽 53: 1

1 我們所傳的(或譯: 所傳與我們的)有誰信呢?耶和華的膀臂向誰顯露呢?

I now refrain from saying more, since I shall have opportunity to discuss this matter elsewhere. Let us, then, know that the only true faith is that which the Spirit of God seals in our hearts. Indeed, the modest and teachable reader will be content with this one reason: Isaiah promised all the children of the renewed church that "they would be God's disciples" [Isa. 54:13 p.]. God deems worthy of singular privilege only his elect, whom he distinguishes from the human race as a whole. Indeed, what is the beginning of true doctrine but a prompt eagerness to hearken to God's voice? But God asks to be heard through the mouth of Moses, as it is written: "Say not in your heart, who will ascend into heaven, or who will descend into the abyss; behold, the word is in your mouth" [conflation of Deut. 30:12, 14 and Ps. 107:26; 106:26; Vg.]. If God has willed this treasure of understanding to be hidden from his children, it is no wonder or absurdity that the multitude of men are so ignorant and stupid! Among the "multitude" I include even certain distinguished folk, until they become engrafted into the body of the church. Besides, Isaiah, warning that the prophetic teaching would be beyond belief, not only to foreigners but also to the Jews who wanted to be reckoned as members of the Lord's household, at the same time adds the reason: "The arm of God will not be revealed" to all [Isa. 53:1 p.]. Whenever, then, the fewness of believers disturbs us, let the converse come to mind, that only those to whom it is given can comprehend the mysteries of God [cf. Matt. 13:11].

Isa. 54:13

<sup>13</sup> All your sons will be taught by the LORD, and great will be your children's peace.

Deut. 30:12, 14

Ps. 107:26

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>12</sup> It is not up in heaven, so that you have to ask, "Who will ascend into heaven to get it and proclaim it to us so we may obey it?"

No, the word is very near you; it is in your mouth and in your heart so you may obey it.

Ps. 106:26

<sup>26</sup> So he swore to them with uplifted hand that he would make them fall in the desert,

Isa. 53:1

<sup>1</sup> Who has believed our message and to whom has the arm of the LORD been revealed?

Matt. 13:11

<sup>11</sup> He replied, "The knowledge of the secrets of the kingdom of heaven has been given to you, but not to them.

## 認識《聖經》,不能只當它是人寫的,必須有新的心 New Heart Is Needed to Understand the Mysteries of God

**1.7.5** 「除了那些蒙上帝恩賜與的人,誰都不能瞭解上帝的奧秘。」 "The mysteries of God are understood only by those to whom it is given." **1.7.5** 

## 胡亂思想的人拒絕「聖靈」的名的教義:

聖靈要我們了解上帝的話,不是使人藐視上帝的話

FANATIC MINDS REJECT DOCTRINE IN THE NAME OF THE HOLY SPIRIT;

THE HOLY SPIRIT LEADS US NOT TO DESPISE, BUT TO UNDERSTAND GOD'S WORD

徒 16: 14 注釋

**Comm. Acts 16:14** 

(新譯:)

「既是如此,讓那些作白日夢和幻想的人閉口,那些借聖靈的名來拒絕藐視教義的人。我們必須學習路加的謙卑:我們僅僅聽到上帝的話是不足夠的,除非有聖靈開恩施恩典;而上帝所賜我們的聖靈,不是鼓勵人藐視上帝的話,而是借着《聖經》賜信心給我們,叫我們明白上帝的話,並將上帝的話刻在我們的心版上的。」

徒 16: 14

<sup>14</sup> 有一個賣紫色布疋的婦人,名叫呂底亞,是推雅推喇城的人,素來敬拜上帝。他 聽見了,主就開導他的心,叫他留心聽保羅所講的話。

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>26</sup> They mounted up to the heavens and went down to the depths; in their peril their courage melted away.

"Then let a crowd of day-dreaming and fantastic minds hod their peace, those who under cover of the Holy Spirit reject and hold in disdain all external doctrine. For we must keep to that moderation which St. Luke observes here: that we can obtain nothing by only hearing the word of God, without the grace of his holy Spirit, and that the Spirit who is given to us is not at all a spirit who engenders contempt or disdain of the word, but rather one who gives faith in the same to our understanding, and writes it in our hearts." Comm. – Acts 16:14.

#### Acts 16:14

<sup>14</sup>One of those listening was a woman named Lydia, a dealer in purple cloth from the city of Thyatira, who was a worshiper of God. The Lord opened her heart to respond to Paul's message.

## 1.13.1 上帝遷就我們,用人的言語,好像乳母與嬰孩講話 GOD ACCOMMODATES US WITH LANGUAGE, AS **NURSES LISP TO BABES 1.13.1**

卷一 第十三章: 《聖經》最初即指示, 上帝 的一個本體包含三位

1.13 – In Scripture, from the creation onward, we are taught one essence of God, which contains three persons

(正統的教父的「三位一體」教義中所用的詞匯, 1-6) (Terms used in the doctrine of the Trinity by the orthodox fathers, 1-6)

1.13.1 上帝的本質是無限,屬靈的 God's nature is immeasurable and spiritual

上帝的本質:無限,屬靈:《聖經》用擬人法: 上帝遷就我們的層面,好像乳母與嬰孩說法一般

GOD'S ESSENCE: INFINITE, SPIRITUAL; ANTHROPOMORPHISMS IN **SCRIPTURE:** 

GOD ACCOMMODATES TO OUR LEVEL, AS NURSES "LISPS" TO BABES

《聖經》所顯示關於上帝本體的偉大和靈性,不僅可以推翻俗人愚蠢的見解, 而且可以駁倒一般世俗哲學的詭辯。有一位古人(指辛尼加)很巧妙地說,凡我們 所看見的,不能見的就是上帝。但他以為上帝是充滿於世界各部份裏。雖然上帝為 了叫我們不超出思想應有的限度,很少講到祂的本體。可是從我剛才所說的兩種屬 性而論,祂打破了一切的幻想,並壓制了人心中的驕傲。因為祂的偉大真足以叫我 們油然生敬,叫我們因此不致以感官去測量祂;而且祂的靈性也不容許我們對祂有 任何屬世的或屬肉體的猜測。

因著同一理由, 祂以「天上」象徵祂的居所; 雖然祂是不可思議的, 卻是充滿 於世間: 但因為我們愚魯的心靈只注視塵世; 為求消除我們的遲鈍和懶惰, 祂把我 們提高到世界以上。摩尼教徒(Manichaei)以為有善惡二元論,所以將魔鬼當作 幾乎是與上帝同等,這種錯誤也就被摧毀了。他們的這種說法分明是破壞了上帝的 獨一性,和限制了祂的偉大。他們大膽濫用《聖經》的見證,適足以顯露他們的無知,正如錯誤的本身證明了他們的卑鄙和瘋狂。「<mark>擬人論</mark>」者因為《聖經》有時候以口、耳、目、和手足形容上帝,便以為上帝是有形的,他們這種講法也不難駁倒。因為稍有才智的人,誰不知道*上帝和我們談話,隱約含糊地,像乳母慣於對嬰兒談話一般呢?所以「擬人論」的說法,並不能全部解釋上帝的本性,只不過使對祂的認識適合於我們的膚淺見識而已。因此《聖經》不得不將祂的崇高性格大大降低,好適合我們的有限才智。* 

The Scriptural teaching concerning God's infinite and spiritual essence ought to be enough, not only to banish popular delusions, but also to refute the subtleties of secular philosophy. One of the ancients seems aptly to have remarked, "Whatever we see, and whatever we do not see, is God." According to this, he fancied that divinity was poured out into the various parts of the world. But even if God to keep us sober speaks sparingly of his essence, yet by those two titles that I have used he both banishes stupid imaginings and restrains the boldness of the human mind. Surely, his infinity ought to make us afraid to try to measure him by our own senses. Indeed, his spiritual nature forbids our imagining anything earthly or carnal of him. For the same reason, he quite often assigns to himself a dwelling place in heaven. And yet as he sees that our slow minds sink down upon the earth, and rightly, in order to shake off our sluggishness and inertia he raises us above the world. And hence falls to the ground the error of the Manichees, who by postulating two principles made the devil almost equal to God. Undoubtedly this was to wreck God's unity and restrict his infinity. Indeed, that they dared abuse certain testimonies of Scripture was due to base ignorance; just as the error itself sprang from execrable madness. The Anthropomorphites, also, who imagined a corporeal God from the fact that Scripture often ascribes to him a mouth, ears, eyes, hands, and feet, are easily refuted. For who even of slight intelligence does not understand that, as nurses commonly do with infants, God is wont in a measure to "lisp" in speaking to us? Thus such forms of speaking do not so much express clearly what God is like as accommodate the knowledge of him to our slight capacity. To do this he must descend far beneath his loftiness.

## ccn-tv.com 加爾文基督教要義卷 1-11

## 1.13.2 上帝格裹的三位格 THE THREE PERSONS IN THE GODHEAD 1.13.2

池也用另一印記更能顯明地表現池自己本質的名稱: 池是唯獨的神, 以至於有三位(修: **同時是三個位格, 我們應該如此思想池**); 我們若不明了這點。那漂浮於我們腦海中的, 不外是上帝的空名, 卻無任何真上帝的觀念。為要使人避免無謂的幻想, 以為有三位上帝, 或以為上帝的本體是分三位, 我們必須尋出一個簡而易明的定義。以免陷於任何錯誤。

But God also designates himself by another special mark to distinguish himself more precisely from idols. For he so proclaims himself the sole God as to offer himself to be contemplated clearly in *three persons*. Unless we grasp these, only the bare and empty name of God flits about in our brains, to the exclusion of the true God. Again, lest anyone imagine that God is threefold, or think God's simple essence to be torn into three persons, we must here seek a short and easy definition to free us from all error.

位格與本質 = 不同; 父的生存形式 = 與子的不同; 上帝的本質 = 簡單,不分開; 子不是父的本質的印記,而是位格 HYPOSTASIS AND ESSENCE = DIFFERENT FATHER'S SUBSISTENCE = DIFFERENT FROM SON'S ESSENCE OF GOD = SIMPLE, UNDIVIDED; SON IS NOT STAMP OF FATHER'S "ESSENCE," BUT HYPOSTASIS

既然有人強烈地反對「位」(修: 位格)這字,以為這是人所捏造的,我們必須首先研究這個反對的理由。使徒稱子為父的「本體的真像」(來 1: 3),當然是以父的本體和子的本體有若干不同。若把「位」(修: 位格)這個字看為與本質同義(例如有人曾經解釋,認為基督本身有父的本質,如同蠟上蓋的印信一般),不但牽強,而且無稽。既然上帝的本質是簡一的,不可分割的,所以神包含一切的,既不是一部份的,也不是附屬的,乃是完全上帝性的子,若說不過是上帝的「真像」,未免不合,甚至荒謬。但父雖有祂的特性(生存形態),既然是完全在子裏面表明了自己,所以若說祂在子裏面顯出祂的位格,是十分合理的。在同章所說子是父的「榮耀所發的光輝」,與這個也正相符合。從使徒的話中,我們可以斷言那在裏面顯出的,是父特殊的位格。因此我們也可以容易地推論子的位格與父的位格有何不同。

#### 來 1:3

<sup>3</sup> 他是神榮耀所發的光輝,是神本體的真像,常用他權能的命令托住萬有。他洗淨 了人的罪,就坐在高天至大者的右邊。

But because some hatefully inveigh against the word "person," as if humanly devised, we ought first to see with what justice they do this. The apostle, calling the Son of God "the stamp of the Father's hypostasis" [Heb. 1:3], doubtless assigns some subsistence to the Father wherein he differs from the Son. For to consider hypostasis equivalent to *essence* (as certain interpreters have done, as if Christ, like wax imprinted with a seal, represented in himself the substance of the Father) would be not only uncouth but also absurd. For since the essence of God is simple and undivided, and he contains all in himself, without portion or derivation, but in integral perfection, the Son will be improperly, even foolishly, called his "stamp." But because the Father, although distinct in his **proper nature**, expresses himself wholly in the Son, for a very good reason is it said that he has made his hypostasis visible in the latter. In close agreement with this are the words immediately following, that the Son is "the splendor of his glory" [Heb. 1:3, cf. Vg.]. Surely we infer from the apostle's words that the very hypostasis that shines forth in the Son is in the Father. From this we also easily ascertain the Son's hypostasis, which distinguishes him from the Father.

#### Heb. 1:3

<sup>3</sup> The Son is the radiance of God's glory and the exact representation of his being, sustaining all things by his powerful word. After he had provided purification for sins, he sat down at the right hand of the Majesty in heaven.

## 聖靈是上帝,與父不同;分別不是本質上 HOLY SPIRIT = GOD, DIFFERENT FROM FATHER DISTINCTION = NOT OF ESSENCE cen-tv.com 1-12

這個推理,也可以適用於聖靈,因為我們下一步就要證明聖靈也是上帝,可是與父又是判然有別。不過這不是本體上的區別,若把本體看為可分的,那就不對。這樣說來,使徒的見證若是可靠的話,上帝就有三個位格了。拉丁文既然用Persona(位)一名詞,說明這意義,那麼若再固執地爭論這非常明顯的事,就是吹毛求疵了。如果將 hypostasis (位格) 這字加以直譯,我們可稱之為 subsistentia (存在)。同樣的意義許多人卻稱它為 substantia(本質)。而 persona 這一字不僅拉丁人採用,希臘人為要證明贊同這教義起見,也講上帝有三位 prosopa(面)的存在。希臘人和拉丁人雖然在用詞上有區別,關於教義本身,則完全一致。

The same reasoning applies to the Holy Spirit: for we shall presently prove that he is God, and yet it is necessary for him to be thought of as other than the Father. Indeed, this is not a distinction of essence, which it is unlawful to make manifold. Therefore, if the testimony of the apostle obtains any credence, it follows that there are in God three hypostases. Since the Latins can express the same concept by the word "person," to wrangle over this clear matter is undue squeamishness and even obstinacy. If anyone

longs to translate word for word, let him use "subsistence." Many have used "substance" in the same sense. Nor was the word "person" in use only among the Latins, for the Greeks, perhaps to testify their agreement, taught that there are three *prosopa* in God. Although they, whether Greek or Latin, differ among themselves over the word, yet they quite agree in the essential matter.

## ccn-tv.com 加爾文基督教要義卷 1-12

1.13.3 「三位一體」與「位格」等詞匯幫助我們解釋 《聖 經》,可以使用 THE EXPRESSIONS "TRINITY" AND "PERSON" AID THE INTERPRETATION OF SCRIPTURE, ARE THUS ADMISSIBLE 1.13.3

異端人士說:「位格」= 是人的思想捏造的;加爾文回應:我們相信三位,而一體的唯獨真上帝 HERETICS: WORD "PERSON" = FASHIONED BY HUMAN MIND

RESPONSE: WE BELIEVE IN 3; BUT ONLY ONE GOD

異端派雖然嘲笑「位格」一詞,還有些頑梗的人且不肯承認這人造的名稱,可是他們既不能叫我們說有三位,而每一位是分立的上帝,也更不能叫我們說有多上帝,那麼若責難那不過對《聖經》上已經記載並證實的加以表明的名詞,這是何等的沒有道理呢!

Now, although the heretics rail at the word "person," or certain squeamish men cry out against admitting a term fashioned by the human mind, they cannot shake our conviction that three are spoken of, each of which is entirely God, yet that there is not more than one God. What wickedness, then, it is to disapprove of words that explain nothing else than what is attested and sealed by Scripture!

他們認為寧願約束我的思想,和限制我們的言詞只用《聖經》的範圍,不越出《聖經》的範圍以外,總比引用外來的詞句,引起未來的分爭為佳。他們恐怕我們因文字的爭辯而自尋煩惱,喪失了真理和仁愛。

It would be enough, they say, to confine within the limits of Scripture not only our thoughts but also our words, rather than scatter foreign terms about, which would become seedbeds of dissension and strife. For thus are we wearied with quarreling over words, thus by bickering do we lose the truth, thus by hateful wrangling do we destroy love.

我們不用《聖經》不用的詞匯嗎?這條規則不公道 不錯,我們不應用冒犯人,不造就人,引起爭辯,使人偏離 敬虔的詞匯;

我們對上帝的思想與用詞都應當謹慎;

## 我們可以用一些能幫助我們清楚明白《聖經》與真理的字, 不要濫用,只用在有需要的場合使用

DON'T USE WORDS NOT IN SCRIPTURE? UNJUST RULE TRUE, WE SHOULDN'T USE WORDS WHICH OFFEND, NOT EDIFY, WHICH ARE CONTENTIOUS, WHICH DETRACT FROM PIETY; OUR THOUGHTS AND WORDS RE. GOD SHOULD BE CONSCIENTIOUS; WE CAN USE WORDS WHICH CLARIFY AND SERVE SCRIPTURE/TRUTH, USE THEM SPARINGLY, ONLY ON DUE OCCASION

ccn-tv.com 加爾文基督教要義卷 1-11

如果他們把每一個和《聖經》中所用的有一點一劃差別的字,都看為外來的異字,那他們就是以極不公道的一條法規加在我們頭上,這法規除了把片斷的經文彙集起來之外,對其它一切的解釋,都認為不合。可是他們所謂外來的字若指的是採用標奇立異,盲目擁護,引起紛爭,毫無成就,既不合理,又無益助,徒然使虔誠的人不堪入耳,使忠信的人離開上帝道的字而言,那麼,我將極誠懇地採納他們的這種公平的意見。我覺得我們無論是講到上帝或是思想到祂,都應該有敬虔的態度。因為我們的關於祂的思想,若僅僅是出於我們自己,就是愚笨,而我們一切的言詞,也就是荒謬的。但有一條適當的途徑可循:我們在思想和言語上,必須從《聖經》中找一個可靠的原則,以此節制我們內心的思想,和口頭的言語。但是,假如我們忠實地表達《聖經》的真意義,而且小心謹慎,又有充份理由的話,有什麼事可以禁止我們以簡明的話(修:以更清楚的用詞),說明那在《聖經》裏面的難解的事呢?這樣的例子多得很,但是,一旦證明了教會必須引用『三位一體』,和『位格』等詞的時候,若有人仍然認為很新的,而加以責難,這豈不證明他們是厭棄真理的亮光嗎?除了怪我們表揚真理以外,他們還有什麼可責難的原因呢。

If they call a foreign word one that cannot be shown to stand written syllable by syllable in Scripture, they are indeed imposing upon us an unjust law which condemns all interpretation not patched together out of the fabric of Scripture. But if that is "foreign" which has been curiously devised and is superstitiously defended, which conduces more to contention than to edification, which is made use of either unseasonably or fruitlessly, which by its harshness offends pious ears, which detracts from the simplicity of God's Word – I wholeheartedly embrace their soberness. For I do not feel that concerning God we should speak with less conscientiousness than we should think, since whatever by ourselves we think concerning him is foolish, and whatever we speak, absufrd. Yet some measure ought to be preserved: we ought to seek from Scripture a sure rule for both thinking and speaking, to which both the thoughts of our minds and the words of our mouths should be conformed. But what prevents us from explaining in clearer words those matters in Scripture which perplex and hinder our understanding, yet which conscientiously and faithfully serve the truth of Scripture itself, and are made use of sparingly and modestly and on due occasion? There are quite enough examples of this sort of thing. What is to be said, moreover, when it has been proved that the church is utterly compelled to make use of the words "Trinity" and "Persons"? If anyone, then,

finds fault with the novelty of the words, does he not deserve to be judged as bearing the light of truth unworthily, since he is finding fault only with what renders the truth plain and clear?

1.13.4 教會認為,用「三位一體」,「位格」等詞匯,雖是 所 謂「新奇」,是《聖經》沒有的,可是對於揭露假教師是 必需的

## THE CHURCH HAS REGARDED EXPRESSIONS LIKE "TRINITY," "PERSON," ETC. AS NECESSARY TO UNMASK FALSE TEACHERS 1.13.4

當真理和那些心懷惡意,吹毛求疵,巧於逃避的人立於相反的地位時,他們就 會用「新奇名詞」作為攻擊的藉口;這種經驗現在是司空見慣。(糾正:可是, 當教會須堅持真理,駁斥假那些教師的控告的時候[他們常常轉移立場,避免面對 真理| ,使用這些所謂「新奇」的字詞(若我們必須這樣稱謂這些《聖經》以外的 字詞的話,乃是有用的。)我們覺得要駁倒這些與純正健全教條為敵的人,很不 **容易**; 這些人有蛇一般的狡猾,所以若不是盡力對付他們,和嚴密地使他們就 範,他們將用最狡猾的計謀,設法逃遁。因此,古人既然反對錯誤的教條,而常為 爭議所困擾,就不得不用最淺顯易明的言詞,說明他們的意見,以免假人口實,因 為那些不虔誠的人,利用含混的語言,掩飾自己的錯誤。亞流不能否認《聖經》上 的明證, 所以承認基督是上帝, 和上帝的兒子: 假裝贊同教會一般的意見, 仿佛說 到這裏就夠了。然而他依然認為基督是被創造的,和其他被造之物一樣,是有始 的。古代的教父為要揭破這個人的狡計,乃宣佈基督是父永恆之子,且與父同本 體。亞流派既厭惡和咒詛「同本體」(修:同質)(homoousion)一名詞,他們的 邪惡豈不是顯然若揭。假如他們誠懇地承認基督是上帝,他們就不會否認祂和父同 質。誰敢責難那些賢人,說他們好爭愛辯,因著一個名詞,燃起爭辯的火焰,而叫 教會不安呢?信仰純正的基督徒和褻瀆的亞流派人之別,就是以這小小名詞為關 鍵。

以後撒伯流(Sabellius)崛起,他把父、子、聖靈三個名字,看為是無意義的 聲音。他說,引用這些名詞並不是因為它們有任何實際上的區別,這不過是上帝不 同的屬性而已,而像這樣的屬性,上帝還有很多。如果有人反駁這一點,他就承認 他相信父是上帝,子是上帝,聖靈也是上帝,不過他立刻規避他所承認的意義,說 這不外是稱上帝為有能,公平,而又明達而已。於是他又得到另一個結論,說父是 子, 聖靈是父, 既無次序, 又無區別。那時代對宗教有興趣的學者們為對付這人的 邪惡起見,持相反的主張說:應該承認在獨一無二的上帝中有三特性。他們以簡明 的真理,反對撒伯流的巧辯,主張在獨一上帝裏面真實存有三特性,或說在上帝的 整體中,存有三位格。(\*聖父受苦論)

However, the novelty of words of this sort (if such it must be called) becomes especially useful when the truth is to be asserted against false accusers, who evade it by

their shifts. Of this today we have abundant experience in our great efforts to rout the enemies of pure and wholesome doctrine. With such crooked and sinuous twisting these slippery snakes glide away unless they are boldly pursued, caught, and crushed. Thus men of old, stirred up by various struggles over depraved dogmas, were compelled to set forth with consummate clarity what they felt, lest they leave any devious shift to the impious, who cloaked their errors in layers of verbiage. Because he could not oppose manifest oracles, Arius confessed that Christ was god and the Son of God, and, as if he had done what as right, pretended some agreement with the other men. Yet in the meantime he did not cease to prate that Christ was created and had a beginning, as other creatures. The ancients, to drag the man's versatile craftiness out of its hiding places, went further, declaring Christ the eternal Son of the Father, consubstantial with the Father. Here impiety boiled over when the Arians began most wickedly to hate and curse the word homoousios. But if at first they had sincerely and whole-heartedly confessed Christ to be God, they would not have denied him to be consubstantial with the Father. Who would dare inveigh against those upright men as wranglers and contentious persons because they became aroused to such heated discussion through one little word, and disturbed the peace of the church? Yet that mere word marked the distinction between Christians of pure faith and sacrilegious Arians. Afterward Sabellius arose, who counted the names of Father, Son, and Holy Spirit as almost of no importance, arguing that it was not because of any distinction that they were put forward, but that they were diverse attributes of God, of which sort there are very many. If it came to a debate, he was accustomed to confess that he recognized the Father as God, the Son as God, and the Spirit as God; but afterward a way out was found, contending that he had said nothing else than if he ad spoken of God as strong, and just, and wise. And so he re-echoed another old song, that the Father is the Son, and the Holy Spirit the Father, without rank, without distinction. To shatter the man's wickedness the upright doctors, who then had piety at heart, loudly responded that three properties must truly be recognized in the one God. And that they might fortify themselves against his tortuous cunning with the open and simple truth, they truly affirmed that a trinity of persons subsists in the one God, or, what was the same thing, subsists in the unity of God.

## ccn-tv.com 加爾文基督教要義卷 1-13

## 1.13.5 神學名詞的有限性與必需性 LIMITS AND NECESSITY OF THEOLOGICAL TERMS 1.13.5

*這些名詞既然不是草率造成的,我們就該小心謹慎,*免得我們的反對證明了 相信父、子、**聖靈就是一位上帝**; 雖然子不是父,靈也不是子,他們因彼此有特 殊的屬性而彼此不同。

If, therefore, these terms were not rashly invented, we ought to beware lest by repudiating them we be accused of overweening rashness. Indeed, I could wish they were buried, if only among all men this faith were agreed on: that Father and Son and Spirit are one God, yet the Son is not the Father, nor the Spirit the Son, but they are differentiated by a peculiar quality.

我對於文字上的爭論並不感興趣,因為我覺得,古人對這些問題的討論雖是很 誠懇的,但彼此的意見並不一致,即以個人論,也非始終一致。會議所採納的表陳 多少是希拉流所必須原諒的! 奥古斯丁有時候是有些誇張啊! 希臘人和拉丁人又是 如何的不同啊!但在這些差異之中,舉出一例就夠了。拉丁人把 homcousios 一字 譯作 Consubstantialis。表示父與子是同質的,這樣,就以 Substantia(質)一詞, 當作 essentia (本體) 一詞用。耶柔米寫信給達馬蘇(Damasus),認為若說上帝 中有三種本質,就是褻瀆: 然而希拉流說上帝有三種本質不下百次之多。可是耶柔 米對 hypostasis 一詞是何等的困惑啊! 他覺得關於「在上帝中有三位元」(三種實 體)的這種說法,恐難免含有毒素。即使用這個名詞的人是出於誠意,他仍要不客 氣地指為不當;不過,他這個聲明或者不是誠懇的,他或者有意無理地詆誹他所恨 的東方主教。他說在一切世俗的學派中,ousia 一名詞和 hypostasis 是相同的;其 實這兩個名詞通常的用法是和他這意見相反的。

奥古斯丁的態度較為溫和寬放,雖然他認為 hypostasis 一名詞,在拉丁人看來 有些新奇。卻是照希臘人普通的措詞,而且容忍那摹仿希臘人的語言的拉丁人。根 據教會史家蘇格拉底(Socrates)的三部歷史的記載,似乎是說,那首先把 hypostasis 一字濫用到這個題目上來的,實在是一班無知的人。希拉流控訴異端 派,說他們不該使那些屬於宗教思想的事情,陷入於人類語言的危險中;他們這樣 做,是很大的罪惡。他肯定地認為這就是非法的行為,是想說明那無法說明的事, 也是猜斷那未經承認的事。不久之後,他以為大膽的引用一些新名詞,是情有可諒 的,因為當他引用到自然、父、子、靈這些名詞的時候,他隨即又說,再進一步的 探討,便是超乎語言意義之外,超乎我們的感覺之外,也是超乎我們知識的概念之 外。在另一地方,他說高盧(Gaul)的主教們很幸運,因為他們除了教會自使徒時

代所接受古代的和很簡單的信條以外,既未曾創立過,也從未接受過什麼信條,甚 至不知道有其它的信條。

奥古斯丁也持相似理由,以為使用這個名詞是出於萬不得已,因為人類語言貧乏,不足以應付這麼大的一個問題;這名詞不是以說明上帝的本體為目的,乃是在避免完全緘默,所以才說父、子、靈是三位。

Really, I am not, indeed, such a stickler as to battle doggedly over mere words. For I note that the ancients, who otherwise speak very reverently concerning these matters, agree neither among themselves nor even at all times individually with themselves. What, now, are the formulas employed by the councils and excused by Hilary? With what great freedom does Augustine sometimes burst forth? How unlike are the Greeks and the Latins? But one example of the difference will suffice. When the Latins wished to translate the word homoousios they said "consubstantial," indicating that the substance of the Father and the Son is one, thus employing "substance" instead of "essence." Hence, likewise, Jerome in a letter to Damascus calls it sacrilege to predicate three substances in God. Yet you will find more than a hundred times in Hilary that there are three "substances" in God. But how confused is Jerome by the word "hypostasis"! For he suspects poison lurking when three hypostases in one God are mentioned! Even if one uses this word in a pious sense, he does not, nevertheless, hide the fact that it is an improper expression. This would be true even if he spoke sincerely, rather than tried willingly and knowingly to charge the Eastern bishops, whom he hates, with unjust calumnies! Surely he shows little candor in asserting that in all profane schools ousia is nothing else but hypostasis, an opinion repeatedly refuted by common and well-worn usage. Augustine is more moderate and courteous, since even though he says that the word hypostasis in this sense is new to Latin ears, yet he leaves to the Greeks their manner of speaking so much that he gently bears with the Latins who had imitated the Greek phrase. And what Socrates writes concerning hypostasis in Book 6 of the Tripartite History suggests that it was wrongly applied to this matter by unlearned men. But the same Hilary accuses the heretics of a great crime, that by their wickedness he is forced to submit to the peril of human speech what ought to have been locked within the sanctity of men's minds; and he does not hide the act that this is to do things unlawful, to speak things inexpressible, to presume things not conceded. A little later he excuses himself at length for daring to put forward new terms; for when he has set forth the natural names – Father, Son, and Spirit – he adds that whatever is sought besides these is beyond the meaning of language, above the reach of sense, above the capacity of understanding. And elsewhere he pronounces the bishops of Gaul happy because they had neither wrought out, nor received, nor known, any other confession at all than the ancient and very simple one that had been received among all churches from the apostolic age. And Augustine's excuse is similar: on account of the poverty of human speech in so great a matter, the word "hypostasis" had been forced upon us by necessity, not to express what it is, but only not to be silent on how Father, Son, and Spirit are three.

這些聖者的謙虛態度應成為我們的教訓,對那些不願贊同我們主張的人,只要他們不是出於驕傲、邪僻,和詭詐,就不應加以過份的責難。但在另一方面,也要請

他們考慮我們的立場,和我們不得已的苦衷,為什麼我們要用這類語言。這樣,就可以叫他們逐漸學會了這些有用的詞句。也要叫他們小心,不要怪我們一方面反對亞流派,而另一方面又反對撒伯流派,使兩派都無逃避的機會,以致引起別人懷疑他們自己成了亞流或撒伯流的門徒。亞流承認「基督是上帝」,但他又說:「祂是被創造,是有開始的。」他承認基督是「與父為一體」,卻又暗中對他的門徒說:「祂成為與父一體」,正如其他信徒一樣,不過有一種特權而已。你若說基督是「與父同體」的,那你算是撕下了他那偽君子的假面具,同時你對《聖經》卻並沒有增加什麼。撒伯流說:「父、子、靈這一類名詞,在形容上帝性上,並沒有區別。」你若說他們是三位,他必定說你是指「三個上帝。」其實說「上帝是三位一體」,你所指的就是《聖經》上所明說的,並可止住他們那無價值的饒舌。即使有人因為過份的謹慎,以致不承認這些名詞,但卻沒有人能否認《聖經》所說的唯一上帝,是實體聯合的意思;當它說到三位在一個本體的時候,乃是指一體中的三位。若是真能誠懇地承認這一點,我們對於用詞就不必再擔心了。但根據我已往長久的經驗,我覺得凡斤斤計較詞句的人,心中都含有毒素。所以與其為求得到他們的歡心而使用含糊的話語,倒不如激起他們的反感為是。

And this modesty of saintly men ought to warn us against forthwith so severely taking to task, like censors, those who do not wish to swear to the words conceived by us, provided they are not doing it out of either arrogance or forwardness or malicious craft. But let these very persons, in turn, weigh the necessity that compels us to speak thus, that gradually they may at length become accustomed to a useful manner of speaking. Also let them learn to beware, lest, when they have to Arians on the one hand and Sabellians on the other, while indignant that the opportunity to evade the issue is cut of, they arouse some suspicion to evade the issue is cut off, they arouse some suspicion that they are disciples either of Arius or of Sabellius. Arius says that Christ is God, but mutters that he was made and had a beginning. He says that Christ is one with the Father, but secretly whispers in the ears of his own partisans that He is united to the Father like other believers, although by a singular privilege. Say "consubstantial" and you will tear off the mask of this turncoat, and yet you add nothing to Scripture. Sabellius says that Father, Son, and Spirit signify no distinctions in God. Say they are three, and he will scream that you are naming three Gods. Say that in the on essence of God there is a trinity of persons; you will say in one word what Scripture states, and cut short empty talkativeness. Indeed, if anxious superstition so constrains anyone that he cannot bear these terms, yet no one could now deny, even if he were to burst, that when we hear "one" we ought to understand "unity of substance"; when we hear "three in one essence," the persons in this trinity are meant. When this is confessed without guile, we need not dally over words. But I have long since and repeatedly been experiencing that all who persistently quarrel over words nurse a secret poison. As a consequence, it is more expedient to challenge them deliberately than speak more obscurely to please them.

## 1.13.6 最重要觀念的教義:「位格」

## THE MEANING OF THE MOST IMPORTANT CONCEPTION: PERSON 1.13.6

現在不再講名詞上的爭論,我要討論本題了。我們所指的位格,是上帝的本質中一種生存形態 (subsistence),和其他方面是相關聯的,但因有不能互相交換的屬性而與其他兩位元不同。我們所謂「生存形態」一名詞,和「本質」不同。如果「道」僅是指上帝,而沒有其他特殊的屬性,那麼約翰說「道與上帝同在」(約1:1-5)就不合理了。他隨即又說「道就是上帝」,使我們想到本體的聯合。然而因為祂若不是存在於父裏面,就不能「與上帝同在」,所以「生存形態」與「本質」,雖互相關聯,卻彼此有它們的特徵。因此我說三種「生存形態」,每一種和其他兩種都是相關聯的,但各有不同的特性。我們在這裏而特別用「相關聯」這幾字(或作「比較」),因為當我們只說到上帝的時候,雙方所特具的屬性使雙方有了區別。第三,我說各自所特具的屬性,是指那不能傳遞的,因為凡屬於父的特性,不能應用或轉移到子的身上。其實我並非不贊同特土良(Tertullian)的定義,他說:「在上帝中有一定的分配或次序,可是並不破壞本質的統一。」

### 三位一體的教義

THE DOCTRINE OF THE TRINITY

### 只有一位上帝,以三個位格存在。

There is only one God (Godhead), Three Persons.

#### 聖父是上帝。聖子是上帝。聖靈是上帝(本質)。

The Father is God.

The Son is God.

Deity
The Spirit is God.

Deity
Deity

聖父是父。聖子是子。聖靈是靈。(**生存形態**)

父第一, 子是第二, 靈是第三。(**次序**)

聖父不是聖子。聖子不是聖靈。聖靈不是聖父(位格)。

The Father is not the Son.

The Son is not the Spirit.

Personhood

The Spirit is not the Father.

Personhood

#### 約1:1-5

- 1 太初有道,道與神同在,道就是神。
- 2 這道太初與神同在。
- <sup>3</sup> 萬物是藉著他造的,凡被造的,沒有一樣不是藉著他造的。

- 4 生命在他裏頭,這生命就是人的光。
- 5光照在黑暗裏,黑暗卻不接受光。

But laying aside disputation over terms, I shall proceed to speak of the thing itself: "Person," therefore, a call a "subsistence" in God's essence, which, while related to the others, is distinguished by an incommunicable quality. By the term "subsistence" we should understand something quite different from "essence." For if the Word were simply God, and yet possessed no other characteristic mark, John would wrongly have said that the Word was always with God [John 1:1-5]. When immediately after he adds that the Word was also God himself, he recalls us to the essence as a unity. But because he could not be with God without residing in the Father, hence emerges the idea of a subsistence, which, even though it has been joined with the essence by a common bond and cannot be separated from it, yet has a special mark whereby it is distinguished from it. Now, of the three subsistences I say that each one, while related to the others, is distinguished by a special quality. This "relation" is here distinctly expressed: because where simple and indefinite mention is made of God, this name pertains no less to the Son and the Spirit than to the Father. But as soon as the Father is compared with the Son, the character of each distinguishes the one from the other. Thirdly, whatever is proper to each individually, I maintain to be incommunicable because whatever is attributed to the Father as a distinguishing mark cannot agree with, or be transferred to, the Son. Nor am I displeased with Tertullian's definition, provided it be taken in the right sense, that there is a kind of distribution or economy in God which has no effect on the unity of essence. (see footnote 23, Battles, vol. 1, p. 128.)

#### John 1:1-5

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>1</sup> In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>2</sup> He was with God in the beginning.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>3</sup> Through him all things were made; without him nothing was made that has been made.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>4</sup> In him was life, and that life was the light of men.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>5</sup> The light shines in the darkness, but the darkness has not understood  $^{[\underline{a}]}$  it.

# 1.13.16 位格的分辨:不是分開;不是上帝不同的頭銜,不是講論上帝不同方法

聖子的屬性(生存形態)與聖父不同,有分別;聖子在上帝裏的道,與父有別

DISTINCTION OF PERSONS: NOT DIVISIONS, NOT JUST TITLES, DIFFERENT WAYS OF SIGNIFYING GOD:

**SON'S ATTRIBUTES (subsistence) = DISTINCT FROM FATHER.** 

**SON = WORD IN GOD, OTHER THAN FATHER Inst., 1.13.16-20** 

## 三位一體的統一性

## 1.13.16 - Oneness

上帝在基督降臨時既然更清楚地顯現自己,所以三位一體也更加易於認識(修:所以透過三個位格,上帝也更容易被人認識)。在許多證據中,單舉一個就夠了。保羅把主,信心,和洗禮三者合而為一(參弗 4: 5-6),由一推論到其他,因為信仰只有一個,所以他推證主也只有一位;因為洗禮只有一個,所以信仰也只有一個。因此,如果我們由洗禮而進入一位上帝的信仰和宗教,我們就必須承認誰是真實的上帝。我們奉誰的名受洗。基督莊重地吩咐我們「奉父、子、聖靈的名,給他們施洗,」祂的用意無疑地是說,完全信仰的亮光現在顯現了。就是說,我們是奉一位顯為父子聖靈的上帝的名受洗的。由此可見在上帝的本體中,存有三位,這三位就是所稱為唯一的上帝的。

#### 弗 4: 5

5 一主,一信,一洗,

6一神,就是眾人的父,超乎眾人之上,貫乎眾人之中,也住在眾人之內。

#### 馬 28: 19

<sup>19</sup> 所以,你們要去,使萬民作我的門徒,奉父、子、聖靈的名給他們施洗(或作:給他們施洗,歸於父、子、聖靈的名)。

Moreover, because *God* more clearly disclosed himself in the coming of Christ, thus he also *became known more familiarly in three persons*. But of the many testimonies this one will suffice for us. For Paul so connects these three – God, faith, and baptism [Eph. 4:5-6] – as to reason from one to the other: namely, *because faith is one*, that he may thereby show God to be one; because baptism is one, that he may thence show faith also to be one. Therefore, if through baptism we are initiated into the faith

and religion of one God, we must consider him into whose name we are baptized to be the true God. Indeed, there is no doubt that Christ willed by this solemn pronouncement to testify that the perfect light of faith was manifested when he said, "Baptize them into the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost" [Matt. 28:19 p.]. For this means precisely to be baptized into the name of the one God who has shown himself with complete clarity in the Father, the Son, and the Spirit. Hence it is quite clear that in God's essence reside three persons in whom one God is known.

#### Eph. 4:5-6

There is one body and one Spirit—just as you were called to one hope when you were called— one Lord, one faith, one baptism;

#### Matt. 28:19

<sup>19</sup> Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in<sup>[a]</sup> the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit,

因為信仰既不應當東張西望,也不應當在猶豫不定中漂泊,必須集中到唯一的上帝,凝視祂,依附祂。根據這些前提,更容易證明假如有多種不同的信仰,就必有多上帝了。洗禮既是信仰的聖禮,所以對我們證實了上帝的統一性,因為洗禮只有一個。因此,我們可以斷言,若不是以唯一上帝的名施洗,那種洗禮便不合法,因為我們奉誰的名受洗就相信誰。基督吩咐我們奉父子聖靈的名施洗,意思豈不是要我們對父子聖靈有專一的信仰嗎?這豈不是證明父子聖靈是一位上帝嗎?因為只有一位,獨一無二的上帝,是不可否認的真理,因此,我們可以斷定道與靈都是上帝的本質。亞流派既承認子的上帝性,可是又不承認祂有上帝的實體,真是愚不可及的。馬其頓紐派也是陷於同樣的虛幻,因為他們以為靈的名字不過指那施於人的恩賜。因為智慧、知識、審慎、勇敢,和敬畏主,都是由祂而生,所以唯獨祂是智慧、知識、審慎、勇敢和敬虔靈。聖靈也不是按照恩典的分派而分裂,正如使徒所說的,不論恩賜怎樣分予, 祂卻常是唯一而不變的(參林前 12:11)。

#### 賽 11: 2

<sup>2</sup> 耶和華的靈必住在他身上,就是使他有智慧和聰明的靈,謀略和能力的靈,知 識和敬畏耶和華的靈。

#### 林前 12: 11

"這一切都是這位聖靈所運行、隨己意分給各人的。

Indeed, faith ought not to gaze hither and thither, nor to discourse of various matters, but to look upon the one God, to unite with him, to cleave to him. From this, then, it is easily established that if there are various kinds of faith, there must also be many gods. Now because Baptism is the sacrament of faith, it confirms for us the unity of God from the fact that it is one. Hence it also follows that we are not permitted to be baptized except into the one God, because we embrace the faith of him into whose name we are baptized. What, then, did Christ mean when he commanded that *Baptism should* 

be in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit, except that we ought with one faith to believe in the Father, the Son, and the Spirit? What else is this than to testify clearly that Father, Son, and Spirit are one God? Therefore, since that there is one God, not more, is regarded as settled principle, we conclude that Word and Spirit are nothing else than the very essence of God. The Arians used to prate most foolishly when, in confessing the divinity of the Son, they took away the substance of God from him. A like madness tormented the Macedonians, who by "Spirit" wanted to understand only those gifts of grace poured out upon men. For, as wisdom, understanding, prudence, fortitude, and fear of the Lord proceed from him, so is he the one Spirit of wisdom, prudence, fortitude, and godliness [cf. Isa. 11:2]. And he is not divided according to the distribution of gifts, but however diversely they may be divided; yet, says the apostle, he remains "one and the same" [I Cor. 12:11].

#### Isa. 11:2

<sup>2</sup> The Spirit of the LORD will rest on him—the Spirit of wisdom and of understanding, the Spirit of counsel and of power, the Spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the LORD -

#### I Cor. 12:11

<sup>11</sup> All these are the work of one and the same Spirit, and he gives them to each one, just as he determines.

# 1.13.17 位格之間有分別,但不是分開;子的本性與父不同子「與上帝同在」,

另一位「作見證;子與父一同有榮耀; 聖靈與父,子不同」

DISTINCTION, NOT DIVISION SON'S CHARACTER =
DIFFERENT FROM FATHER: "WITH GOD,"
"ANOTHER" BEARS WITNESS; SON HELD FATHER'S
GLORY WITH HIM SPIRIT = DISTINCT FROM FATHER
AND SON 1.13.17

## 1.13.17 三位一體

在另一方面,我們在《聖經》中又看到**父與道不同,道與靈亦各異**。在討論這些問題時,這上帝秘的偉大必使我們以極端敬虔和清醒的頭腦來思考。我對拿先修的貴鉤利的話非常贊同,他說:

#### **1.13.17 – Threeness**

Again, Scripture sets forth a distinction of the Father from the Word, and of the Word from the Spirit. Yet the greatness of the mystery warns us how much reverence and sobriety we ought to use in investigating this. And that passage in Gregory of Nazianzus vastly delights me:

"我一想到唯一的上帝,就立刻被三位的榮光所照射;同時,我一發現三位,立刻回到唯一的上帝。"因此我們不要以為這三位一體的觀念,含有分立或沒有統一性的意思。父、子、靈的名當然含有實際的區別;誰也不要以為這些名僅是一些別號,用來指出上帝不同的工作;可是這是差別,不是分裂。上面所引的章節,表示子有與父不同的屬性,因為除非道與上帝不同,道就不會與上帝同在,也不會與父同有榮耀了。他又證明與父有區別,說:「另有一位給我們見證」(約5:32;8:16,18)。而且在另一處也說父以道創造萬物,若道與父沒有什麼差別,祂就不能這樣作。再者,那降臨在人間的不是父,乃是從父那裏來的子。父既沒有死,也沒有復活;那死而復活的,乃是父所差遣的。這個區別,也不始於道成肉身之時,祂早已明明是在父懷裏的獨生子(參約1:18)。因為有誰敢說子是等到剛要從天降臨,取得人的本性時,才進入父的懷裏呢?所以,祂是以先就在父的懷裏,和父同享榮耀。關於聖靈與父的差別,基督已經說過「靈從父出來」(約15:26)。祂也時常說聖靈和祂自己是不同;例如祂應許有「另外一位保惠師」被差遣而來(約14:16;15:26)。

亞 13: 7

<sup>7</sup> 萬軍之耶和華說:刀劍哪,應當興起,攻擊我的牧人和我的同伴。擊打牧人,羊 就分散;我必反手加在微小者的身上。

#### 約5:32

<sup>32</sup> 另有一位給我作見證,我也知道他給我作的見證是真的。

#### 約8:16

<sup>16</sup> 就是判斷人,我的判斷也是真的,因為不是我獨自在這裏,還有差我來的父與我同在。

#### 約1:3

3 萬物是藉著他造的;凡被造的,沒有一樣不是藉著他造的。

#### 約1:18

18 從來沒有人看見神,只有在父懷裏的獨生子將他表明出來。

#### 來 11: 3

<sup>3</sup> 我們因著信,就知道諸世界是藉神話造成的;這樣,所看見的,並不是從顯然 之物造出來的。

#### 約 17:5

5 父啊, 現在求你使我同你享榮耀, 就是未有世界以先, 我同你所有的榮耀。

#### 約 15: 26

<sup>26</sup> 但我要從父那裏差保惠師來,就是從父出來真理的聖靈,他來了,就要為我作見 證。

#### 約 14: 16

16 我要求父,父就另外賜給你們一位保惠師(或作:訓慰師;下同),叫他永遠與 你們同在,

"I cannot think on the one without quickly being encircled by the splendor of the three; nor can I discern the three without being straightway carried back to the one." Let us not, then, be led to imagine a trinity of persons that keeps our thoughts distracted and does not at once lead them back to that unity. Indeed, the words "Father," "Son," and "Spirit" imply a real distinction — let no one think that these titles, whereby God is variously designated from his works, are empty — but a distinction, not a division. The passages that we have already cited [e.g., Zech. 13: 7] show that the Son has a character distinct from the Father, because the Word would not have been with God unless he were another than the Father, nor would he have had his glory with the Father were he not distinct from the Father. In like manner he distinguishes the Father from

himself when he says that there is another who bears witness to him [John 5:32; 8:16; and elsewhere]. And with this agrees what is said elsewhere: that the Father created all things through the Word [John 1:3; Heb. 11:3]. This he could not have done without being somehow distinct from the Word. Furthermore, it was not the Father who descended upon the earth, but he who went forth from the Father; the Father did not die, nor did he arise again, but rather he who had been sent by the Father. No did this distinction have its beginning from the time that he assumed flesh, but before this also it is manifest that he was the only-begotten "in the bosom of the Father" [John 1:18]. For who would take upon himself to assert that the Son did not enter into the bosom of the Father until he descended from heaven to assume humanity? Therefore he was in the bosom of the Father before, and held his own glory in the presence of the Father [John 17:5]. Christ implies the distinction of the Holy Spirit from the Father when he says that the Holy Spirit proceeds from the Father [John 15:26; cf. ch. 14:26]. He implies the distinction of the Holy Spirit from himself as often as he calls the Spirit "another," as when he announces that he will send another Comforter [John 14:16], and often elsewhere.

#### Zech. 13: 7

<sup>7</sup> "Awake, O sword, against my shepherd, against the man who is close to me!" declares the LORD Almighty. "Strike the shepherd, and the sheep will be scattered, and I will turn my hand against the little ones.

#### John 5:32

<sup>32</sup> There is another who testifies in my favor, and I know that his testimony about me is valid.

#### John 8:16

<sup>16</sup> But if I do judge, my decisions are right, because I am not alone. I stand with the Father, who sent me.

#### John 1:3

<sup>3</sup> Through him all things were made; without him nothing was made that has been made.

#### Heb. 11:3

<sup>3</sup> By faith we understand that the universe was formed at God's command, so that what is seen was not made out of what was visible.

#### John 1:18

No one has ever seen God, but God the One and Only, [e][f] who is at the Father's side, has made him known.

#### John 17:5

<sup>5</sup> And now, Father, glorify me in your presence with the glory I had with you before the world began.

#### John 15:26

<sup>26</sup> "When the Counselor comes, whom I will send to you from the Father, the Spirit of truth who goes out from the Father, he will testify about me.

John 14:16  $^{16}$  And I will ask the Father, and he will give you another Counselor to be with you forever—

## 1.13.18 任何比喻是不足夠的

ANALOGIES = INADEOUATE Difference of Father, Son, and Spirit

我頗懷疑是不是應該借用人事的比喻,去說明這種區別。**教父們**有時候採用 這種方法,但**他們也承認他們所用的比喻,很不相稱。**因此,在這宗事上,我深 恐僭越,避免引用失當,給惡人以誹謗的機會,並陷無知的人於錯誤。**然而對那 在《聖經》上已經說明的區別,我們不應該緘默**;這就是說:把動的原則和一切 有限的根源,歸之於父;把智慧,忠告,與一切運行的調度,歸之於子;把行動的 權能與功效,歸之於靈。再者,**永恆雖然屬於父,但也屬於子與靈,因為上帝決** 不曾缺少智慧和權能,而在永恆中,我們亦無庸詢問事物的先後: 雖然如此,說 到先後仍非徒然無益,所以把父列在第一位,子列在第二位,因數是由父而來, **然後才是聖靈,因聖靈是由兩者所發出的。**每一個人的思想首先當想到上帝,然 後想到由祂所生的智慧,最後才想到執行日祂的智慧命令的權能。因這個理由,我 們認為子是出於父,靈是出於父與子。在羅馬書第八章,說得最為清楚。這一章裏 面同一的靈都無差別的指為"基督的靈", "那使基督從死裹復活的靈。"這說法並無 不當之處。彼得也說,先知是由於基督的靈而說預言(參彼前 1:11),《聖經》 在其它地方也常說,這是由於父上帝的靈。

#### 羅8:9

9 如果神的靈住在你們心裏,你們就不屬肉體,乃屬聖靈了。人若沒有基督的 靈,就不是屬基督的。

#### 羅 8: 11

11 然而,叫耶穌從死裏復活者的靈若住在你們心裏,那叫基督耶穌從死裏復活的, 也必藉著住在你們心裏的聖靈,使你們必死的身體又活過來。

#### 彼後 1: 21

11 因為預言從來沒有出於人意的,乃是人被聖靈感動,說出神的話來。

#### 彼前1:11

11 就是考察在他們心裏基督的靈,預先證明基督受苦難,後來得榮耀,是指著什 麼時候, 並怎樣的時候。

I really do not know whether it is expedient to borrow comparisons form human affairs to express the force of this distinction. Men of old were indeed accustomed sometimes to do so, but at the same time they confessed that the analogies they advanced were quite inadequate. Thus is it that I shrink from all rashness here: lest if anything should be inopportunely expressed, it may give occasion either of calumny to the malicious, or of delusion to the ignorant. Nevertheless, it is not fitting to suppress the distinction that we observe to be expressed in Scripture. It is this: to the Father is attributed the beginning of activity, and the fountain and wellspring of all things; to the Son, wisdom, counsel, and the ordered disposition of all things; but to the Spirit is assigned the power an efficacy of that activity. Indeed, although the eternity of the Father is also the eternity of the Son and the Sprit, since God could never exist apart from his wisdom and power, and we must not seek in eternity a before or an after, nevertheless the observance of an order is not meaningless or superfluous, when the Father is thought of as first, then from him the Son, and finally from both the Spirit. For the mind of each human being is naturally inclined to contemplate God first, then the wisdom coming forth from him, and lastly the power whereby he executes the decrees of his plan. For this reason, the Son is said to come forth from the Father alone; the Spirit, from the Father and the Son at the same time. This appears in many passages, but nowhere more clearly than in chapter 8 of Romans, where the same Spirit is indifferently called sometimes the Spirit of Christ [v. 9], sometimes the Spirit of him "who raised up Christ ... from the dead" [v. 11] – and not without justification. For Peter also testifies that it was by the Spirit of Christ that the prophets prophesied [II Peter 1:21; CF. I Peter 1:11], even though Scripture often teaches that it was the Spirit of God the Father.

#### Rom. 8:9

<sup>9</sup> You, however, are controlled not by the sinful nature but by the Spirit, if the Spirit of God lives in you. And if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, he does not belong to Christ.

#### Rom. 8:11

<sup>11</sup> And if the Spirit of him who raised Jesus from the dead is living in you, he who raised Christ from the dead will also give life to your mortal bodies through his Spirit, who lives in you.

#### II Peter 1:21

<sup>21</sup> For prophecy never had its origin in the will of man, but men spoke from God as they were carried along by the Holy Spirit.

#### I Peter 1:11

<sup>11</sup> trying to find out the time and circumstances to which the Spirit of Christ in them was pointing when he predicted the sufferings of Christ and the glories that would follow.

## ccn-tv.com 加爾文基督教要義卷 1-14

## 1.13.19 聖父,聖子,聖靈之間的關係 THE RELATIONSHIP OF FATHER, SON, AND SPIRIT 1.13.19

這種區別與上帝絕對的統一性並不抵觸,乃是證明子與父為同一上帝,因為子 與父所具有的靈是同一的;而且靈並不是在子與父以外的另一實體,因為祂是父之 靈,也是子之靈。 *因整個本體是在每一個位格中,而每一個位格,都有獨特的地* 方。據基督自己所說: 「我在父裏面,父也在我裏面」(約 14: 10, 11),可知 父完全在子裹面,子也完全在父裹面。教會的作家也從沒有承認父子聖靈之有別, 是由於本體的不同。奧古斯丁說:「*這不同的稱呼,是表明彼此相互間的關係,* **不是表明實體不同。實體只有一個**。」這個說明,可以調和教父們的意見,不然 他們彼此將如水火之不相容。他們有時候說,子出於父,有時候又說,祂自己有基 本的上帝性,所以祂與父同為萬有之源(principium)。奧古斯丁在別的地方很明 白地說明了這分岐的原則,他說:「*就基督的本身而論,他稱為上帝,但就祂和* **父的關係而論,祂稱為子。**」 再者 「**就父的本身而論,祂稱為上帝,但就祂和子** 的關係而論,祂又稱為父。那和子有關係的,是父,而不是子; 那和父有關係 **的,是子,而不是父;祂們分開來說,是父與子,其實是同一上帝。**」 所以當我 們單獨講子, 而沒有涉及父的時候, 我們盡可承認祂是自存的, 所以稱祂為萬有之 源:但當我們講到祂和父的關係時,我們須承認祂是為父所生的才對。奧古斯丁的 三位一體論(On the Trinity)的第五卷,完全是討論這個問題的。我們寧可相信他 所說的關係,總比因好奇而鑽入上帝秘的氣氛中,徒然作無謂的猜踱為佳。

約 14: 10-11

Furthermore, this distinction is so far from contravening the utterly simple unity of God as to permit us to prove from it that the Son is one God with the Father because he shares with the Father one and the same Spirit; and that the Spirit is not something other than the Father and different from the Son, because he is the Spirit of the Father and the Son. For *in each hypostasis the whole divine nature is understood, with this qualification – that to each belongs his own peculiar quality.* The Father is wholly in the Son, the Son wholly in the Father, even as he himself declares: "I am in the Father, and the Father in me" [John 14:10]. And ecclesiastical writers do not concede that *the one is separated from the other* by any difference of essence. By *these appellations which set forth the distinction* (says Augustine) is signified their *mutual relationships and not the very substance by which they are one*. In this sense the opinions of the

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>10</sup> 我在父裏面,父在我裏面,你不信嗎?我對你們所說的話,不是憑著自己說的, 乃是住在我裏面的父做他自己的事。

<sup>11</sup> 你們當信我,我在父裏面,父在我裏面;即或不信,也當因我所做的事信我。

ancients are to be harmonized, which otherwise would seem somewhat to clash. Sometimes, indeed, they teach that the Father is the beginning of the Son; sometimes they declare that the Son has both divinity and essence from himself, and thus has one beginning with the Father. Augustine well and clearly expresses the cause of this diversity in another place, when he speaks as follows: "Christ with respect to himself is called God; with respect to the Father, Son. Again, the Father with respect to himself is called God; with respect to the Son, Father. In so far as he is called Father with respect to the Son, he is not the Son; in so far as he is called the Son with respect to the Father, he is not the Father; in so far as he is called both Father with respect to himself, and Son with respect to himself, he is the same God." Therefore, when we speak simply of the Son without regard to the Father, we well and properly declare him to be of himself; and for this reason we call him the sole beginning. But when we mark the relation that he ahs with the Father, we rightly make the Father the beginning of the Son. The whole fifth book of Augustine On the Trinity is concerned with explaining this matter. Indeed, it is far safer to stop with that relation which Augustine sets forth than by too subtly penetrating into the sublime mystery to wander through many evanescent speculations.

#### John 14:10

- <sup>10</sup> Don't you believe that I am in the Father, and that the Father is in me? The words I say to you are not just my own. Rather, it is the Father, living in me, who is doing his work.
- <sup>11</sup> Believe me when I say that I am in the Father and the Father is in me; or at least believe on the evidence of the miracles themselves.

### 1.13.20 三位一體的上帝

#### THE TRIUNE GOD 1.13.20

所以讓那些恬靜,以信仰為滿足的人,注意那值得知道的事,就夠了。我們既 承認相信一位上帝,**上帝這兩字是表示一個唯一的本體;在這本體中,我們承認 有三位。**所以當我們僅僅引用上帝二字的時候,不但是指父而言,也是指子與靈 兩者而言。但當子與父聯結的時候,那就是表示兩者間相互的關係,我們以此指出 三位中的區分。但因三位元的特殊的屬性而產生的一定的次序,並因始因在父,所 以當父與子,或靈一同稱呼的時候,上帝這名總是指父而言。用這方法,本體的統 一性就得以保存,三位的次序,也賴以維繫;然而這對於子與靈的上帝性,毫無貶 損。我們已經知道,**使徒所稱為上帝的兒子的,就是摩西和眾先知所稱的耶和 華,**所以常常使我們回到**祂本體的統一。**如果我們稱子為異於父的另一上帝,就 是可憎的褻瀆,因為上帝本名不指任何彼此的關係;而以上帝自己而論,祂也不能 被稱為甲,或被稱為乙。(\***耶和華所是,耶穌基督都是**)

Therefore, let those who dearly love soberness, and who will be content with the measure of faith, receive in brief form what is useful to know: namely, that, when we profess to believe in one God, under the name of God is understood a single, simple essence, in which we comprehend three persons, or hypostases. Therefore, whenever the name of God is mentioned without particularization, there are designated no less the Son and the Spirit than the Father; but where the Son is joined to the Father, then the relation of the two enters in; and so we distinguish among the persons. But because the peculiar qualities in the persons carry an order within them, e.g., in the Father is the beginning and the source, so often as mention is made of the Father and the Son together, or the Spirit, the name of God is peculiarly applied to the Father. In this way, unity of essence is retained, and a reasoned order is kept, which yet takes nothing away from the deity of the Son and the Spirit. Certainly, since we have already seen that the apostles declared him to be the Son of God whom Moses and the prophets testified to be Jehovah, it is always necessary to come to the unity of essence. Thus we regard it a detestable sacrilege for the Son to be called another God than the Father, for the simple name of God admits no relation, nor can God be said to be this or that with respect to himself.

**耶和華一名稱,廣義的說,可適用於基督,**甚至在保羅的作品中亦可看出:「為這事,我三次求過主」(林後 12: 8, 9),當提到基督的回答「我的恩典夠你用的」以後,他即刻加上一句說:「好叫基督的權能,加在我的身上。」在這裏「主」這一字確是作『**耶和華**』解,若把這名詞僅限於「中保」,就沒有什麼價值,而且非常幼稚,因為這語法是絕對性的,並沒有包含父與子之間的任何比較,我們知道使徒們沿用《聖經》希臘文譯本的慣例,用 Kyrios (主)一字,而不用耶和華。不要找別的例子,在保羅對主的禱告中,和彼得引用約珥書所講的:「凡求告主名的,就必得救」(珥 2: 28-32; 徒 2: 16-21),如出一轍。在適當地方我們還要討論把這特殊名稱歸之於子的另一理由;現在只說當保羅專向上帝禱告之時,他隨即加上基督的名。照樣,基督自己也以「一個靈」稱呼整個上帝。因為

整個上帝的本體是靈性的這一種說法並沒有可反對的; 在這上帝聖本體中包含著 父,子和靈,這是《聖經》所明白指示的。上帝既稱為一個靈,也稱為聖靈,因為 聖靈是整個本質中的一位, 既說祂是上帝的靈, 也說祂是由上帝發出的靈。

#### 林後 12: 8, 9

- 為這事, 我三次求過主, 叫這刺離開我。
- 9 他對我說:我的恩典夠你用的,因為我的能力是在人的軟弱上顯得完全。所 以,我更喜歡誇自己的軟弱,好叫基督的能力覆庇我。

#### 珥 2: 28-32

- 28 以後,我要將我的靈澆灌凡有血氣的。你們的兒女要說預言: 你們的老年人要做 異夢,少年人要見異象。
- 29 在那些日子,我要將我的靈澆灌我的僕人和使女。
- ◎ 在天上地下,我要顯出奇事,有血,有火,有煙柱。
- 引日頭要變為黑暗,月亮要變為血,這都在耶和華大而可畏的日子未到以前。
- 2 到那時候,凡求告耶和華名的就必得救;因為照耶和華所說的,在錫安山,耶路 撒冷必有逃脱的人,在剩下的人中必有耶和華所召的。

### 徒 2: 16-21

- 16 這正是先知約珥所說的:
- 17 神說: 在末後的日子,我要將我的靈澆灌凡有血氣的。你們的兒女要說預言: 你 們的少年人要見異象: 老年人要做異夢。
- 18 在那些日子,我要將我的靈澆灌我的僕人和使女,他們就要說預言。
- 19 在天上、我要顯出奇事; 在地下、我要顯出神蹟; 有血, 有火, 有煙霧。
- 20 日頭要變為黑暗,月亮要變為血;這都在主大而明顯的日子未到以前。
- 21 到那時候,凡求告主名的,就必得救。

#### 約4:24

24 神是個靈(或無個字),所以拜他的必須用心靈和誠實拜他。

Now, that the name of Jehovah taken without specification corresponds to Christ is also clear from Paul's words: "Three times I besought the Lord about this" [II Cor. 12:8]. When he received Christ's answer, "My grace is sufficient for you," he added a little later, "That the power of Christ may dwell in me" [II Cor. 12:9]. For it is certain that the name "Lord" was put there in place of "Jehovah," and thus it would be foolish and childish so to restrict it to the person of the Mediator, seeing that in his prayer he uses an absolute expression which introduces no reference to the relationship of Father and Son. And we know from the common custom of the Greeks that the apostles usually substitute the name κυριοσ kurios [Lord] for Jehovah. And to take a ready example, Paul prayed to the Lord in no other sense than that in which Peter cites the passage from Joel, "Whoever calls upon the name of the Lord shall be saved" [Acts 2:16-21; Joel 2:2832 ]. Where this name is expressly applied to the Son, we shall see in its proper place that the reason is different. For the present, it is enough to grasp that when Paul calls upon God in an absolute sense he immediately adds the name of Christ. Even so, Christ himself calls God in his entirety "Spirit [John 4:24]. For nothing excludes the view that the whole essence of God is spiritual, in which are comprehended Father, Son, and Spirit. This is made plain from Scripture. For as we there hear God called Spirit, so also do we hear the Holy Spirit, seeing that the Spirit is a hypostasis of the whole essence, spoken of as of God and from God.

#### II Cor. 12:8-9

- <sup>8</sup> Three times I pleaded with the Lord to take it away from me.
- <sup>9</sup> But he said to me, "My grace is sufficient for you, for my power is made perfect in weakness." Therefore I will boast all the more gladly about my weaknesses, so that Christ's power may rest on me.

#### Acts 2:16-21

- <sup>16</sup> No, this is what was spoken by the prophet Joel:
- 17 " 'In the last days, God says, I will pour out my Spirit on all people. Your sons and daughters will prophesy, your young men will see visions, your old men will dream dreams.
- <sup>18</sup> Even on my servants, both men and women, I will pour out my Spirit in those days, and they will prophesy.
- <sup>19</sup> I will show wonders in the heaven above and signs on the earth below, blood and fire and billows of smoke.
- <sup>20</sup> The sun will be turned to darkness and the moon to blood before the coming of the great and glorious day of the Lord.
- <sup>21</sup> And everyone who calls on the name of the Lord will be saved.'<sup>[c]</sup>

#### Joel 2:28-32

- <sup>28</sup> "And afterward, I will pour out my Spirit on all people. Your sons and daughters will prophesy, your old men will dream dreams, your young men will see visions.
- <sup>29</sup> Even on my servants, both men and women, I will pour out my Spirit in those days.
- <sup>30</sup> I will show wonders in the heavens and on the earth, blood and fire and billows of smoke.
- The sun will be turned to darkness and the moon to blood before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the LORD.

<sup>32</sup> And everyone who calls on the name of the LORD will be saved; for on Mount Zion and in Jerusalem there will be deliverance, as the LORD has said, among the survivors whom the LORD calls.

John 4:24  $^{24}$  God is spirit, and his worshipers must worship in spirit and in truth."

## ccn-tv.com 加爾文基督教要義卷 1-15

## 1.13.23 子是上帝,正如父是上帝 THE SON IS GOD, EVEN AS THE FATHER 1.13.23

(新譯:)

從這些混亂又冒出另外一個怪獸出現。又有些作惡劇的人,為了避免異端 Servetus 的不敬虔, 他們說: 是的, 有三個位格; 但是父的名字是特別指祂, 父生 出 (formed) 子或靈出的時候; 父就將祂的神性灌注入子與靈裹 (這是錯誤的)。他們 毫無羞恥地的說:父與子、靈不同在那裏:唯有父是「賜於本質與賜於神性的那 位」 (essence giver)。他們說:基督一般被稱為上帝的神子,所以只有父才是上 帝。可是他們沒有注意到,雖然「上帝」是子的名字,但是「上帝」這名字有時又 特別是父的名字,因為祂是神性的來源:但這樣說,是說出神性是單一的 (simple unity of essence).

From this morass another similar monster has come forth. For certain rascals, to escape the invidiousness and shame of Servetus' impiety, indeed confessed that there are three persons; but they added the provision that the Father, who is truly and properly the sole God, in forming the Son and the Spirit, infused into them his own deity. Indeed, they do not refrain from this dreadful manner of speaking: the Father is distinguished from the Son and the Spirit by this mark, that he is the only "essence giver." First they allege the specious argument that Christ is commonly called the Son of God and infer from this that no other than the Father is, properly speaking, God. Yet they do not observe that, even though the name "God" is also common to the Son, it is sometimes applied to the Father par excellence because he is the fountainhead and beginning of deity – and this is done to denote the simple unity of essence.

他們會反駁說: 祂若真正是上帝的兒子,那麼稱祂為任何位格(人)的兒子 是荒謬的。我這樣回答:兩者都對: 祂是上帝的兒子,因為「道|在萬世之前就由 父所生 [參: 林前 2: 7] (因為我們還沒有機會提到「中保」的位格); 但是為了 澄清的緣故,我們必須尊重這位格,不含糊地用「上帝」這名字; 「上帝」在這裏 是指父。因為我們若只認為父是上帝,我們就肯定使子從這層次降格了。因此, 當我們提到上帝的時候,我們萬不可認為父於子之間有任何的對立,好像真上帝 的名字僅可用在父的身上。

#### 林前 2:7

<sup>7</sup> 這智慧世上有權有位的人沒有一個知道的、他們若知道,就不把榮耀的主釘在十 字架上了。

They object: if he is truly the Son of God, it is absurd to think of him as the Son of a person. I reply that both are true: that is, he is the Son of God, because the Word was begotten by the Father before all ages [cf. I Cor. 2:7] (for we do not yet have occasion to mention the person of the Mediator); and yet for the sake of clarification we must have regard to the person, so as not to take the name of God here without qualification, but as used of the Father. For if we consider no one but the Father to be God, we definitely cast the Son down from this rank. Therefore whenever mention is made of deity, we ought by no means to admit any antithesis between Son and Father, as if the name of the true God applied to the latter alone.

#### I Cor. 2:7

No, we speak of God's secret wisdom, a wisdom that has been hidden and that God destined for our glory before time began.

當然,向以賽亞自我顯現的上帝(賽 6: 1)是唯一真上帝,而約翰也承認,這位上帝就是基督(約 12: 41)。透過以賽亞的口作見證,說祂必成為猶太人的絆腳石的那位(賽 8: 14)就是唯一真上帝;保羅也宣告祂就是耶穌基督(羅 9: 33)。當祂透過以賽亞宣告:「我就是(永在的)」(參:賽 49: 18):「萬有都必在我面前屈膝」(羅 14: 11;參:賽 45: 24),祂就是唯獨真上帝;但保羅解釋,這位真上帝就是耶穌基督(羅 14: 11)。使徒們還提出其他的見證:「主阿,你起初立了地的根基」(來 1: 10;詩 102: 25-26)。同樣地:「上帝的使者都要拜祂」(來 1: 6;詩 97: 7)。這些都只可指唯一真上帝而說:可是,《希伯來書》的作者宣稱,這些是耶穌基督的正確頭銜。而若有人作這樣的分辨:本屬上帝的,因基督是父上帝的榮耀(splendor of his glory)而轉到祂(來 1: 3),這種說法是沒有價值的。因為,耶和華的名字既然在各處宣佈,說到祂的上帝性(deity),祂的本性(being)乃出自祂自己。祂若是耶和華,則不可否認祂就是透過以賽亞宣告:「我是首先的,我是末後的,除我以外,再沒有真上帝」(賽 44: 6)的同一位上帝。耶利米的宣告也值得我們考慮:「不是那創造天地的上帝,必從地上從天下被除滅」(耶 10: 11)。

#### 賽6:1

1 當鳥西雅王崩的那年,我見主坐在高高的寶座上。他的衣裳垂下,遮滿聖殿。

#### 約 12: 41

#### 賽 8: 14

<sup>14</sup> 他必作為聖所,卻向以色列兩家作絆腳的石頭,跌人的磐石; 向耶路撒冷的居民 作為圈套和網羅。

#### 羅 9: 33

33 就如經上所記:我在錫安放一塊絆腳的石頭,跌人的磐石;信靠他的人必不至於 羞愧。

#### 賽 49: 18

<sup>18</sup> 你舉目向四方觀看;他們都聚集來到你這裏。耶和華說:我指著我的永生起誓: 你必要以他們為妝飾佩戴,以他們為華帶束腰,像新婦一樣。

#### 羅 14: 11

1 經上寫著:主說:我憑著我的永生起誓:萬膝必向我跪拜;萬口必向我承認。

#### 賽 45: 24

<sup>24</sup> 人論我說,公義、能力,惟獨在乎耶和華,人都必歸向他。凡向他發怒的必至蒙 羞。

#### 來 1: 10

<sup>10</sup> 又說: 主啊, 你起初立了地的根基: 天也是你手所造的。

#### 詩 102: 25-26

- 25 你起初立了地的根基; 天也是你手所造的。
- <sup>26</sup> 天地都要滅沒,你卻要長存;天地都要如外衣漸漸舊了。你要將天地如裏衣更換,天地就改變了。

#### 來 1:6

<sup>6</sup> 再者,神使長子到世上來的時候(或作:神再使長子到世上來的時候),就 說:神的使者都要拜他。

#### 詩 97: 7

<sup>7</sup> 願一切事奉雕刻的偶像、靠虛無之神自誇的,都蒙羞愧。萬神哪,你們都當拜 他。

#### 來 1: 3

<sup>3</sup> 他是神榮耀所發的光輝,是神本體的真像,常用他權能的命令托住萬有。他洗淨 了人的罪,就坐在高天至大者的右邊。

#### 賽 44: 6

<sup>6</sup> 耶和華-以色列的君,以色列的救贖主-萬軍之耶和華如此說:我是首先的,我 是末後的:除我以外再沒有真神。

#### 耶 10: 11

"(你們要對他們如此說:不是那創造天地的神,必從地上從天下被除滅!)

For of course the God who manifested himself to Isaiah [Isa. 6:1] was true and only God, the God whom nevertheless John affirms to have been Christ [John 12:41]. He who also through the mouth of Isaiah testified that he would be as a stone of stumbling for the

Jews [Isa. 8:14] was the only God, whom Paul declared to have been Christ [Rom. 9:33]. When through Isaiah he proclaims, "I live" [Isa. 49:18]: "to me every knee shall bow" [Rom. 14:11, Vg.; cf. Isa. 45:24, Vg.], he is the sole God; yet Paul interprets the same to be Christ [Rom. 14:11]. To this are added the testimonies that the apostle puts forward: "Thou, O God, hast founded heaven and earth" [Heb. 1:10; Ps. 102:25-26]. Likewise: "Let all the angels of God adore him." [Heb. 1:6; Ps. 97:7.] These things are appropriate only to the sole God: nevertheless, he contends that they are proper titles of Christ. And there is no value in the subtle distinction that what is proper to God is transferred to Christ, because he is the splendor of his glory [Heb. 1:3]. For, since the name of Jehovah is set forth everywhere, it follows that with respect to his deity his being is from himself. For if he is Jehovah, it cannot be denied that he is that same God who elsewhere proclaims through Isaiah, "I, I am, and apart from me there is no God' [Isa. 44:6 p.]. Jeremiah's utterance also bears considering: "The gods who did not make heaven and earth shall perish from the earth which is under heaven" [Jer. 10:11 p.].

#### Isa. 6:1

<sup>1</sup> In the year that King Uzziah died, I saw the Lord seated on a throne, high and exalted, and the train of his robe filled the temple.

#### John 12:41

#### Isa. 8:14

and he will be a sanctuary; but for both houses of Israel he will be a stone that causes men to stumble and a rock that makes them fall. And for the people o Jerusalem he will be a trap and a snare.

#### Isa. 49:18

<sup>18</sup> Lift up your eyes and look around; all your sons gather and come to you. As surely as I live," declares the LORD, "you will wear them all as ornaments; you will put them on, like a bride.

#### Rom. 9:33

As it is written: "See, I lay in Zion a stone that causes men to stumble and a rock that makes them fall, and the one who trusts in him will never be put to shame." [m]

#### Rom. 14:11

It is written: " 'As surely as I live,' says the Lord, 'every knee will bow before me; every tongue will confess to God.' "[a] 12So then, each of us will give an account of himself to God.

#### Isa. 45:24

They will say of me, 'In the LORD alone are righteousness and strength.' " All who have raged against him will come to him and be put to shame.

#### Heb. 1:10

<sup>10</sup> He also says, "In the beginning, O Lord, you laid the foundations of the earth, and the heavens are the work of your hands.

#### Ps. 102:25-26

- In the beginning you laid the foundations of the earth, and the heavens are the work of your hands.
- <sup>26</sup> They will perish, but you remain; they will all wear out like a garment. Like clothing you will change them and they will be discarded.

#### Heb. 1:6

<sup>6</sup> And again, when God brings his firstborn into the world, he says, "Let all God's angels worship him."[d]

#### Ps. 97:7

All who worship images are put to shame, those who boast in idols—worship him, all you gods!

#### Heb. 1:3

The Son is the radiance of God's glory and the exact representation of his being, sustaining all things by his powerful word. After he had provided purification for sins, he sat down at the right hand of the Majesty in heaven.

#### Isa. 44:6

<sup>6</sup> "This is what the LORD says— Israel's King and Redeemer, the LORD Almighty: I am the first and I am the last; apart from me there is no God.

#### Jer. 10:11

"Tell them this: 'These gods, who did not make the heavens and the earth, will perish from the earth and from under the heavens.' " [a]

另一方面我們必須承認, *上帝的兒子就是以賽亞常透過宇宙的創造來證明* 上帝性的那位。可是宇宙的創造者,若沒有出於自己的本性 (being), 乃是從別處 借來本質 (essence)的, 怎可能把本性 (存有, being) 賜給萬有呢? 因為, 若有人 說子的本性 (essence)是父所賜的,就否認聖子自有本性 (he has being from himself)。可是聖靈清楚證明這是錯誤的, **聖靈稱子為「耶和華」。**我們若承認一 切(屬上帝)的本性都只有在父裏,那麼,上帝的本性要就必須分開,不然就從子 拿走了。子若沒有祂的(屬上帝的)本性,就不是名乎其實的上帝。我們若相信這 些胡說八道的人,認為上帝的本性只屬父所有,那麼,既然唯獨父「是」(擁有 「存有」者), 祂就是賜子本質的那位 (essence giver of the Son)。因此子的上帝性 從上帝的本性抽離 (abstracted from God's essence),或是從整體而出的一部份。

On the other hand, it will be necessary to admit that the Son of God is he whose deity is quite often proved in Isaiah from the creation of the universe. But how will the Creator, who gives being to all, not have being from himself, but borrow his essence from elsewhere? For whoever says that the Son has been given his essence from the Father denies that he has being from himself. But the Holy Spirit gives the lie to this, naming him "Jehovah." Now if we concede that all essence is in the Father alone, either it will become divisible or be taken away from the Son. And thus deprived of his essence, he will be God in name only. The essence of God, if these babblers are to be believed, belongs to the Father only, inasmuch as he alone is, and is the essence giver of the Son. Thus the divinity of the Son will be something abstracted from God's essence, or a part derived from the whole.

他們既然有這樣的預設,就必須承認聖靈是唯獨屬父的 (of the Father alone),因為,聖靈若從上帝原始的本質而出,而這本質只屬父,那麼聖靈就不應該被成為「子的靈」(Spirit of the Son)。可是保羅的見證推翻這樣的看法,因為保羅說,聖靈是父的靈,也是子的靈(羅8:9)。

#### 羅8:9

<sup>9</sup> 如果神的靈住在你們心裡,你們就不屬肉體,乃屬聖靈了。人若沒有基督的靈, 就不是屬基督的。

Now they are compelled from their own presupposition to concede that the Spirit is of the Father alone, because if he is a derivation from the primal essence, which is proper only to the Father, he will not rightly be considered the Spirit of the Son. Yet this is disproved by Paul's testimony, where he makes the Spirit common to Christ and the Father [Rom. 8:9].

#### Rom. 8:9

You, however, are controlled not by the sinful nature but by the Spirit, if the Spirit of God lives in you. And if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, he does not belong to Christ.

不單如此,父的位格若從三位一體上帝刪除,那麼父與子、靈有何差別,除了唯獨祂是上帝本身以外?他們宣稱基督是上帝,而與父不同。反面來說,父不是子,兩位之間須有分辨的記號。若說分辨在於上帝的本質(翻注:即父有上帝本質,子沒有),那麼基督的上帝性則完全消滅,因為若沒有本性(若沒有本性的全部),是不可能存在的。父誠然不可能與子有別,除非祂自己裏面有獨特之處,是子不共享的。那麼他們可以找出什麼,來分辨父的獨特性呢?獨特若在上帝的本質(essence),那麼讓他們回答;父有沒有與子分享這本質?其實這是不可能作的,其中一個原因是,塑造一個半上帝是非常邪惡的事。不單如此,他們會卑鄙地撕裂上帝的本質。因此:上帝的全部本質是父所擁有,是子所擁有。若是這樣,三位一體每一位在本質上(essence)是沒有分別的。他們若反駁說,父雖然賜予本質(essence),可是仍然是唯獨真上帝,本質在祂裏面,那麼基督就僅在喻意上、在外表上是上帝,是一個有名無實的「上帝」。因為作上帝最正當的就是,好像祂說的:「那自有的打發我到你們這裏來」(出 3: 14)。

出3:14

<sup>14</sup> 神對摩西說: 我是自有永有的; 又說: 你要對以色列人這樣說: 那自有的打發 我到你們這裡來。

Furthermore, if the person of the Father is expunged from the Trinity, in what respect would he differ from the Son and the Spirit except that only he is God himself? They confess Christ to be God, and yet to differ from the Father. Conversely, there must be some mark of differentiation in order that the Father may not be the Son. Those who locate that mark in the essence clearly annihilate Christ's true deity, which without essence, and indeed the whole essence, cannot exist. Certainly the Father would not differ from the Son unless he had in himself something unique, which was not shared with the Son. Now what can they find to distinguish him? If the distinction is in the essence, let them answer whether or not he has shared it with the Son. Indeed, this could not be done in part because it would be wicked to fashion a half-God. Besides, in this way they would basely tear apart the essence of God. It remains that the essence is wholly and perfectly common to the Father and Son. If this is true, then there is indeed with respect to the essence no distinction of one from the other. If they make rejoinder that the Father in bestowing essence nonetheless remains the sole God, in whom the essence is, Christ then will be a figurative God, a God in appearance and name only, not in reality itself. For there is nothing more proper to God than to be, according to that saying, "He who is has set me to you" [Ex 3:14, Vg.].

#### Ex 3:14

God said to Moses, "I am who I am . [b] This is what you are to say to the Israelites: 'I AM has sent me to you.' "

## ccn-tv.com 加爾文基督教要義卷 1-16

## 1.13.25 三位格都有上帝的神性 THE DIVINE NATURE IS COMMON TO ALL THREE PERSONS 1.13.25

#### 加釋:

三位格都有上帝的神性:

- 1. 祂們有自己不同的位格
- 2. 祂們有自己不同的生存形態
- 3. 祂們之間的關係是不同的
- 4. 祂們之間的關係是非常密切的
- 5. 祂們之間三位格排列次序是不同的
- 6. 祂們之間救贖大工是分工的

但是他們顯然在這點上是受騙的,因為他們幻想不同的位格,每一位格擁有上帝本質的某些部份。但我們從根據《聖經》所教導的是:上帝的本質是一(essence is one);因此聖子與聖靈的本質是不受生的(unbegotten)。但是父既然在次序上是第一位,而父的智慧也是自我生出的,正如剛才說的,父被稱為上帝整體的開始與源頭,是正確的。因此上帝:沒有被分辨的上帝,是不受生的;同時,父,從祂的位格來看,也是不受生的。</u>他們也愚蠢地認為,他們可以從我們的宣稱推論說,我們建造了一個「四位一體」的上帝;他們錯誤地把這個虛構的幻想推倒我們的頭上來,好像說,三位格是從一個本質而出 (derived from one essence)。相反地,我們的著作清楚地表達,我們並沒有將上帝的三位格和上帝的本質分開;不過我們分辨上帝裏不同的位格。三位格若從上帝的本質分開,這些人的推論就可能有理;但是這樣一來,就有了三位上帝,而不是一個上帝在祂裏面存在三個位格。

But they are obviously deceived in this connection, for they dream of individuals, each having its own separate part of the essence. Yet we teach from the Scriptures that God is one in essence, and hence that the essence both of the Son and of the Spirit is unbegotten; but inasmuch as the Father is first in order, and from himself begot his wisdom, as has just been said, he is rightly deemed the beginning and fountainhead of the whole of divinity. Thus God without particularization is unbegotten; and the Father also in respect to his person is unbegotten. They also foolishly think they may conclude from our statement that we have set up a quaternity, for they falsely and calumniously ascribe this fiction of their own brain to us, as if we pretended that three persons came forth by derivation from one essence. On the contrary, it is clear from our writings that we do not separate the persons from the essence, but we distinguish among them while they remain within it. If the persons had been separate from the essence, the reasoning of these men might have been probable; but in this way there would have been a trinity of gods, not of persons whom the one God contains in himself.

因此我們這樣回答他們所問的問題:他們的問題是,上帝的本質是否合作產生三位格,好像三個上帝從它降下一般。他們的回答是若不是這樣,三位一體就在上帝以外(without God);這種說法也出自同樣的愚妄。因為,雖然上帝的本質並不一三位一體的成員的身份進入到我們的分辨,但是,三位個並不是沒有上帝的本性,也不在上帝的本質以外;因為父,除非祂是上帝,就不可能是父;子也不可能是子,除非祂是上帝。因此我們說,純粹的上帝性(deity)是靠自己存在的(of itself);從這點我們相信,聖子,既然祂是上帝,乃是靠自己存在的,可是祂的位格則不是靠自己的;事實上,祂既然是子,我們就說祂從父而生。因此,祂的本質是沒有開始的;祂的位格是從上帝的本質而來,就是從父的本質而來。那些正統的,先前論到三位一體的作者們,只用這名字稱呼三位格,因為,若在父子靈之分辨上,說有本質的分辨,是非常荒謬的錯誤。因為,那些試圖從「本質,子,靈」來建立「三位一體」的人,明顯地在消滅子的本質,和靈的本質;不然的話,連接在一起的部份還是會分開,這樣,無論怎樣分辨,還是有所缺欠。最後,父與上帝若是同義詞,父就成為賜上帝性的那位(deifier);子只是影子而已;而三位一體只不過是獨一上帝和兩位被造物的結合罷了。

Thus is their useless question answered: whether or not the essence co-operates in producing the Trinity, as if we imagined that three gods descend from it. Their rejoinder that if not, the Trinity would therefore be without God, is born of the same foolishness. For although the essence does not enter into the distinction as a part or a member of the Trinity, nevertheless the persons are not without it, or outside it; because the Father, unless he were God, could not have been the Father; and the Son could not have been the Son, unless he were God. Therefore we say that deity in an absolute sense exists of itself; whence likewise we confess that the Son since he is God, exists of himself, but not in respect of his Person; indeed, since he is the Son, we say that he exists from the Father. Thus his essence is without beginning; while the beginning of his person is God himself. Those orthodox writers who formerly spoke concerning the Trinity applied this name only to the persons, since it would have been not only an absurd error but even the sheerest impiety to embrace the essence in this distinction. For those who want to make a Trinity of these three – Essence, Son, and spirit – are plainly annihilating the essence of the Son and the Spirit; otherwise the parts joined together would fall apart, and this is faulty in any distinction. Finally, if Father and God were synonymous, thus would the Father be the deifier; nothing would be left in the Son but a shadow; and the Trinity would be nothing else but the conjunction of the one God with two created things.

1.14.22 三位一體 = 創造者: 因此,上帝 = 永恆,是存有本身 (Being-in-itself):

> 創造之工 = 直接,沒有中介:創造 = 「道 | 親自 的作為:人=創造的終結

TRINITY = CREATOR; THUS GOD = ETERNAL, **BEING-IN-ITSELF**; **WORK OF CREATION = IMMEDIATE,** WITHOUT INTERVENTION: WORD OF GOD **ACTS BY ITSELF IN CREATION; MEN = END OF CREATION 1.14.22** 

卷一 第十四章: 祂創造的宇宙

1.14.22 默想上帝對祂創造的宇宙的良善,帶領我們感恩,信靠祂 The contemplation of God's goodness in his creation will lead us to thankfulness and trust

還有第二點,這一點與信仰更為接近:我們既然看到上帝為我們的好處和救恩 安排了萬物,同時又看到祂在我們身上的權能和恩典,和祂所賜給我們的各種好 處,我們就可以因此我們熱心信靠祂,請求祂、讚美祂、和愛慕祂。正如我已經指 出的, *在創造宇宙的程式上,上帝自己業已表明,祂創造萬物,都是為著人的緣* **故。**祂用六日創造世界,不是沒有理由的:如果祂要立時完成細微末節的一切, 以漸進地去完成創造,並不更困難些。*但祂在這裏故意表明了祂對我們的旨意和* **父愛,在造人之前,預先都安排妥貼把對人有益而有用的各樣東西。**在我們尚未 存在以前,上帝就這樣顧念我們的利益,那麼,我們若懷疑祂的顧念,是何等的負 義呢! 在我們還未出生以前, 祂便為我們準備了最豐富的福份, 若我們惶恐自疑, 惟恐在我們窘迫之時, 祂的仁慈會離棄我們, 這是何等的不敬虔呢! 此外, 摩西告 訴了我們(參創 1:28,9:2),**上帝因為寬宏恩賜,就把整個世界所有的一切, 都交給我們保管。**他這樣聲明,當然不是以施予的空名,來愚弄我們。所以**凡對** 我們好處的, 我們絕不會缺乏。

創1:31

<sup>31</sup> 神看著一切所造的都甚好。有晚上,有早晨,是第六日。

創1:28

<sup>28</sup> 神就賜福給他們,又對他們說:要生養眾多,遍滿地面,治理這地,也要管理海裡的魚、空中的鳥,和地上各樣行動的活物。

#### 創9:2

<sup>2</sup> 凡地上的走獸和空中的飛鳥都必驚恐,懼怕你們,連地上一切的昆蟲並海裡一切的魚都交付你們的手。

There remains the second part of the rule, more closely related to faith. It is to recognize that God has destined all things for our good and salvation but at the same time to feel his power and grace in ourselves and in the great benefits he has conferred upon us, and so bestir ourselves to trust, invoke, praise, and love him. Indeed, as I pointed out a little before, God himself has shown by the order of Creation that he created all things for man's sake. For it is not without significance that he divided the making of the universe into six days [Gen.1:31], even though it would have been no more difficult for him to have completed in one moment the whole work together with all its details than to arrive at its completion gradually by a progression of this sort. But he willed to commend his providence and fatherly solicitude toward us in that, before he fashioned man, he prepared everything he foresaw would be useful and salutary for him. How great ingratitude would it be now to doubt whether this most gracious Father has us in his care, who we see was concerned for us even before we were born! How impious would it be to tremble for fear that his kindness might at any time fail us in our need, when we see that it was shown, with the greatest abundance of every good thing, when we were yet unborn! Besides, from Moses we hear that, through His liberality, all things on earth are subject to us [Gen. 1:28; 9:2]. It is certain that He did not do this to mock us with the empty title to a gift. Therefore nothing that is needful for our welfare will ever be lacking to us.

#### Gen.1:31

God saw all that he had made, and it was very good. And there was evening, and there was morning—the sixth day.

#### Gen. 1:28

God blessed them and said to them, "Be fruitful and increase in number; fill the earth and subdue it. Rule over the fish of the sea and the birds of the air and over every living creature that moves on the ground."

#### Gen. 9:2

<sup>2</sup> The fear and dread of you will fall upon all the beasts of the earth and all the birds of the air, upon every creature that moves along the ground, and upon all the fish of the sea; they are given into your hands.

最後,總括地說,我們每逢稱上帝為天地的創造者之時,就應該想到,祂對所造一切萬物的安排,都是在自己的權能支配之下; 我們是祂的兒女,祂會照顧我們,保護我們,還要教養我們,好叫我們知道每一幸福都是從祂而來,使我們常存希望,深信在和我們幸福有關的事上,祂決不會叫我們有所欠缺,所以我們的

希望除祂以外,別無所托;我們有所需求的時候,可以向祂祈禱,我們不論從那一方面得著利益,都應當以感恩之心承認那是祂所賜與的;我們既得了祂這麼大的恩慈,仁愛,和溫情,我們就可以學習以全心去愛祂和敬拜祂。

To conclude once for all, whenever we call God the Creator of heaven and earth, let us at the same time bear in mind that the dispensation of all those things which he has made is in his own hand and power and that we are indeed his children, whom he has received into his faithful protection to nourish and educate. We are therefore to await the fullness of all good things from him alone and to trust completely that he will never leave us destitute of what we need for salvation, and to hang our hopes on none but him! We are therefore, also, to petition him for whatever we desire; and we are to recognize as a blessing from him, and thankfully to acknowledge, every benefit that falls to our share. So, invited by the great sweetness of his beneficence and goodness, let us study to love and serve him all our heart.

## ccn-tv.com 加爾文基督教要義卷 1-17

## 三位一體的教義 THE DOCTRINE OF THE TRINITY

### 只有一位上帝,以三個位格存在。

There is only one God (Godhead), Three Persons.

聖父是上帝。聖子是上帝。聖靈是上帝(本質)。

The Father is God.

The Son is God.

Deity
The Spirit is God.

Deity
Deity

聖父是父。聖子是子。聖靈是靈。(生存形態)

父第一, 子是第二, 靈是第三。(**次序**)

聖父不是聖子。聖子不是聖靈。聖靈不是聖父(位格)。

The Father is not the Son.

The Son is not the Spirit.

Personhood

The Spirit is not the Father.

Personhood

聖父是父。聖父乃是聖子之父。聖父在永恆裏是聖子之父。

The Father is the Father. Eternal generation

The Father is the Father of the Son.

The Father is the Father of the Son in eternity. Immanent, necessary

聖子是子。聖子乃是聖父之子 。聖子在永恆裏是聖父之子。

The Son is the Son. Eternal generation

The Son is the Son of the Father.

The Son is the Son of the Father in eternity.

Immanent, necessary

聖靈是靈。聖靈由聖父和聖子而出。聖靈在永恆裏由聖父和聖子而出。

The Spirit is the Spirit.

The Spirit proceeds from the Father and the Son.

Eternal procession

The Spirit proceeds from the Father and the Son in eternity.

只有一位上帝,不是三位上帝。

There is one God, not three.

## ccn-tv.com 加爾文基督教要義卷 1-18

- 三、上帝是獨一的上帝,但祂裡面有三個位格,同屬一個本質,權能相同,同樣 永恆,這三個位格就是:父、子、聖靈(三位一體的)上帝(o)。父不屬於、不受生 於、也不出於任何其他來源;子在永恆裹為父所生(p);聖靈在永恆裹由父和子而 出(q)。
- 3. In the unity of the Godhead there are three persons, of one substance, power, and eternity: God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit (o). The Father is of none, neither begotten nor proceeding; the e Son is eternally begotten of the Father (p); the Holy Spirit eternally proceeds from the Father and the Son (q).
- (a) 約翰壹書 I John 5:7-8
- 7 並且有聖靈作見證,因為聖靈就是真理。
- 8作見證的原來有三:就是聖靈、水,與血,這三樣也都歸於一。

#### 馬太福音 Matthew 3:16-17

16 耶穌受了洗,隨即從水裡上來。天忽然為祂開了,祂就看見上帝的靈仿彿鴿子降下,落在祂身上。

17 從天上有聲音說:「這是我的愛子,我所喜悅的。」

#### 馬太福音 Matthew 28:19

所以, 你們要去, 使萬民作我的門徒, 奉父、子、聖靈的名, 給他們施洗。

#### 哥林多後書 II Corinthians 13:14

願主耶穌基督的恩惠, 上帝的慈愛, 聖靈的感動, 常與你們眾人同在。

- (p) 約翰福音 John 1:14, 18
- 14 道成了肉身,住在我們中間,充充滿滿的有恩典有真理。我們也見過祂的榮光,正是父獨生子的榮光。...
- 18 從來沒有人看見上帝,只有在父懷裡的獨生子將祂表明出來。

#### 參看: 希伯來書 Hebrews 1:2-3

- 2 就在這末世,藉著祂兒子曉喻我們;又早已立祂為承受萬有的,也曾藉著祂創造 諸世界。
- 3 池是上帝榮耀所發的光輝,是上帝本體的真像,常用池權能的命令托住萬有;池 洗淨了人的罪,就坐在高天至大者的右邊。

#### 歌羅西書 Colossians 1:15

愛子是那不能看見之上帝的像,是首生的,在一切被造的以先。

#### (q) 約翰福音 John 15:26

但我要從父那裡差保惠師來,就是從父出來真理的聖靈: 祂來了,就要為我作見證。

#### 加拉太書 Galatians 4:6

6 你們既為兒子,上帝就差祂兒子的靈進入你們的心,呼叫:「阿爸,父!」

- 二、上帝的兒子,三位一體中的第二位格,正是永恆的上帝, 與父同質、同等; 當日期滿足的時候,就取了人性 (k),並有人性一切基本的性質、共通的軟弱,只是完全無罪 (l);藉著聖靈的大能,在童貞女<u>馬利亞</u>的腹中成孕,有人的本質(m)。 所以在耶穌裡面是兩個完整的、無缺的,且相異的性質(就是有完全的神性與人性),不可分地結合於一位格裡,沒有轉化、合成、混合 (n)。這個位格是真正的上帝,也是真正的人,卻是一位基督,神人之間的惟一的中保 (o)。
- 2. The Son of God, the second person in the Trinity, being truly and eternally God, of one substance and equal with the Father, did, when the fullness of time had come, take upon Him man's nature (k), with all its essential properties and common frailties, yet without sin (l). He was conceived by the power of the Holy Spirit in the womb of the virgin Mary and of her substance (m). In this way two whole natures, the divine and the human, perfect and distinct, were inseparably joined together in one person without being changed, mixed, or confused (n). This person is truly God and truly man, yet one Christ, the only mediator between God and man (Romans 1:3-4).
- (k) 約翰福音 John 1:1, 14
- 1 太初有道, 道與上帝同在, 道就是上帝。
- 14 道成了肉身,住在我們中間, 充充滿滿的有恩典有真理。我們也見過祂的榮光, 正是父獨生子的榮光。

#### 約翰壹書 I John 5:20

我們也知道上帝的兒子已經來到, 且將智慧賜給我們, 使我們認識那位真實的, 我們也在那位真實的裡面就是在祂兒子耶穌基督裡面。這是真上帝, 也是永生。

#### 腓利比書 Philippians 2:6

祂本有上帝的形像, 不以自己與上帝同等為強奪的。

#### 加拉太書 Galatians 4:4

及至時候滿足, 上帝就差遣祂的兒子, 為女人所生, 且生在律法以下,

- (1) 希伯來書 Hebrews 2:14, 16-17
- 14 兒女既同有血肉之體, 祂也照樣親自成了血肉之體。特要藉著死敗壞那掌死權的, 就是魔鬼。
- 16 祂並不救拔天使, 乃是救拔亞伯拉罕的後裔。
- 17 所以祂凡事該與祂的弟兄相同,為要在上帝的事上,成為慈悲忠信的大祭司為百姓的罪獻上挽回祭。

#### 希伯來書 Hebrews 4:15

因我們的大祭司, 並非不能體恤我們的軟弱, 祂也曾凡事受過試探與我們一樣, 只是祂沒有犯罪。

- (m) 路加福音 Luke 1:27, 31, 35
- 27 到一個童女那裡, 是已經許配大衛家的一個人, 名叫約瑟。童女的名字叫馬利亞;
- 31 你要懷孕生子,可以給祂起名叫耶穌。 天使回答說:「聖靈要臨到你身上,至高者的能力要蔭庇你,因此所要生的聖者必稱為上帝的 兒子。

#### 加拉太書 Galatians 4:4

及至時候滿足, 上帝就差遣祂的兒子, 為女人所生, 且生在律法以下,

#### (n) 路加福音 Luke 1:35

天使回答說:「聖靈要臨到你身上,至高者的能力要蔭庇你,因此所要生的聖者必稱爲上帝的兒子。

#### 歌羅西書 Colossians 2:9

因為上帝本性一切的豐盛, 都有形有體的居住在基督裡面。

#### 羅馬書 Romans 9:5

列祖就是他們的祖宗,按肉體說,基督也是從他們出來的,他是在萬有之上,永遠可稱頌的上帝。 阿們!

#### 彼得前書 I Peter 3:18

因基督也曾一次為罪受苦, 就是義的代替不義的, 為要引我們到上帝面前。 按著肉體說, 祂被治死; 按著靈性說, 祂復活了。

#### 提摩太前書 I Timothy 3:16

大哉, 敬虔的奥秘, 無人不以為然, 就是上帝在肉身顯現, 被聖靈稱義, 被天使看見, 被傳於外邦, 被世人信服,被接在榮耀裡。

#### (o) 羅馬書 Romans 1:3-4

論到祂兒子,我主耶穌基督,按肉體說:「是從<u>大衛</u>後裔生的。 按聖善的靈說:「因從死裡復活,以大能顯明是上帝的兒子。

#### 提摩太前書 I Timothy 2:5

因為只有一位上帝,在上帝和人中間,只有一位中保,乃是降世為人的基督耶穌。

## 1.14.2 上帝用六天創造,表示祂對人的良善 THEWORK OF THE SIX DAYS SHOWS GOD'S GOODNESS TOWARD MAN 1.14.2

為著同一目的,摩西敍述上帝的工作不是一時完成,乃是分為六日完成的。由 於這種情形,我們離開了一切假上帝,歸依唯一的真上帝,這真上帝把祂的工作分 配於六日,叫我們縱使以畢生的工夫來思想祂的工作,也不致厭倦。因為我們眼目 所及, 隨地都看到上帝的工作, 可是我們的注意力總好像曇花一現; 如果我們為敬 虔的思想所感,這種思想立刻又離開我們。如是人的理智又開始作不平之鳴,仿佛 這些逐步完成的工作,與上帝的權能是不相符合的,直等到受信仰的支配以後,理 智才學會遵守第七日的安息。**在這些事物的次序中,我們必須仔細地考慮上帝人** *類的父愛,祂不在地上充滿各樣可以增加亞當幸福的東西以前,創造了他。*若當 大地一片荒涼空虛之時,祂先將亞當安置在地上,或在沒有光明的時候,使他先有 生命,那麼,祂對他的幸福就似乎是不關切了。可是祂的安排極為妥當,祂使太陽 和星宿為人類的福利運行不息,又為生物準備土地、空氣、和水,使地面產生各種 豐富的果實,以供人類需要: 祂做了一位未雨綢繆,和殷勤周到的家長,對我們表 現了極端的好意。若讀者多多留心考慮我所略略暗示的這些事,就會深信摩西是世 界創造者唯一上帝的真見證和使者了。我已經說過的不用再提;摩西不但談及上帝 的本體,亦把祂那永恆的「智慧」和祂的「靈」,都顯明給我們,使我們除祂之 外,不會夢想到別的上帝;由這明顯的真像,我們可認識祂。

創 2: 2

<sup>2</sup> 到第七日,神造物的工已經完畢,就在第七日歇了他一切的工,安息了。

With the same intent Moses relates that God's work was completed not in a moment but in six days [Gen. 2:2]. For by this circumstance we are drawn away from all fictions to the one God who distributed his work into six days that we might not find it irksome to occupy our whole life in contemplating it. For even though our eyes, in whatever direction they may turn, are compelled to gaze upon God's works, yet we see how changeable is our attention, and how swiftly are dissipated any godly thoughts that may touch us. Here also, until human reason is subjected to the obedience of faith and learns to cultivate that quiet to which the sanctification of the seventh day invites us, it grumbles, as if such proceedings were foreign to God's power. But we ought in the very order of things diligently to contemplate God's fatherly love toward mankind, in that he did not create Adam until he had lavished upon the universe all manner of good things. For if he had put him in an earth as yet sterile and empty, if he had given him life before light, he would have seemed to provide insufficiently for his welfare. Now when he disposed the movements of the sun and stars to human uses, filled the earth, waters, and air with living things, and brought forth an abundance of fruits to suffice as foods, in thus assuming the responsibility of a foreseeing and diligent father of the family he shows his wonderful goodness toward us. If anyone should more attentively ponder what I only briefly touch upon, it will be clear that Moses was a sure witness and herald of the one God, the Creator. I pass over what I have already explained, that he there not only speaks of the bare essence of God, but also sets forth for us His eternal Wisdom and Spirit; that

we may not conjure up some other god than him who would have himself recognized in that clear image.

Gen. 2:2

<sup>2</sup> By the seventh day God had finished the work he had been doing; so on the seventh day he rested [a] from all his work.

## 1.14.3 上帝的創造包括靈界的天使

# CREATION INCLUDES SPIRITUAL, INVISIBLE WORLD OF ANGELS

1.14.3

## 1.14.3 上帝是宇宙萬物之主宰!

God is Lord over all!

在還沒有闡述人性以前,關於天使的事必須有所說明。因為摩西在敍述創造的歷史當中,雖然遷就一般無知者的知識水準,其所述關於上帝的工作,都是我們眼所能見的,可是以後他提出**天使是上帝的使者,**我們就不難斷定**上帝是他們的創造者,因為他們都順從祂,奉祂的命服務。**雖然摩西在最初的著作中以通俗的方法說話,對於上帝所造之物,未將天使列入,然而在這裏沒有什麼好阻止我們明白地來討論《聖經》在別的地方所教導我們的事。如果我們想從上帝的工作中來認識祂,我們就不該放過這一優美高尚的標本——天使。此外,要駁斥錯誤的見解,這一教義的闡揚是很重要的。許多人因天使的優美本性而致上帝志暈眩,以為如果把天使也當作被造之物,受同一上帝的支配,這於天使的尊嚴是有損害的。因此,天使就被誤認為也有上帝性。

But before I begin more fully to discuss man's nature, I ought to insert something concerning angels. To be sure, Moses, accommodating himself to the rudeness of the common folk, mentions in the history of the Creation no other works of God than those which show themselves to our own eyes. Yet afterward when he introduces angels as *ministers of God*, one may easily infer that he, to whom they devote their effort and functions, is their Creator. Although Moses, speaking after the manner of the common people, did not in laying down basic principles immediately reckon the angels among God's creatures, yet nothing prevents us from conveying plainly and explicitly what Scripture elsewhere repeatedly teaches concerning them. For if we desire to recognize God from his works, we ought by no means to overlook such an illustrious and noble example. Besides, *this part of doctrine is very necessary* to refute many errors. The pre-eminence of the angelic nature has so overwhelmed the minds of many that they think the angels wronged if, subjected to the authority of the one God, they are, as it were, forced into their own rank. For this reason, divinity was falsely attributed to them.

同時又有*摩尼(Manichaeus)*和他的教門崛起,*主張宇宙二元,即上帝與魔鬼之說*:把一切善的根源歸於上帝,一切惡的本性,都認為是魔鬼所生。假如我們的思想為這狂妄而不連貫的學說體系所迷,我們就不能把創造世界的光榮,都歸之於上帝。因為永恆和自存既然是上帝所特有的,若把這個特性歸之於魔鬼,豈不是把上帝這尊稱給了魔鬼嗎?假如把這主權讓給魔鬼,讓牠為所欲為,不管是違背上帝的旨意,或反抗上帝的權能,這麼一來,將置上帝的全能於何地呢?當

然,摩尼教認為把惡的創造歸於善的上帝是不合法的,這就是它的唯一基礎;然而這一點和正統的信仰並沒有關係,因為正統派的信仰,不承認宇宙間任何事物,在它的本性上是惡的;人類與魔鬼的邪惡,乃至由邪惡所生的罪,都不是出於本性,乃是由於本性墮落腐化而來;在最初所存在的,沒有一件上帝不顯現祂的智慧和公義的。要反對這些不正確的觀念,必須把我們的思想提高超過我們視線所能達到的事物以上。在尼西亞信經中,上帝被稱為萬物的創造者,特別是指無形之物,很可能就是為著這個目的。但我當盡力不越虔敬的限度,以免沉溺於無益的冥想,致使讀者捨純正的信仰而誤入歧途。聖靈始終如一地以有益的方法教導我們,但在無關宏旨的事上,祂或則完全緘默,或則略為提及,所以我們對於那些知之無益的事情,從本份上說,最好是安於無知。

Also, Mani, with his sect, arose, fashioning for himself two principles: God and the devil. To God he attributed the origin of good things, but evil natures he referred to the devil as their author. If this madness held our minds ensnared, God's glory in the creation of the universe would not abide with him. For, since nothing is more characteristic of God than eternity and self-existence – that is, existence of himself, so to speak – do not those who attribute this to the devil in a sense adorn him with the title of divinity? Now where is God's omnipotence, if such sovereignty is conceded to the devil that he carries out whatever he wishes, against God's will and resistance? Manichees have only one foundation: that it is wrong to ascribe to the good God the creation of any evil thing. This does not in the slightest degree harm the orthodox faith, which does not admit that any evil nature exists in the whole universe. For the depravity and malice both of man and of the devil, or the sins that arise therefrom, do not spring from nature, but rather from the corruption of nature. And from the beginning nothing at all has existed in which God has not put forth an example both of his wisdom and of his righteousness. Therefore, in order to meet these perverse falsehoods it is necessary to lift up our minds higher than our eyes can reach. It is probably for this purpose that in the Nicene Creed, where God is called the Creator of all things, invisible things are expressly mentioned. Nevertheless, we will take care to keep to the measure which the rule of godliness prescribes, that our readers may not, by speculating more deeply than is expedient, wander away from simplicity of faith. And in fact, while the Spirit ever teaches us to our profit, he either remains absolutely silent upon those things of little value for edification, or only lightly and cursorily touches them. It is also our duty willingly to renounce those things which are unprofitable.

## 1.14.4 我們不應放縱猜測天使的事,應研究《聖經》的見證

WE SHOULD NOT INDULGE IN SPECULATIONS CONCERNING THE ANGELS, BUT SEARCH OUT THE WITNESS OF SCRIPTURE 1.14.4

(新譯:)

天使既然是上帝的僕人,被指定執行祂的吩咐,毫無疑問,他們是被上帝創造的(詩 103: 20-21)。為了天使什麼時候被造候和他們的次序無故爭辯,豈不是頑固的表現?這不是正當的勤勞。摩西告訴我們,上帝完成了地的創造;天和天上的天軍的被造,亦都完成了(創 2: 1)。因此若要研究在那一天(除了創造眾星以外)天上那些較遠的天軍開始存在,豈不是無聊?我不多說,我們應該記得,正如在其它教義上一樣,我們應當持守謙虛和儆醒 (sobriety) 的原則:除了上帝的話已經賜給我們的教導以外,不要論說,不要猜測任何事。還有,讀《聖經》的時候,必須不斷地尋求,默想那些造就我們的事。不要為好奇心留地步,不要探究沒有益處的事。因為上帝願意教導我們,不是要教我們不結果子的事,乃是教我們純正的敬虔,叫我們敬畏祂的名,真正信靠祂,行出聖潔的任務 - 我們應以這些知識為滿足。

詩 103: 20-21

- 20 聽從他命令、成全他旨意、有大能的天使,都要稱頌耶和華!
- 21 你們作他的諸軍, 作他的僕役, 行他所喜悅的, 都要稱頌耶和華!

創 2: 1

1 天地萬物都造齊了。

Since the angels are God's ministers, ordained to carry out his commands, there should be no question that they are also his creatures [Ps. 103:20-21]. Is it not evidence of stubbornness rather than of diligence to raise strife over the time and order in which they were created? Moses tells that the earth was finished and that the heavens with all their host were finished [Gen. 2:1]. What point, then, is there anxiously investigating on what day, apart from the stars and planets, the other more remote heavenly hosts began also to exist? Not to take too long, let us remember here, as in all religious doctrine, that we ought to hold to one rule of modesty and sobriety: not to speak, or guess, or even to seek to know, concerning obscure matters anything except what has been imparted to us by God's Word. Furthermore, in the reading of Scripture we ought ceaselessly to endeavor to seek out and meditate upon those things which make for edification. Let us not indulge in curiosity or in the investigation of unprofitable things. And because the Lord willed to instruct us, not in fruitless questions, but in sound godliness, in the fear of his name, in true trust, and in the duties of holiness, let us be satisfied with this knowledge.

Ps. 103:20-21

#### Gen. 2:1

為這緣故,我們若願意按照上帝的旨意作智慧人,就須放下虛妄的猜測,即是 閑懶的人偏離上帝的道所教導的,關於天使的本質、秩序、和數目等。我知道很多 人因為貪婪而抓住這些教義,以此為樂,而不理每天應注意的事。可是,**我們若** 不以作基督的門徒為恥,我們也不應以遵循祂所定的方法為恥。這樣,我們若以 祂的教導為滿足,我們就不僅會放棄那些虛妄的猜測,而且懂得恨惡它們:上帝呼 召我們從這些事上回轉。

For this reason, if we would be duly wise, we must leave those empty speculations which idle men have taught apart from God's Word concerning the nature, orders, and number of angels. I know that many persons more greedily seize upon and take more delight in them than in such things as have been put to daily use. But, *if we are not ashamed of being Christ's disciples, let us not be ashamed to follow that method which he has prescribed.* Thus it will come to pass that, content with his teaching, we shall not only abandon but also abhor those utterly empty speculations from which he calls us back.

沒有人會否認 Dionysius (不論他究竟是誰)在他的《天上的階層》一書裏微秒地、有技巧地討論很多事。但若仔細去審查,我們會發現大部份是空談。上帝學家的任務不是為發癢的耳朵閑談,而是藉著教導真的、堅固的、有益的教養來造就人的良心。你若讀那本書,可能以為該書作者從天下而降,不是述出把他所學到的,乃是把他所親眼見過的事。可是保羅,就是曾經被提到第三層天者(林後 12: 2),不僅什麼都不說,而且作見證說,任何人論說所看見的隱秘的事,都是違反律法(林後 12: 4)。因此讓我們告別那些愚蠢的智慧,來在《聖經》簡明的教義中學習上帝要我們知道的,關於天使的事。

#### 林後 12: 2

<sup>2</sup> 我認得一個在基督裡的人,他前十四年被提到第三層天上去;或在身內,我不知道;或在身外,我也不知道;只有神知道。

#### 林後 12: 4

4 他被提到樂園裡,聽見隱祕的言語,是人不可說的。

No one will deny that Dionysius, whoever he was, subtly and skillfully discussed many matters in his *Celestial Hierarchy*. But if anyone examine it more closely, he will find it for the most part nothing but talk. *The theologian's task is* not to divert the ears with chatter, but *to strengthen consciences by teaching things true*, *sure*, *and* 

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>20</sup> Praise the LORD, you his angels, you mighty ones who do his bidding, who obey his word.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>21</sup> Praise the LORD, all his heavenly hosts, you his servants who do his will.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>1</sup> Thus the heavens and the earth were completed in all their vast array.

profitable. If you read that book, you would think a man fallen from heaven recounted, not what he had learned, but what he had seen with his own eyes. Yet Paul, who had been caught up beyond the third heaven [II Cor. 12:2], not only said nothing about it, but also testified that it is unlawful for any man to speak of the secret things that he has seen [II Cor. 12:4]. Therefore, bidding farewell to that foolish wisdom, let us examine in the simple teaching of Scripture what the Lord would have us know of his angels.

#### II Cor. 12:2

<sup>2</sup> I know a man in Christ who fourteen years ago was caught up to the third heaven. Whether it was in the body or out of the body I do not know—God knows.

#### II Cor. 2:4

<sup>4</sup> was caught up to paradise. He heard inexpressible things, things that man is not permitted to tell.

## 1.14.10 上帝的榮耀絕非天使所有

#### GOD'S GLORY DOES NOT BELONG TO ANGELS

#### 1.14.10

現在我們還要對付那認天使是我們一切幸福的使者和安排者,因而往往潛存心 中的迷信。因為人的理智很容易以為一切榮耀都應該歸於天使。這樣,那只當屬於 上帝和基督的,卻歸到天使身上去了。因此我們見到過去好些世代中,在許多方 面,基督的榮耀顯得暗然無光,而天使卻享有《聖經》所不承認的過分尊榮。在今 天我們所攻擊的一切錯誤中,沒有任何其它錯誤,比這有更久遠的歷史。甚至在保 羅的時代也有些人特別提高天使的地位,差不多把基督降到次等的地位去了。所以 保羅和他們有過很激烈的爭論。他在歌羅西書中堅持說,不但基督被尊應在天使之 上,而且祂是他們一切幸福的創造者(參西 1: 16,20),叫我們不致於背棄祂, 而歸向於天使,因為天使自己也有欠缺,所以是和我們一樣,也要依靠同一的源泉 來支持。上帝的榮耀既充份表現在天使身上。很自然地,我們會在不知不覺中俯伏 於他們面前,驚奇地崇拜他們,把一切原來只屬於上帝的,都歸給他們了。就是約 翰在啟示錄中,承認他曾經有過這樣的經驗,但同時他又加上天使對他回答的一句 話說: "千萬不可,我與你同是作僕人的;你要敬拜上帝"(啟 19:10; 20:8,9)。

#### 西1:16,20

- <sup>16</sup> 因為萬有都是靠他造的,無論是天上的,地上的; 能看見的,不能看見的; 或 是有位的, 主治的, 執政的, 掌權的; 一概都是藉著他造的, 又是為他造的。
- 20 既然藉著他在十字架上所流的血成就了和平,便藉著他叫萬有—無論是地上的、 天上的—都與自己和好了。

#### 啟 19:10

10 我就俯伏在他腳前要拜他。他說: 千萬不可! 我和你,並你那些為耶穌作見證的 弟兄同是作僕人的,你要敬拜上帝。因為預言中的靈意乃是為耶穌作見證。

#### 啟 20: 8-9

- 這些事是我約翰所聽見、所看見的; 我既聽見、看見了, 就在指示我的天使腳前 俯伏要拜他。
- 9 他對我說: 千萬不可! 我與你和你的弟兄眾先知, 並那些守這書上言語的人, 同 是作僕人的。你要敬拜上帝。

It remains for us to cope with that superstition which frequently creeps in, to the effect that angels are the ministers and dispensers of all good things to us. For at once, man's reason so lapses that he thinks that no honor ought to be withheld from them. Thus it happens that what belongs to God and Christ alone is transferred to them. Thus we see that Christ's glory was for some ages past obscured in many ways, when contrary to God's Word unmeasured honors were lavished upon angels. And among those vices which we are today combating, there is hardly any more ancient. For it appears that Paul had a great struggle with certain persons who so elevated angels that they well-nigh degraded Christ to the same level. Hence he urges with very great solicitude in the letter to the Colossians that not only is Christ to be preferred before all angels but that he is the author of all good things that they have [Col. 1:16, 20]. This he does that we may not depart from Christ and go over to those who are not self-sufficient but draw from the same well as we. Surely, since the splendor of the divine majesty shines in them, nothing is easier for us than to fall down, stupefied, in adoration of them, and then to attribute to them everything that is owed to God alone. Even John in Revelation confesses that this happened to him, but at the same time he adds that this answer came to him [chs. 19:10; 22:8-9]: "You must not do that! I am a fellow servant with you. ... Worship God."

#### Col. 1:16, 20

- For by him all things were created: things in heaven and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or powers or rulers or authorities; all things were created by him and for him.
- <sup>20</sup> and through him to reconcile to himself all things, whether things on earth or things in heaven, by making peace through his blood, shed on the cross.

#### Rev. 19:10

<sup>10</sup> At this I fell at his feet to worship him. But he said to me, "Do not do it! I am a fellow servant with you and with your brothers who hold to the testimony of Jesus. Worship God! For the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy."

#### Rev. 22:8-9

- <sup>8</sup> I, John, am the one who heard and saw these things. And when I had heard and seen them, I fell down to worship at the feet of the angel who had been showing them to me.
- But he said to me, "Do not do it! I am a fellow servant with you and with your brothers the prophets and of all who keep the words of this book. Worship God!"

## 1.14.11 上帝使用天使,不是為祂自己,乃是為我們 GOD MAKES USE OF ANGELS, NOT FOR HIS OWN SAKE, **BUT FOR OURS 1.14.11**

如果我們考慮到上帝為什麼慣於藉天使來保護信徒的安全,和傳達祂的恩賜, 則不直接地表現祂的權能,我們就不難避免這種危險。祂這樣做,當然不是因為非 假手於天使不可: 袖隨時可以把他們撇開, 只須舉手之勞, 就可以運用自己的權 力,完成祂的工作: 祂並不靠天使替他解除困難。這一點在我們這些軟弱的人身上 增加了不少安慰,使我們的心不缺乏好的希望或安全的保證。主自己既聲明是我們 的保護者,沒有比這更能滿足我們之所需的了。當我們的四周佈滿危險、煩惱,和 各樣的敵人,除非主按照我們自己的能量,叫我們可以發現祂的恩典,我們自己的 脆弱,必使我們時存恐懼,甚至完全絕望。

為著這個緣故, 祂應許我們不但祂自己要照顧我們, 而且要安排無數的保護 人,專責照顧我們的安全。只好我們在他們的監督與保護之下,無論有什麼危險威 脅,我們絕對不會為惡所乘。上帝既清清楚楚地應許了我們,給我們周詳的保護, 若我們還要到別的地方,尋求庇陰,我認為這是錯誤。但主以無限的仁慈和良善, 樂於幫助我們的這種軟弱,我們不應當忽視祂所給與我們的恩典。我們在以利沙的 僕人身上,找到了一個很好的例子:這僕人看見他們所在的山為敘利亞的軍隊所包 圍(參王下6:15-17),沒有退路,就非常驚恐,仿佛他自己和他的主人,都已 經完了。於是以利沙禱告上帝,求上帝開祂僕人的眼;他就立刻看見滿山都是火車 火馬,這是許多的天使,特來保護他和先知的。因這異象,他就恢復了勇氣,敢於 大膽地輕視他的敵人,而在以前,這些敵人的影子就叫他幾乎嚇得連命都喪失了。

#### 詩 121: 1

(上行之詩。) 我要向山舉目: 我的幫助從何而來?

#### 詩 120: 1

(上行(或作登階,下同)之詩。)我在急難中求告耶和華,他就應允我。

#### 王下 6: 15-17

- 15 上帝人的僕人清早起來出去,看見車馬軍兵圍困了城。僕人對上帝人說: 哀哉! 我主啊,我們怎樣行才好呢?
- 6 上帝人說:不要懼怕!與我們同在的比與他們同在的更多。
- 『以利沙禱告說:耶和華啊,求你開這少年人的眼目,使他能看見。耶和華開他的 眼目,他就看見滿山有火車火馬圍繞以利沙。

Yet we shall well avoid this peril if we inquire why it is through them rather than through himself without their service that God is wont to declare his power, to provide for the safety of believers, and to communicate the gifts of his beneficence to men. Surely he does not do this out of necessity as if he could not do without them, for as often as he pleases, he disregards them and carries out his work through his will alone, so far

are they from being to him a means of lightening difficulty. Therefore he makes use of angels to comfort our weakness, that we may lack nothing at all that can raise up our minds to good hope, or confirm them in security. One thing, indeed, ought to be quite enough for us: that the Lord declares himself to be our protector. But when we see ourselves beset by so many perils, so many harmful things, so many kinds of enemies – such is our softness and frailty – we would sometimes be filled with trepidation or yield to despair if the Lord did not make us realize the presence of his grace according to our capacity. For this reason, he not only promises to take care of us, but tells us he has innumerable guardians whom he has bidden to look after our safety; that so long as we are hedged about by their defense and keeping, whatever perils may threaten, we have been placed beyond all chance of evil. I confess that we act wrongly when, after that simple promise of the protection of the one God, we still seek whence our help may come [cf. Ps. 121:1; 120:1, Vg.]. But because the Lord, out of his immeasurable kindness and gentleness, wishes to remedy this fault of ours, we have no reason to disregard his great benefit. We have an example of this thing in Elisha's servant, who, when he saw the mountain besieged by the Syrian army and that there was no escape, was overwhelmed with fear, as if all was over fro himself and his master. Here Elisha prayed to God that He might open his servant's eyes. Straightway the servant saw the mountain filled with fiery horses and chariots, that is, with a host of angels, who were to protect him as well as the prophet [II Kings 6:17]. Strengthened by this vision, he recovered himself and was able with undaunted courage to look down upon his enemies, at sight of whom he had almost expired.

#### Ps. 121:1

<sup>1</sup> I lift up my eyes to the hills—where does my help come from?

#### Ps. 120:1

<sup>1</sup> I call on the LORD in my distress, and he answers me.

#### II Kings 6:17

- When the servant of the man of God got up and went out early the next morning, an army with horses and chariots had surrounded the city. "Oh, my lord, what shall we do?" the servant asked.
- <sup>16</sup> "Don't be afraid," the prophet answered. "Those who are with us are more than those who are with them."
- <sup>17</sup> And Elisha prayed, "O LORD, open his eyes so he may see." Then the LORD opened the servant's eyes, and he looked and saw the hills full of horses and chariots of fire all around Elisha.

## 1.14.12 天使不可使我們偏離注目仰望上主

## THE ANGELS MUST NOT DIVERT US FROM DIRECTING **OUR GAZE TO THE LORD ALONE 1.14.12**

因此,凡討論到天使的工作,讓我們都以克服一切疑惑為目的,使我們對上帝 的希望,能更根深蒂固。主既為我們準備了這些保護人,為的是叫我們在大群敵人 面前無需恐懼,宛如他們真能勝過上帝的幫助,卻當仰仗以利沙所表示的那種情 緒,即:「與我們同在的,比與他們同在的更多」(王下 6: 15-17)。**若我們因** 天使而與上帝疏遠,是何等的荒謬,因為天使奉派的目的,正是要證明上帝的援 助是隨時隨地和我們同在的。除非天使直接領導我們歸向他、敬重他、尋求他, 並頌揚他為我們唯一的幫助;除非我們把他們當作上帝的助手,而他們所行的一 切,沒有不是受上帝所指導的:又除非他們叫我們與基督,就是唯一的中保,相 結聯,完全依靠他、信仰他、仰望他,完全以他為滿足,那麼,天使確能叫我們 **疏遠了上帝。**我們應當牢記,在雅各的異象中所見的(參創 28:12),天使由梯 子下降人間,又從人間升到天上,那立在梯子上面的,就是萬軍之主。這意思是 指,*只有由基督代禱,我們才可以得到天使的服役*: 正如祂自己所說的: 「你們 將要看見天開了,上帝的使者上去下來,在人子身上」(約1:51)。所以亞伯拉 罕的僕人,雖然受了天使照顧的應許(參創24:7,12,27,52),並不因此求天 使的幫助,卻信任應許,而在主面前傾心禱告,求祂垂憐亞伯拉罕。上帝沒有因委 託他們作執行祂權力和仁慈的使者,就叫他們分享祂的榮光,也沒有因應許了他們 的協助,就叫我們在祂和天使們中間,分去了信任。所以我們要拋棄柏拉圖的哲 學,不要希望藉天使親近上帝,為求上帝對我們更仁慈起見,而崇拜天使;這是一 班迷信和好奇的人,自始至今努力不息地想要混入於我們的宗教裏面的。

#### 王下 6: 15-17

- 15 上帝人的僕人清早起來出去,看見車馬軍兵圍困了城。僕人對上帝人說:哀哉! 我主啊,我們怎樣行才好呢?
- 16 上帝人說:不要懼怕!與我們同在的比與他們同在的更多。
- "以利沙禱告說: 耶和華啊, 求你開這少年人的眼目, 使他能看見。耶和華開他的 眼目, 他就看見滿山有火車火馬圍繞以利沙。

#### 創 28: 12

<sup>12</sup> 夢見一個梯子立在地上,梯子的頭頂著天,有上帝的使者在梯子上,上去下來。

#### 約1:51

11 又說:我實實在在的告訴你們,你們將要看見天開了,上帝的使者上去下來在人 子身上。

創 24: 7, 12, 27, 52

- <sup>7</sup> 耶和華—天上的主曾帶領我離開父家和本族的地,對我說話,向我起誓說:我要將這地賜給你的後裔。他必差遣使者在你面前,你就可以從那裹為我兒子娶一個妻子。
- <sup>12</sup> 他說: 耶和華—我主人亞伯拉罕的上帝啊,求你施恩給我主人亞伯拉罕,使我今日遇見好機會。
- <sup>27</sup> 說: 耶和華—我主人亞伯拉罕的上帝是應當稱頌的,因他不斷地以慈愛誠實待我 主人。至於我,耶和華在路上引領我,直走到我主人的兄弟家裏。
- 亞 亞伯拉罕的僕人聽見他們這話,就向耶和華俯伏在地。

So, then, whatever is said concerning the ministry of angels, let us direct it to the end that, having banished all lack of trust, our hope in God may be more firmly established. Indeed, these helps have been prepared for us by the Lord that we may not be frightened by the multitude of the enemy, as if they might prevail against His assistance, but that we may take refuge in that utterance of Elisha that "there are more for us than against us" [II Kings 6:16 p.]. How preposterous, then, it is for us to be led away from God by the angels, who have been established to testify that his help is all the closer to us! But they do lead us away unless they lead us by the hand straight to him, that we may look upon him, call upon him, and proclaim him as our sole helper; unless we regard them as his hands that are moved to no work without his direction; unless they keep us in the one Mediator, Christ, that we may wholly depend upon him, lean upon him, be brought to him, and rest in him. For what is described in the vision of Jacob ought to stick and be deeply fixed within our minds: that angels descend to the earth, to men, and ascend from men to heaven by a ladder upon which the Lord of Hosts stands [Gen. 28:12]. This indicates that only through Christ's intercession is it brought about that the angels' ministrations come to us, as he himself affirms: "Hereafter you will see the heavens opened and angels ... descending upon the Son of Man" [John 1:51]. Therefore the servant of Abraham, though entrusted to the angel's charge [Gen. 24:7], does not for that reason call upon him to help him, but, relying on that commitment, pours out his prayers unto the Lord, and beseeches him to show his mercy to Abraham [Gen. 24:12]. For as God does no make them ministers of his power and goodness to share his glory with them, so he does not promise us his help through their ministry in order that we should divide our trust between them and him. Farewell, then, to that Platonic philosophy of seeing access to God through angels, and of worshiping them with intent to render God more approachable to us. This is what superstitious and curious men have tried to drag into our religion from the beginning and persevere in trying even to this day.

#### II Kings 6:16

<sup>16</sup> "Don't be afraid," the prophet answered. "Those who are with us are more than those who are with them."

#### Gen. 28:12

He had a dream in which he saw a stairway [d] resting on the earth, with its top reaching to heaven, and the angels of God were ascending and descending on it.

John 1:51

He then added, "I tell you<sup>[l]</sup> the truth, you<sup>[m]</sup> shall see heaven open, and the angels of God ascending and descending on the Son of Man."

#### Gen. 24:7

<sup>7</sup> "The LORD, the God of heaven, who brought me out of my father's household and my native land and who spoke to me and promised me on oath, saying, 'To your offspring [b] I will give this land'-he will send his angel before you so that you can get a wife for my son from there.

#### Gen. 24:12

Then he prayed, "O LORD, God of my master Abraham, give me success today, and show kindness to my master Abraham.

## 1.14.13 魔鬼是真的: 牠們服役於上帝的旨意 《聖經》先裝備我們抵擋仇敵

DEVILS ARE REAL, SERVE PURPOSE OF GOD Scripture forearms us against the adversary 1.14.13

《聖經》所教訓我們關於魔鬼的事,其目的幾乎都是要我們小心防備魔鬼的詭 計,叫我們準備強固的武器,足以驅逐這些頑強的敵人。撒但被稱為「世界的神」 和「世界的王」(林後 4: 4; 約 12: 31),武裝的「壯士」(太 12: 29; 路 11: 21), 「空中掌權者」(弗2:2), 與「吼叫的獅子」(彼前5:8,9), 這些描 寫無非要使我們更加小心謹慎,更加好好準備對付牠。《聖經》有時候用明顯的語 言,指出了這一點,所以彼得一說到「魔鬼,如同吼叫的獅子,遍地遊行,尋找可 吞食的人!,立刻加上一句:「要用堅固的信心抵擋牠!。保羅在勸告「我們並不 是與屬血氣的爭戰,乃是與那些執政的,掌權的,管轄這幽暗世界的,以及天空屬 靈氣的惡魔爭戰」(弗 6: 13)以後,也隨即吩咐我們武裝起來,以便應付這個大 而危險的鬥爭。《聖經》既然老早警告我們說,我們時常在敵人威脅之下,而這個 敵人非常兇猛頑強,精於心計,勤奮敏捷,武備充足,精通戰術,所以我們要特別 注意,不可習於怠惰苟安,反之,我們要振作起來,鼓舞勇氣,準備激烈抵抗;因 為這是個至死方休的戰爭,所以我們非努力自勉,堅強忍耐不可。更重要的,我們 既知道自己軟弱無知,就當懇求上帝援助,除了倚靠祂以外,不倚靠別的,因為只 有祂才可以賜給我們智慧與力量, 勇氣與武裝。

#### 林後4:4

4 此等不信之人被這世界的上帝弄瞎了心眼,不叫基督榮耀福音的光照著他們。 基督本是上帝的像。

#### 約 12: 31

引 現在這世界受審判,這世界的王要被趕出去。

#### 太 12: 29

29 人怎能進壯士家裏,搶奪他的家具呢。除非先捆住那壯士,才可以搶奪他的家 財。

#### 路 11: 21

11 壯士披掛整齊,看守自己的住宅,他所有的都平安無事;

#### 弗 2: 2

2 那時,你們在其中行事為人,隨從今世的風俗,順服空中掌權者的首領,就是 現今在悖逆之子心中運行的邪靈。

#### 彼前 5: 8-9

- <sup>®</sup> 務要謹守,警醒。因為你們的仇敵魔鬼,如同吼叫的獅子,遍地遊行,尋找可 吞吃的人。
- <sup>9</sup> 你們要用堅固的信心抵擋他,因為知道你們在世上的眾弟兄也是經歷這樣的苦 難。

#### 弗 6: 12-13

- <sup>12</sup> 因我們並不是與屬血氣的爭戰(原文作摔跤;下同),乃是與那些執政的、掌權的、管轄這幽暗世界的,以及天空屬靈氣的惡魔爭戰。
- 13 所以,要拿起上帝所賜的全副軍裝,好在磨難的日子抵擋仇敵,並且成就了一切,還能站立得住。

All that Scripture teaches concerning devils aims at arousing us to take precaution against their strategems and contrivances, and also to make us equip ourselves with those weapons which are strong and powerful enough to vanquish these most powerful foes. For when Satan is called the god [II Cor. 4:4] and prince [John 12:31] of this world, when he is spoken of as a strong armed man [Luke 11:21; cf. Matt. 12:29], the spirit who holds power over the air [Eph. 2:2], a roaring lion [I Pet. 5:8], these descriptions serve only to make us more cautious and watchful, and thus more prepared to take up the struggle. This also sometimes is noted explicitly: for Peter, after he has said that the devil "prowls around like a roaring lion seeking someone to devour" [I Peter 5:8], immediately subjoins the exhortation that with faith we steadfastly resist him [I Peter 5:9]. And Paul, after he has warned us that our struggle is not with flesh and blood, but with the princes of the air, with the powers of darkness, and spiritual wickedness [Eph. 6:12], forthwith bids us put on that armor capable of sustaining so great and dangerous a contest [Eph. 6:13ff.]. We have been forewarned that an enemy relentlessly threatens us, an enemy who is the very embodiment of rash boldness, of military prowess, of crafty wiles, of untiring zeal and haste, of every conceivable weapon and of skill in the science of warfare. We must, then, bend our every effort to this goal: that we should not let ourselves be overwhelmed by carelessness or faintheartedness, but on the contrary, with courage rekindled stand our ground in combat. Since this military service ends only at death, let us urge ourselves to perseverance. Indeed, conscious of our weakness and ignorance, let us especially call upon God's help, relying upon him alone in whatever we attempt, since it is he alone who can supply us with counsel and strength, courage and armor.

#### II Cor. 4:4

<sup>4</sup> The god of this age has blinded the minds of unbelievers, so that they cannot see the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God.

#### John 12:31

Now is the time for judgment on this world; now the prince of this world will be driven out.

#### Luke 11:21

<sup>21</sup> "When a strong man, fully armed, guards his own house, his possessions are safe.

#### Matt. 12:29

<sup>29</sup> "Or again, how can anyone enter a strong man's house and carry off his possessions unless he first ties up the strong man? Then he can rob his house.

#### Eph. 2:2

in which you used to live when you followed the ways of this world and of the ruler of the kingdom of the air, the spirit who is now at work in those who are disobedient.

#### I Peter 5:8-9

- <sup>8</sup> Be self-controlled and alert. Your enemy the devil prowls around like a roaring lion looking for someone to devour.
- <sup>9</sup> Resist him, standing firm in the faith, because you know that your brothers throughout the world are undergoing the same kind of sufferings.

#### Eph. 6:12-13

- For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the authorities, against the powers of this dark world and against the spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly realms.
- <sup>13</sup> Therefore put on the full armor of God, so that when the day of evil comes, you may be able to stand your ground, and after you have done everything, to stand.

## 1.14.14 黑暗的權勢

## THE REALM OF WICKEDNESS 1.14.14

《聖經》為要促使我們行動起見,它告訴我們那和我們作戰的敵人,不只是一 兩個,或少數的幾個人,乃是一大群的隊伍。抹大拉的馬利亞曾被鬼附著,從她身 上趕出來的據說就有七個鬼(參可 16:9);基督認為,如果你留有空隙,讓一個 被逐出去的鬼再進來,牠將招來七個更兇惡的鬼,回到牠那空出來的住所,這也是 常有的事(參太 12: 43-45);據說有一個人曾經被一群鬼附著(參路 8: 30)。 以上這些經文告訴我們,我們必須和無數敵人鬥爭,免得我們因輕視他們為數不 多, 而忽略與他們鬥爭, 或者, 有時候因為希望中止鬥爭, 而使我們陷於怠惰。當 《聖經》以單數形容撒但或魔鬼的時候,這是指那掌權反對公義國度的。正如教會 和聖徒們的社會是以基督為首領,同樣,不敬的黨類和不敬拜上帝的事,是以他們 的君王為代表,就是那在他們當中行使最高權力的。這就是下面一句話的意義: 「你們這被咒詛的人,離開我,進入那為魔鬼,和牠的使者所預備的永火裏去」 (太25:41)。

#### 可 16: 9

<sup>9</sup> 在七日的第一日清早,耶穌復活了,就先向抹大拉的馬利亞顯現。耶穌從他身上 曾趕出七個鬼。

#### 太 12: 43-45

- 43 污鬼離了人身,就在無水之地過來過去,尋求安歇之處,卻尋不著。
- 4 於是說:我要回到我所出來的屋裏去。到了,就看見裏面空閒,打掃乾淨,修飾
- 45 便去另帶了七個比自己更惡的鬼來,都進去住在那裏。那人末後的景況比先前更 不好了。這邪惡的世代也要如此。

#### 路 8: 2,30

- 還有被惡鬼所附、被疾病所累、已經治好的幾個婦女, 內中有稱為抹大拉的馬 利亞,曾有七個鬼從他身上趕出來,
- ™ 耶穌問他說:你名叫什麼?他說:我名叫群;這是因為附著他的鬼多。

#### 太 25: 41

4 王又要向那左邊的說:你們這被咒詛的人,離開我!進入那為魔鬼和他的使者所 預備的永火裹去!

Moreover, in order that we may be aroused and exhorted all the more to carry this out, Scripture makes known that there are not one, not two, nor a few ones, but great armies, which wage war against us. For Mary Magdalene is said to have been freed from seven demons by which she was possessed [Mark 16;9; Luke 8:2], and Christ bears witness that

usually after a demon has once been cast out, if you make room for him again, he will take with him seven spirits more wicked than he and return to his empty possession [Matt. 12:43-45]. Indeed, a whole legion is said to have assailed one man [Luke 8:30]. We are therefore taught by these examples that we have to wage war against an infinite number of enemies, lest, despising their fewness, we should be too remiss to give battle, or, thinking that we are sometimes afforded some respite, we should yield to idleness.

But the frequent mention of Satan or the devil in the singular denotes the empire of wickedness opposed to the Kingdom of Righteousness. For as the church and fellowship of the saints has Christ as Head, so the faction of the impious and impiety itself are depicted for us together with their prince who holds supreme sway over them. For this reason, it was said: "Depart, ... you cursed, into the eternal fire, prepared for the devil and his angels" [Matt. 25:41].

#### Mark 16:9

<sup>9</sup> When Jesus rose early on the first day of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom he had driven seven demons.

#### Matt. 12:43-45

- <sup>43</sup> "When an evil<sup>[f]</sup> spirit comes out of a man, it goes through arid places seeking rest and does not find it.
- <sup>44</sup> Then it says, 'I will return to the house I left.' When it arrives, it finds the house unoccupied, swept clean and put in order.
- <sup>45</sup> Then it goes and takes with it seven other spirits more wicked than itself, and they go in and live there. And the final condition of that man is worse than the first. That is how it will be with this wicked generation."

#### Luke 8:2, 30

- <sup>2</sup> and also some women who had been cured of evil spirits and diseases: Mary (called Magdalene) from whom seven demons had come out;
- <sup>30</sup> Jesus asked him, "What is your name?"

#### Matt. 25:41

<sup>41</sup> "Then he will say to those on his left, 'Depart from me, you who are cursed, into the eternal fire prepared for the devil and his angels.

## 1.14.15 戰爭到底,不可妥協 AN IRRECONCILABLE STRUGGLE 1.14.15

魔鬼不論在什麼地方,都被稱為上帝和我們的敵人,這也可以激發我們和牠作 永久的戰鬥。如果我們以上帝的光榮為重,我們就當竭全力去反對那想毀滅這光榮 的魔鬼。魔鬼也企圖傾覆基督的國,我們如果有擁護基督之國的熱忱,就必須和那 陰謀破壞基督之國的魔鬼作殊死戰。在另一方面, 假如我們以我們自己的得救為 念,我們就不該和魔鬼議和停戰,因為牠多方設計毀滅我們的救恩。創世記第三章 所描寫的就是魔鬼引誘人離棄順從上帝的心,所以剝奪了上帝應受的尊榮,又使人 陷於毀滅的境地。在福音作者的筆下,也認魔鬼為敵人,說牠為破壞永生的種子, 特意撒下稗子(參太 13: 25, 28)。總之,基督關於魔鬼的見證,曾指牠自始至 終為殺人的兇手,和說謊的騙子(參約8:44),證諸事實,確是如此。因為魔鬼 以謊言反對上帝的真理: 以黑暗的陰影, 遮蔽光明: 使人的心靈, 陷於錯誤: 挑撥 仇恨,製造紛擾和戰爭;這一切暴行,都是以推翻上帝的國,和使人類與牠自己同 陷於永遠的毀滅為目的。因此可見魔鬼本來是腐敗的,惡毒的,陰險的,和肆無忌 懂的。魔鬼既一心一意反對上帝的光榮,和人類的拯救,足見牠的心術是腐化到了 極點。約翰在他的書信中說過,「魔鬼在最初就犯了罪」(約壹 3:8),意即**牠** 是一切邪惡和不義的創作者,執行者,和主要的策劃者。

#### 創3:1-5

- 1 耶和華上帝所造的,惟有蛇比田野一切的活物更狡猾。蛇對女人說:上帝豈是真 說不許你們吃園中所有樹上的果子嗎?
- 2 女人對蛇說: 園中樹上的果子, 我們可以吃,
- 3 惟有園當中那棵樹上的果子,上帝曾說:你們不可吃,也不可摸,免得你們死
- 4 蛇對女人說: 你們不一定死;
- 5 因為上帝知道,你們吃的日子眼睛就明亮了,你們便如上帝能知道善惡。

#### 太 13: 25, 28, 39

- 25 及至人睡覺的時候,有仇敵來,將稗子撒在麥子裏就走了。
- 28 主人說:這是仇敵做的。僕人說:你要我們去薅出來嗎?
- <sup>39</sup> 撒稗子的仇敵就是魔鬼;收割的時候就是世界的末了;收割的人就是天使。

#### 約8:44

⁴ 你們是出於你們的父魔鬼,你們父的私慾你們偏要行。他從起初是殺人的,不守 真理,因他心裹沒有真理。他說謊是出於自己;因他本來是說謊的,也是說謊 之人的父。

#### 約賣 3:8

犯罪的是屬魔鬼,因為魔鬼從起初就犯罪。上帝的兒子顯現出來,為要除滅 魔 鬼的作為。

The fact that the devil is everywhere called God's adversary and ours also ought to fire us to an unceasing struggle against him. For if we have God's glory at heart, as we should have, we ought with all our strength to contend against him who is trying to extinguish it. If we are minded to affirm Christ's Kingdom as we ought, we must wage irreconcilable war with him who is plotting its ruin. Again, if we care about our salvation at all, we ought to have neither peace nor truce with him who continually lays traps to destroy it. So, indeed, is he described in Gen., ch. 3, where he seduces man from the obedience owed to God, that he may simultaneously deprive God of his due honor and hurl man himself into ruin [vs.1-5]. So, also, in the Evangelists, where he is called "an enemy" [Matt. 13:28, 39], and is said to sow weeds in order to corrupt the seed of eternal life [Matt. 13:25]. In sum, we experience in all of Satan's deeds what Christ testifies concerning him, that "from the beginning he was a murderer... and a liar" [John 8:44]. For he opposes the truth of God with falsehoods, he obscures the light with darkness, he entangles men's minds in errors, he stirs up hatred, he kindles contentions and combats, everything to the end that he may overturn God's Kingdom and plunge men with himself into eternal death. From this it appears that h is in nature deprayed, evil, and malicious. For there must be consummate depravity in that disposition which devotes itself to assailing God's glory and man's salvation. This, also, is what John means in his letter, when he writes that "the devil has sinned from the beginning" [I John 3:8]. Indeed, he considers him as the author, leader, and architect of all malice and iniquity.

#### Gen. 3:1-5

- <sup>1</sup> Now the serpent was more crafty than any of the wild animals the LORD God had made. He said to the woman, "Did God really say, 'You must not eat from any tree in the garden'?"
- <sup>2</sup> The woman said to the serpent, "We may eat fruit from the trees in the garden,
- <sup>3</sup> but God did say, 'You must not eat fruit from the tree that is in the middle of the garden, and you must not touch it, or you will die.' "
- <sup>4</sup> "You will not surely die," the serpent said to the woman.
- <sup>5</sup> "For God knows that when you eat of it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil."

#### Matt. 13:25, 28, 39

<sup>25</sup> But while everyone was sleeping, his enemy came and sowed weeds among the wheat, and went away.

- <sup>28</sup> " 'An enemy did this,' he replied. "The servants asked him, 'Do you want us to go and pull them up?'
- <sup>39</sup> and the enemy who sows them is the devil. The harvest is the end of the age, and the harvesters are angels.

# John 8:44

You belong to your father, the devil, and you want to carry out your father's desire. He was a murderer from the beginning, not holding to the truth, for there is no truth in him. When he lies, he speaks his native language, for he is a liar and the father of lies

# I John 3:8

<sup>8</sup> He who does what is sinful is of the devil, because the devil has been sinning from the beginning. The reason the Son of God appeared was to destroy the devil's work

# 1.14.16 魔鬼是上帝創造的被造物, 墮落敗壞 THE DEVIL IS A DEGENERATE CREATION OF GOD 1.14.16

然而魔鬼既是上帝所造的, 所以我們必須聲明, 魔鬼本性上的這一些邪惡, 不 是由於創造,乃是出於墮落。不論牠有什麼邪惡,都是因牠自己背叛和墮落而來。 關於這一點,《聖經》告訴了我們,免得我們相信牠現在的樣子是從上帝那裏來 的,因此把牠那正與上帝相反的,歸於上帝。基督因此聲明說:「牠說謊,是出於 自己 | (約8:44), 然後又補上一句, 「因為牠不守真理 | ; 既不守真理自然是 暗指牠曾經守過真理。祂稱牠為說謊之父,好使牠那敗壞的性質不與上帝相涉,因 為牠那性質原是完全出乎自己的。這些事的說明雖甚簡單, 但足以證明上帝的尊 嚴, 使祂不至受貶損。那麼, 我們何必更詳細地想知道魔鬼的事呢? 有些人怪 《聖經》沒有清楚詳細地告訴我們關於魔鬼墮落的原因,時間,情形和性質等。 但這些事對我們沒有什麼價值,所以《聖經》對這些事雖不完全緘默忽視,卻只略 略提起罷了。因為以空虛無益的歷史來滿足好奇心,這與《聖經》的尊嚴是不相符 合的: 我們覺得在祂的上帝諭中,不談那些與我們的造就無關的事,原是主的計 畫。所以我們為避免討論無益的問題,對魔鬼的性質,有了這種簡明的認識就夠 了: 魔鬼在受造之時原是上帝的天使, 後來因墮落而敗壞自己, 又成為敗壞他人的 工具。這一點值得知道,是彼得和猶大所明說的。他們說: 「上帝對那些犯罪,不 守本位,離開自己住處的天使,並不寬恕| (彼後 2: 4: 猶 6 節)。保羅既說到 蒙揀選的天使(參提前 5: 21),無疑義地他暗指還有其他天使,乃是上帝所擯棄 的。

# 約8:44

4 你們是出於你們的父魔鬼,你們父的私慾你們偏要行。他從起初是殺人的,不守 真理,因他心裏沒有真理。他說謊是出於自己:因他本來是說謊的,也是說謊 之人的父。

# 彼後2:4

4 就是天使犯了罪,上帝也沒有寬容,曾把他們丟在地獄,交在黑暗坑中,等候審 判。

# 猶 1: 6

<sup>6</sup> 又有不守本位、離開自己住處的天使,主用鎖鍊把他們永遠拘留在黑暗裏,等 候大日的審判。

# 提前 5: 21

1 我在上帝和基督耶穌並蒙揀選的天使面前囑咐你:要遵守這些話,不可存成 見, 行事也不可有偏心。

Yet, since the devil was created by God, let us remember that this malice, which we attribute to his nature, came not from his creation but from his perversion. For, whatever he has that is to be condemned he has derived from his revolt and fall. For this reason, Scripture warns us lest, believing that he has come forth in his present condition from God, we should ascribe to God himself what is utterly alien to him. For this reason, Christ declares that "when Satan lies, he speaks according to his own nature" and states the reason, because "he abode not in the truth" [John 8:44 p.]. Indeed, when Christ states that Satan "abode not in the truth," he hints that he was once in it, and when he makes him "the father of lies," he deprives him of imputing to God the fault which he brought upon himself.

But although these things are briefly and not very clearly stated, they are more than enough to clear God's majesty of all slander. And what concern is it to us to know anything more about devils or to know it for another purpose? Some persons grumble that Scripture does not in numerous passages set forth systematically and clearly that fall of the devils, its cause, manner, time, and character. But because this has nothing to do with us, it was better not to say anything, or at least to touch upon it lightly, because it did not befit the Holy Spirit to feed our curiosity with empty histories to no effect. And we see that the Lord's purpose was to teaching nothing in his sacred oracles except what we should learn to our edification. Therefore, lest we ourselves linger over superfluous matters, let us be content with this brief summary of the nature of devils: they were when first created angels of God, but by degeneration they ruined themselves, and became the instruments of ruin for others. Because this is profitable to know, it is plainly taught in Peter and Jude. God did not spare those angels who sinned [II Peter 2:4] and kept not their original nature, but left their abode [Jude 6]. And Paul, in speaking of the "elect angels" [I Tim. 5:21], is no doubt tacitly contrasting them with the reprobate angels.

# John 8:44

<sup>44</sup> You belong to your father, the devil, and you want to carry out your father's desire. He was a murderer from the beginning, not holding to the truth, for there is no truth in him. When he lies, he speaks his native language, for he is a liar and the father of lies

# II Peter 2:4

<sup>4</sup> For if God did not spare angels when they sinned, but sent them to hell, <sup>[a]</sup> putting them into gloomy dungeons to be held for judgment;

# Jude 1:6

<sup>6</sup> And the angels who did not keep their positions of authority but abandoned their own home—these he has kept in darkness, bound with everlasting chains for judgment on the great Day.

# I Tim. 5:21

<sup>21</sup> I charge you, in the sight of God and Christ Jesus and the elect angels, to keep these instructions without partiality, and to do nothing out of favoritism.

# 1.14.17 魔鬼服在上帝的權柄之下

# THE DEVIL STANDS UNDER GOD'S POWER 1.14.17

我們說撒但用不和與紛爭反抗上帝,同時必須深信,魔鬼所要做的,若不按照 上帝的旨意,並得到祂的允許,就不能做。我們讀約伯的歷史,知道魔鬼到上帝的 面前, 領受祂的命令: 不先得到上帝的允許, 就不敢從事任何工作(參伯1:6: 2:1)。亞哈受騙,是由魔鬼在先知們的口中,做撒謊的邪靈: 牠這樣做,是奉了 上帝的吩咐(參王上 22: 20-22 以下)。那困擾掃羅的魔鬼,也被稱為「從上帝來 的惡魔」(撒上 16: 14: 18: 10),因為上帝用牠懲罰那個不敬上帝的王。又據 它處的記載,埃及人所患的瘟疫,是「降災的使者」所加於他們的(詩 78: 49)。保羅聲稱, 使不信的人內心盲目, 是上帝的工作(參帖後 2: 9, 11), 然 而他從前認為這是撒但的工作。可見撒但服從上帝的權能,為上帝所支配,而不得 不服從上帝。我們說撒但反抗上帝,牠的工作與上帝的工作相衝突,同時,我們認 為這個反抗和紛爭,還是以上帝的許可為轉移。我現在所指的,不是意志或企圖, 僅是指後果而言。因為魔鬼本性邪惡, 自然絲毫沒有服從上帝意的傾向, 牠的本色 純然是反抗和背叛。**牠反對上帝的慾望和目的,完全是起於牠自己和牠的邪惡。** 牠本性的敗壞,促使牠儘量反抗上帝。但上帝既用權能約束牠,牠就只能執行上 帝所許可的事,所以,不論牠願與不願,牠總須服從牠創造者的旨意,牠的工 作,都是上帝驅使牠做的。

# 伯 1:6

1 有一天,上帝的眾子來侍立在耶和華面前,撒但也來在其中。

# 伯1:12

12 耶和華對撒但說:凡他所有的都在你手中:只是不可伸手加害於他。於是撒但從 耶和華面前退去。

# 伯 2: 1

1 又有一天,上帝的眾子來侍立在耶和華面前,撒但也來在其中。

# 伯 2: 6

6 耶和華對撒但說:他在你手中,只要存留他的性命。

# 王上 22: 20-22

- ◎ 耶和華說: 誰去引誘亞哈上基列的拉末去陣亡呢;這個就這樣說,那個就那樣
- 11 隨後有一個上帝靈出來,站在耶和華面前,說:我去引誘他。
- <sup>22</sup> 耶和華問他說: 你用何法呢?他說: 我去,要在他眾先知口中作謊言的靈。耶和 華說:這樣,你必能引誘他,你去如此行吧!

# 撒上 16: 14

14 耶和華的靈離開掃羅,有惡魔從耶和華那裏來擾亂他。

# 撒上 18: 10

10 次日,從上帝那裏來的惡魔大大降在掃羅身上,他就在家中胡言亂語。大衛照常 彈琴,掃羅手裏拿著槍。

# 詩 78: 49

49 他使猛烈的怒氣和忿怒、惱恨、苦難成了一群降災的使者,臨到他們。

# 林後4:4

4 此等不信之人被這世界的上帝弄瞎了心眼,不叫基督榮耀福音的光照著他們。 基督本是上帝的像。

# Eph. 2: 2

那時,你們在其中行事為人,隨從今世的風俗,順服空中掌權者的首領,就是 現今在悖逆之子心中運行的邪靈。

# 帖後 2: 9, 11

- 這不法的人來,是照撒但的運動,行各樣的異能、神蹟,和一切虛假的奇事,
- 故此,上帝就給他們一個生發錯誤的心,叫他們信從虛謊,

As for the discord and strife that we say exists between Satan and God, we ought to accept as a fixed certainty the fact that he can do nothing unless God wills and assents to it. For we read in the history of Job that he presented himself before God to receive his commands [Job 1:6; 2:1], and did not dare undertake any evil act without first having obtained permission [chs. 1:12; 2:6]. Thus, also, when Ahab was to be deceived, Satan took upon himself to become a spirit of falsehood in the mouths of all the prophets; and commissioned by God, he carried out his task [I Kings 22:20-22]. For this reason, too, the spirit of the Lord that troubled Saul is called "evil" because the sins of the impious king were punished by it as by a lash [I Sam. 16:14; 18:10]. And elsewhere it is written that the plagues were inflicted upon the Egyptians by God "through evil angels" [Ps. 78:49]. According to these particular examples Paul generally testifies that the blinding of unbelievers is God's work [II Thess. 2:11], although he had before called it the activity of Satan [II Thess. 2:9; cf. II Cor. 4:4; Eph. 2:2]. Therefore Satan is clearly under God's power, and is so ruled by his bidding as to be compelled to render him service. Indeed, when we say that Satan resists God, and that Satan's work disagree with God's works, we at the same time assert that this resistance and this opposition are dependent upon God's sufferance. I am not now speaking of Satan's will, nor even of his effort, but only of his effect. For inasmuch as the devil is by nature wicked, he is not at all inclined to obedience to the divine will, but utterly intent upon contumacy and rebellion. From himself and his own wickedness, therefore, arises his passionate and deliberate opposition to God. By this wickedness he is urged on to attempt courses of action which

he believes to be most hostile to God. But because with the bridle of his power God holds him bound and restrained, he carries out only those things which have been divinely permitted to him; and so he obeys his Creator, whether he will or not, because he is compelled to yield him service wherever God impels him.

#### Job 1:6, 12

- <sup>6</sup> One day the angels <sup>[a]</sup> came to present themselves before the LORD, and Satan <sup>[b]</sup> also came with them.
- <sup>12</sup> The LORD said to Satan, "Very well, then, everything he has is in your hands, but on the man himself do not lay a finger." Then Satan went out from the presence of the LORD.

# Job 2:1, 6

- On another day the angels [a] came to present themselves before the LORD, and Satan also came with them to present himself before him.
- <sup>6</sup> The LORD said to Satan, "Very well, then, he is in your hands; but you must spare his life."

# I Kings 22:20-22

- And the LORD said, 'Who will entice Ahab into attacking Ramoth Gilead and going to his death there?' "One suggested this, and another that.
- <sup>21</sup> Finally, a spirit came forward, stood before the LORD and said, 'I will entice him.'
- " 'By what means?' the LORD asked. " 'I will go out and be a lying spirit in the mouths of all his prophets,' he said. " 'You will succeed in enticing him,' said the LORD. 'Go and do it.'

# I Sam. 16:14

Now the Spirit of the LORD had departed from Saul, and an evil [b] spirit from the LORD tormented him.

# I Sam. 18:10

The next day an evil [b] spirit from God came forcefully upon Saul. He was prophesying in his house, while David was playing the harp, as he usually did. Saul had a spear in his hand

# Ps. 78:49

<sup>49</sup> He unleashed against them his hot anger, his wrath, indignation and hostility a band of destroying angels.

# II Thess. 2:9.11

<sup>9</sup> The coming of the lawless one will be in accordance with the work of Satan displayed in all kinds of counterfeit miracles, signs and wonders,

II Cor. 4:4<sup>4</sup> The god of this age has blinded the minds of unbelievers, so that they cannot see the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God.

Eph. 2:2  $^{2}\,$  in which you used to live when you followed the ways of this world and of the ruler of the kingdom of the air, the spirit who is now at work in those who are disobedient.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>11</sup> For this reason God sends them a powerful delusion so that they will believe the lie

# 1.14.22 默想上帝在祂所創造的宇宙中的良善,會領我們感謝 祂,信靠祂

THE CONTEMPLATIONS OF GOD'S GOODNESS IN HIS CREATION WILL LEAD US TO THANKFULNESS AND TRUST 1.14.22

還有第二點,這一點與信仰更為接近:**我們既然看到上帝為我們的利益和安** 全安排了萬物,同時又看到祂在我們身上的權能和恩典,和祂所賜給我們的各種 好處,我們就可以因此激發自己信託祂,請求祂、讚美祂、和愛慕祂。正如我已 經指出的,在創造宇宙的程式上,上帝自己業已表明,祂創造萬物,都是為著人的 緣故。祂分**六日創造世界**,不是沒有理由的;如果祂要立時完成細微末節的一 切,比**逐步漸進地去完成創造**,並不更困難些。但祂在這裏故意表明了祂對我們 的旨意和父愛,在造人之前,預先把對人有益而合用的各樣東西都安排妥貼。在我 們尚未存在以前,上帝就這樣顧念我們的利益,那麼,我們若懷疑祂的顧念,是何 等的負義呢! 在我們還未出生以前, 祂便為我們準備了最豐富的福份, 若我們惶恐 自疑,惟恐在我們窘迫之時,祂的仁慈會離棄我們,這是何等的不虔敬呢!此外, 摩西告訴了我們(參創 1: 28, 9: 2),上帝因為寬宏大量,就把整個世界所有的 一切,都交給我們保管。祂這樣聲明,當然不是以施予的空名,來愚弄我們。所以 凡對我們有益的, 我們絕不會缺乏。

# 創 1: 28,31

- 28 上帝就賜福給他們,又對他們說:要生養眾多,遍滿地面,治理這地,也要管理 海裏的魚、空中的鳥, 和地上各樣行動的活物。
- 11 上帝看著一切所造的都甚好。有晚上,有早晨,是第六日。

# 創9:2

凡地上的走獸和空中的飛鳥都必驚恐,懼怕你們,連地上一切的昆蟲並海裏一 切的魚都交付你們的手。

There remains the second part of the rule, more closely related to faith. It is to recognize that God has destined all things for our good and salvation but at the same time to fell his power and grace in ourselves and in the great benefits he has conferred upon us, and so bestir ourselves to trust, invoke, praise, and love him. Indeed, as I pointed out a little before, God himself has shown by the order of Creation that he created all things for man's sake. For it is not without significance that he divided the making of the universe into six days [Gen.1:31], even though it would have been no more difficult for him to have completed in one moment the whole work together with all its details than to arrive at its completion gradually by a progression of this sort. But he willed to commend his providence and fatherly solicitude toward us in that, before he fashioned man, he prepared everything he foresaw would be useful and salutary for him. How great ingratitude would it be now to doubt whether this most gracious Father has us in his care, who we see was concerned for us even before we were born! How impious would it be

to tremble for fear that his kindness might at any time fail us in our need, when we see that it was shown, with the greatest abundance of every good thing, when we were yet unborn! Besides, from Moses we hear that, through His liberality, all things on earth are subject to us [Gen. 1:28; 9:2]. It is certain that He did not do this to mock us with the empty title to a gift. Therefore nothing that is needful for our welfare will ever be lacking to us.

# Gen. 1:28, 31; 9:2

- God blessed them and said to them, "Be fruitful and increase in number; fill the earth and subdue it. Rule over the fish of the sea and the birds of the air and over every living creature that moves on the ground."
- God saw all that he had made, and it was very good. And there was evening, and there was morning—the sixth day.

# Gen. 9:2

The fear and dread of you will fall upon all the beasts of the earth and all the birds of the air, upon every creature that moves along the ground, and upon all the fish of the sea; they are given into your hands.

最後,總括來說,我們每逢稱上帝為天地的創造者之時,就應該想到,祂對所造一切萬物的安排,都是在自己的權能支配之下;我們是祂的兒女,祂會**照顧**我們,**保護**我們,還要**教養**我們,好叫我們知道每一幸福都是從祂而來,使我們常存希望,深信在和我們幸福有關的事上,祂決不會叫我們有所欠缺,所以我們的希望除祂以外,別無所托;我們有所需求的時候,可以向祂祈禱,我們不論從那一方面得著利益,都應當以感恩之心承認那是祂所賜與的;我們既得了祂這麼大的恩惠,慈愛,和溫情,我們就可以學習以全心去愛祂和敬拜祂。

To conclude once for all, whenever we call God the Creator of heaven and earth, let us at the same time bear in mind that the dispensation of all those things which he has made is in his own hand and power and that we are indeed his children, whom he has received into his faithful protection to nourish and educate. We are therefore to await the fullness of all good things from him alone and to trust completely that he will never leave us destitute of what we need for salvation, and to hang our hopes on none but him! We are therefore, also, to petition him for whatever we desire; and we are to recognize as a blessing from him, and thankfully to acknowledge, every benefit that falls to our share. So, invited by the great sweetness of his beneficence and goodness, let us study to love and serve him all our heart.

1.15.2 人是屬靈的活物;靈魂=不朽,被造,貴重的靈魂不朽:靈魂有它的本質;

不僅是「氣」或「力量」加於身體:

罪人有「不朽的意識」: 能意識是非: 知道上帝:

夢:不朽的證據

MAN IS SPIRITUAL BEING; SOUL = IMMORTAL, CREATED, NOBLER

IMMORTALITY OF THE SOUL: SOUL HAS ESSENCE OF ITS OWN;

NOT JUST "BREATH" OR "STRENGTHENED" ADDED TO BODY;

SINNER HAS "SENSE OF IMMORTALITY"; IS CONSCIOUS OF GOOD AND EVIL; KNOWS GOD; DREAMS – EVIDENCE OF IMMORTALITY 1.15.2

卷一第十五章:身體與靈魂有別

# 1.15.2 身體與靈魂有別

Diversity of body and soul 1.15.2

人具有靈魂和肉體,這是無庸爭論的事實。我的所謂「靈魂」是指那不朽,而屬被造的本質,是人最高貴的部份。有時候它又稱為「靈」(Spirit)雖然,當這兩個名詞連用之時,它們的意義不同,可是若「靈」字分開用時,就與「靈魂」(Soul)一名詞相同;正如所羅門談到死的時候說:「靈仍歸於賜靈的上帝」(傳12:7),而基督把祂的靈魂交給父(參路23:46),司提反把他的靈魂交給基督(參徒7:59),他們的用意就是說,靈魂從肉體的束縛解放以後,上帝就是靈魂永遠的保管者。有些人以為靈魂之稱為「靈」,因為是上帝吹入於肉體中的氣或智慧,並沒有任何本質,這種講法,不但與事實的本身大不相符,而且也與《聖經》的要旨完全不合。

傳 12: 7

<sup>&</sup>quot; 塵土仍歸於地,靈仍歸於賜靈的上帝。

路 23:46

46 耶穌大聲喊著說: 父啊! 我將我的靈魂交在你手裏。說了這話,氣就斷了。

徒7:59

9 他們正用石頭打的時候,司提反呼籲主說:求主耶穌接收我的靈魂!

# 雅 1: 17

<sup>17</sup> 各樣美善的恩賜和各樣全備的賞賜都是從上頭來的,從眾光之父那裹降下來的; 在他並沒有改變,也沒有轉動的影兒。

真的,當人們入世太深,就變為愚魯,與光明之父疏遠了,沉淪在黑暗中,所以他們決不想到在死了以後,還可以繼續生存。但同時,光明並沒有完全為黑暗所消滅,他們仍然有多少不朽的感覺。**良心既然能分別善惡**,能答覆上帝的審判,當然是永生之靈的一個證明。若良心不過是一種感情或情緒,沒有本質的話,怎能看見上帝的審判,或因犯罪而感覺恐懼呢?因為肉體對精神上的刑罰不會有所感覺,只有靈魂,才會感覺那樣的恐懼;因此**可以證實靈魂是有本質的**。由靈魂之具有對上帝的認識,足以證明靈魂的不朽,所以靈魂是超乎世界以外的,因為易消逝的呼吸,斷不能達到生命的泉源。

Furthermore, that man consists of a soul and a body ought to be beyond controversy. Now I understand by the term "soul" an immortal yet created essence, which is his nobler part. Sometimes it is called "spirit." For even when these terms are joined together, they differ from one another in meaning; yet when the word "spirit" is used by itself, it means the same thing as soul; as when Solomon, speaking of death, says that then "the spirit returns to God who gave it" [Eccl. 12:7]. And when Christ commended his spirit to the Father [Luke 23:46] and Stephen his to Christ [Acts 7:59] they meant only that when the soul is freed from the prison house of the body, God is its perpetual guardian. Some imagine the soul to be called "spirit" for the reason that it is breath, or a force divinely infused into bodies, but that it nevertheless is without essence; both the thing itself and all Scripture show them to be stupidly blundering in this opinion. It is of course true that while men are tied to earth more than they should be they grow dull; indeed, because they have been estranged from the Father of Lights [James 1:17], they become blinded by darkness, so that they do not think they will survive death; yet in the meantime the light has not been so extinguished in the darkness that they remain untouched by a sense of their own immortality. Surely the conscience, which, discerning between good and evil, responds to God's judgment, is an undoubted sign of the immortal spirit. For how could a motion without essence penetrate to God's judgment seat, and inflict itself with dread at its own guilt? For the body is not affected by the fear of spiritual punishment, which falls upon the soul only; from this it follows that the soul is endowed with essence. Now the very knowledge of God sufficiently proves that souls, which transcend the world, are immortal, for no transient energy could penetrate to the fountain of life.

# Eccl. 12:7

and the dust returns to the ground it came from, and the spirit returns to God who gave it.

# Luke 23:46

<sup>46</sup> Jesus called out with a loud voice, "Father, into your hands I commit my spirit." When he had said this, he breathed his last.

# Acts 7:59

<sup>59</sup> While they were stoning him, Stephen prayed, "Lord Jesus, receive my spirit."

# James 1:17

Every good and perfect gift is from above, coming down from the Father of the heavenly lights, who does not change like shifting shadows.

還有,人類心靈有許多高貴而屬上帝的智慧,可以證明**靈魂有不朽的本質**。因 獸類所有的感覺不能超出身體以外,最多也不能超出附近的物體以外。但人心的機 智能觀察天地,和自然界的奧秘,它的智慧能瞭解和記憶各時代的事物,能融匯一 切事物,使它們井井有序,又能由過去推測未來,凡此種種,**都足以證明在人心** 中,必有與肉體判然不同者存在著。在我們的思想中,我們對無形的上帝和天 使,都可以構成概念,這是肉體所做不到的。我們能夠瞭解什麼是善,什麼是公義 和誠實,這也不是肉體的感官所能辨別的。由此可見「靈」必定是這種智力的居 所。甚至睡眠,它使人知覺遲鈍,甚至似乎把人的生命也剝奪了,這明明也是靈魂 不朽的一個有力證明;因為眠夢不但提示過去從未發生過的事,且亦預表未來的 事。我對這些事不過略略提起,這種事世俗的作家談來更是精彩動人;但為虔誠的 讀者,有了這簡單的敍述已夠了。

In short, the many pre-eminent gifts with which the human mind is endowed proclaim that something divine has been engraved upon it; all these are testimonies of an immortal essence. For the sense perception inhering in brute animals does not go beyond the body, or at least extends no farther than to material things presented to it. But the nimbness of the human mind in searching out heaven and dearth and the secrets of nature, and when all ages have been compassed by its understanding and memory, in arranging each thing in its proper order, and in inferring future events from past, clearly shows that there lies hidden in man something separate from the body. With our intelligence we conceive the invisible God and the angels, something the body can by no means do. We grasp things that are right, just, and honorable, which are hidden to the bodily senses. Therefore the spirit must be the seat of this intelligence. Indeed, sleep itself, which benumbs man, seeming even to deprive him of life, is no obscure witness of immortality, since it suggests not only thoughts of things that have never happened, but also presentiments of the future. I have briefly touched upon these things which secular writers grandly extol and depict in more brilliant language; but among godly readers this simple reminder will be enough.

除非靈魂與肉體有根本的差別,《聖經》就不會告訴我們,說我們是住在泥土的 房屋中(參伯4:19),到死之時,就要離開肉體的帳幕(林後5:4)。又說,我 們要丟棄那可朽壞的(參彼後 1: 13, 14),在末日按照各人肉身的行為,領受賞 賜(參林後 5:10)。這些和別的經文,都不但將**靈魂與肉體分得清清楚楚,而且 把「靈魂」二字代替「人」的名稱用**,這表示了靈魂是我們天性中最主要的一部 份。保羅在勸告信徒,要他們潔淨身體和靈魂一切的污穢時(參林後 7: 1),就 指出罪惡的污穢,是藏在兩部份裏面的。彼得稱基督為靈魂的牧人和監督(參彼前 2:25),那麼,假如沒有靈魂給基督執行這任務的話,彼得所說的就不得當了。 除非靈魂有真本質,不然,他所說靈魂的救恩,他對潔淨靈魂的勸告及所提私欲和 靈魂的爭戰(參彼前 1: 9, 22; 2: 11): 或如希伯來書所說的,牧者們要為我們 的靈魂時刻警醒,以便將來交賬(參來 13: 17)這一類的話,就都不合適了。為 同一目的,保羅也說:「求上帝給我的靈魂作見證」(林後 1: 23),因為靈魂若 不能受懲罰,就不能受上帝的控制:基督關於這一點說得更清楚,祂吩咐我們,要 怕那殺了我們身體以後,又能把我們靈魂丟在地獄裏的(參太10:28;路12:4, 5)希伯來人書的作者把肉身的父,與萬能唯一的父——上帝——分得清清楚楚 (參來 12: 9),關於靈魂的本質或存在,沒有比這個說得更清楚的了。除非靈魂 自肉體的枷鎖解脫以後依然存在,那麼基督所說拉撒路在亞伯拉罕的懷裹享福,和 富人的靈魂被定罪受苦待(參路 16: 22),就是無稽之談了。保羅也證實這一 點,他告訴我們,當我們住在肉體中,便與上帝隔離,但一旦脫離肉體,我們就和 主同住(參林後5:6,8)。對於這樣顯明的一個題目,用不著太詳細討論。我現 在只不要加上一點,就是路加所說撒都該人不信有天使或靈魂的存在,而這是他們 的錯誤之一。(參徒23:8)。

# 伯4:19

19 何況那住在土房、根基在塵土裏、被蠹蟲所毀壞的人呢?

# 彼後1:13,14

- 13 我以為應當趁我還在這帳棚的時候提醒你們,激發你們。
- 14 因為知道我脫離這帳棚的時候快到了,正如我們主耶穌基督所指示我的。

# 彼前 2: 11, 25

- <sup>11</sup> 親愛的弟兄啊,你們是客旅,是寄居的。我勸你們要禁戒肉體的私慾: 這私慾是 與靈魂爭戰的。
- 25 你們從前好像迷路的羊,如今卻歸到你們靈魂的牧人監督了

# 林後7:1

親愛的弟兄啊, 我們既有這等應許, 就當潔淨自己, 除去身體、靈魂一切的污 穢, 敬畏上帝, 得以成聖。

# 彼前 1: 9, 22

9 並且得著你們信心的果效,就是靈魂的救恩。

2 你們既因順從真理,潔淨了自己的心,以致愛弟兄沒有虛假,就當從心裏(從心 裏:有古卷是從清潔的心)彼此切實相愛

# 來 13: 17

17 你們要依從那些引導你們的,且要順服;因他們為你們的靈魂時刻警醒,好像那 將來交帳的人。你們要使他們交的時候有快樂,不致憂愁;若憂愁就於你們無 益了。

# 林後 1: 23

23 我呼籲上帝給我的心作見證,我沒有往哥林多去是為要寬容你們。

# 來 12: 9

9 再者,我們曾有生身的父管教我們,我們尚且敬重他,何況萬靈的父,我們豈不 更當順服他得生嗎?

# 太 10: 28

28 那殺身體,不能殺靈魂的,不要怕他們;惟有能把身體和靈魂都滅在地獄裏的, 正要怕他。

# 路 12: 4, 5

- 4 我的朋友,我對你們說,那殺身體以後不能再做什麼的,不要怕他們。
- 我要指示你們當怕的是誰:當怕那殺了以後又有權柄丟在地獄裏的。我實在告 訴你們,正要怕他。

# 路 16: 22

後來那討飯的死了,被天使帶去放在亞伯拉罕的懷裏。財主也死了,並且埋葬 了。

# 林後 5: 4, 6, 8, 10

- 4 我們在這帳棚裏歎息勞苦,並非願意脫下這個,乃是願意穿上那個,好叫這必死 的被生命吞滅了。
- 6 所以,我們時常坦然無懼,並且曉得我們住在身內,便與主相離。
- 8 我們坦然無懼,是更願意離開身體與主同住。
- 10 因為我們眾人必要在基督臺前顯露出來,叫各人按著本身所行的,或善或惡受 報。

# 徒 23:8

图為撒都該人說,沒有復活,也沒有天使和鬼魂:法利賽人卻說,兩樣都有。

Now, unless the soul were something essential, separate from the body, Scripture would not teach that we dwell in houses of clay [Job 4:19] and at death leave the tabernacle of the flesh, putting off what is corruptible so that at the Last Day we may finally receive our reward, according as each of us has done in the body. For surely these passages and similar ones that occur repeatedly not only clearly distinguish the soul from the body, but by transferring to it the name "man" indicate to it to be the principal part. Now when Paul urges believers to cleanse themselves of every defilement of flesh and spirit [II Cor. 7:1], he points out the two parts in which the filth of sin resides. Peter, also, calling Christ "shepherd and bishop of ... souls" [I Pet. 2:25], would have spoken wrongly if there had not been souls on whose behalf he might fulfill this office. If souls did not have their own proper essence, there would be no point in Peter's statement about the eternal "salvation of ... souls" [I Pet. 1:9], or in his injunction to purify our souls and ascertain that "wicked lusts ... war against the soul" [I Pet. 2:11 p.]. The same applies to the statement of the author of Hebrews, that the pastors "stand watch ... to render account for our souls" [Heb. 13:17 p.]. The fact that Paul, upon his soul, calls God to witness [II Cor. 1:23, Vg.] points to the same conclusion, because it would not become guilty before God unless it were liable for punishment. This is expressed even more clearly in Christ's words, when he bids us be afraid of him who, after he has killed the body, can send the soul into the Gehenna of fire [Matt. 10:28; Luke 12:5]. Now when the author of The Letter to the Hebrews distinguishes the fathers of our flesh from God, who is the one "Father of spirits" [Heb. 12:9], he could not assert more clearly the essence of souls. Besides, unless souls survive when freed from the prison houses of their bodies, it would be absurd for Christ to induce the soul of Lazarus as enjoying bliss in Abraham's bosom, and again, the soul of the rich man sentenced to terrible torments [Luke 16:22-23]. Paul confirms this same thing, teaching us that we journey away from God so long as we dwell in the flesh, but that we enjoy his presence outside the flesh [II Cor. 5:6, 8]. Lest I go any farther in a topic of no great difficulty, I shall add only this word from Luke, that among the errors of the Sadducees it is mentioned that they did not believe in spirits and angels [Acts 23:8].

# Job 4:19

how much more those who live in houses of clay, whose foundations are in the dust, who are crushed more readily than a moth!

# II Cor. 7:1

<sup>1</sup> Since we have these promises, dear friends, let us purify ourselves from everything that contaminates body and spirit, perfecting holiness out of reverence for God.

# Heb. 13:17

Obey your leaders and submit to their authority. They keep watch over you as men who must give an account. Obey them so that their work will be a joy, not a burden, for that would be of no advantage to you.

# II Cor. 1:23

<sup>23</sup> I call God as my witness that it was in order to spare you that I did not return to Corinth.

# I Pet. 1:9

<sup>9</sup> for you are receiving the goal of your faith, the salvation of your souls.

# I Pet. 2:11, 25

<sup>11</sup> Dear friends, I urge you, as aliens and strangers in the world, to abstain from sinful desires, which war against your soul.

<sup>25</sup> For you were like sheep going astray, but now you have returned to the Shepherd and Overseer of your souls.

# Matt. 10:28

<sup>28</sup> Do not be afraid of those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul. Rather, be afraid of the One who can destroy both soul and body in hell. <sup>2</sup>

# Luke 12: 4-5

<sup>4</sup> "I tell you, my friends, do not be afraid of those who kill the body and after that can do no more.

<sup>5</sup> But I will show you whom you should fear: Fear him who, after the killing of the body, has power to throw you into hell. Yes, I tell you, fear him.

# Heb. 12:9

<sup>9</sup> Moreover, we have all had human fathers who disciplined us and we respected them for it. How much more should we submit to the Father of our spirits and live!

# Luke 16:22-23

- <sup>22</sup> "The time came when the beggar died and the angels carried him to Abraham's side. The rich man also died and was buried.
- In hell, [c] where he was in torment, he looked up and saw Abraham far away, with Lazarus by his side.

# II Cor. 5:6, 8

- <sup>5</sup> Now it is God who has made us for this very purpose and has given us the Spirit as a deposit, guaranteeing what is to come.
- <sup>8</sup> We are confident, I say, and would prefer to be away from the body and at home with the Lord.

# Acts 23:8

The Sadducees say that there is no resurrection, and that there are neither angels nor spirits, but the Pharisees acknowledge them all.)

# 1.15.3 上帝在人裏面的形像與樣式 GOD'S IMAGE AND LIKENESS IN MAN 1.15.3

還有一個切實的證據,即是: **人是按照上帝的形像造的**(創1:27)。上帝的 光榮,雖表現在人的外形上,可是祂的真正形像,無疑的是在靈魂中。我承認人的 外形, 既叫人別於動物, 也使我們與上帝的形像更相類似, 有人以為上帝的形像有 如以下詩句,我也不願意和他們作激烈爭論:

「芸芸生物不能立,

視線低垂向地仙。

惟人高瞻超象外,

昂首舉目望雲天。|

(譯自 Ovid's Metamorphoses 卷一)

所以,只要認定那表現於這種外面的特性的上帝形像是屬靈的。阿西安得爾 (Osiander) 把天地混淆, 他的思想不正確, 這可由他的著作看出, 因他把上帝的 形像不分皂白地推到靈魂與肉體兩方面。他說父子聖靈把形像固定在人裏面,因為 即令亞當保持了完整的人格,基督還是要成為肉身。在他看來,為基督所預定的身 體,就是當初構成亞當肉體的標本。但他在什麼地方找得著基督是靈的形像呢?固 然我承認整個上帝的榮光是照耀在中保的身上; 可是就次序言, 永恆的道是在靈之 先, 怎能又稱道為靈的形像呢? 最後, 如果子被稱為靈的形像, 把子與靈兩者的區 別推翻了。此外,我希望他告訴我,基督在所取了的肉體方面,怎樣和靈相似呢? 他憑什麼性格或容貌,說明他的類似呢?因為在「讓我們照我們自己的形像造人」 (創1:26),這句話中,那「我們」的字也是指子而言,這等於說,祂是祂自己 的形像; 這完全與理性相衝突。如果接受阿西安得爾的意見, 那麼, 人就是按照基 督的人性的形式而造的;而創造亞當的觀念,即是那將要成為肉身的基督;這與 《聖經》所教導的完全不同、《聖經》說、「人是照上帝的形像造的。」有的人認 為亞當是照上帝的形像造的,因為他與基督相符合,而基督就是上帝唯一的形像, 這一說更值得贊同,不過,這也沒有鞏固的基礎。

創1: 26-27

- 26 上帝說: 我們要照著我們的形像、按著我們的樣式造人, 使他們管理海裏的 魚、空中的鳥、地上的牲畜,和全地,並地上所爬的一切昆蟲。
- 27 上帝就照著自己的形像造人,乃是照著他的形像造男造女。

Also, a reliable proof of this matter may be gathered from the fact that man was created in God's image [Gen. 1:27]. For although God's glory shines forth in the outer man, yet there is no doubt that the proper seat of his image is in the soul. I do not deny, indeed, that our outward form, in so far as it distinguishes any separates us from brute animals, at the same time more closely joins us to God. And if anyone wishes to include under "image of God" the fact that, "while all other living things being bent over look earthward, man has been given a face uplifted, bidden to gaze heavenward and to raise

his countenance to the stars," I shall not contend too strongly – provided it be regarded as a settled principle that the image of God, which is seen or glow in these outward marks, is spiritual. For Osiander, whose writings prove him to have been perversely ingenious in futile inventions, indiscriminately extending God's image both to the body and to the soul, mingles heaven and earth. He says that Father, Son, and Holy Spirit place their image in man, because however upright Adam might have remained, yet Christ would have to become man. Thus, according to them, the body that was destined for Christ was the exemplar and type of that corporeal figure which was then formed. But where will he find that Christ is the image of the Spirit? I admit that in the person of the Mediator the glory of the whole divinity surely shines, but how will the Eternal Word be called the image of the Spirit, whom he precedes in order? In short, the distinction between Son and Spirit is overthrown if the latter calls the former the image of himself. Furthermore, I should like to know from him how in the flesh that he took upon himself Christ resembles the Holy Spirit, and by what marks or lineaments he expresses his likeness. And since that saying, "Let us make man," etc. [Gen. 1:26], is common also to the person of the Son, it would follow that he is the image of himself. This is repugnant to all reason. Besides this, if Osiander's fabrication is accepted, man was formed only after the type and exemplar of Christ as man; and thus the pattern from which Adam was taken was Christ in so far as he was to be clothed with flesh. But Scripture teaches in a far other sense that he was created in God's image. There is more color to the cleverness of those who explain that Adam was created in God's image because he conformed to Christ, who is the sole image of God; but in that, also, there is nothing sound.

# Gen. 1:26-27

關於「形像」與「樣式」兩者之間,一般注釋家以為有差別,因此發生不少的爭議,其實這兩個名詞當中並沒有什麼區別;「樣式」一詞,不過是用補充說明「形像」而已。第一,我們知道希伯來人有重複的習慣,常把一宗事複述兩次。其次是關於事的本身,無疑的,人之被稱為上帝的形像,是因為他的樣式與上帝相似。因此,那些藉批評這兩個名詞,以表示自己聰明的人,不管他們以「形像」指靈魂的本質也好,或者有其他的解釋也好,總之都是笑話。因為「上帝定意照自己的形像造人」這句話有些含糊,於是有另外的一句話加上——「按著我們的樣式」,藉以說明同一個意見;仿佛他說,祂將要造人,在人的裏面,祂將以和祂自己相似的性格,印入人心。所以摩西在下一節也引用「上帝的形像」,敍述同一事實,但這一次沒有說到祂的「樣式。」

Then God said, "Let us make man in our image, in our likeness, and let them rule over the fish of the sea and the birds of the air, over the livestock, over all the earth, [b] and over all the creatures that move along the ground."

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>27</sup> So God created man in his own image, in the image of God he created him; male and female he created them.

阿西安得爾的反對是沒有價值的。他說,所謂上帝的形像不是指人的一部份, 或是靈魂及其智慧, 乃是指由亞當所從出的地而得名的整個亞當; 我敢說每一個有 理智的讀者,都要認為這是沒有根據的說法。因為當整個人被稱為必死的,並不就 等於說靈魂亦歸於死亡之下;從另一方面說,人被稱為理性動物,並不是說,理智 與智力因此屬於肉體。所以靈魂雖然不是整個的人,但說人是上帝的形像若是指著 靈魂而言,並非錯誤。不過我還是保留我所立下的原則,所謂上帝的形像,是指人 性超過所有其它動物的一切其它優點而言。這個名詞,是指亞當在墮落以前具有 的完整品性: 這就是說, 他有正當的智力, 有理性所控制的情感, 和其它一切管 理得宜的官感,並因天性上所有這些優點,是和他的創造者的優點相類似。雖然上 帝的形像,主要的還是在思想和心靈上,或在靈魂和靈魂的智慧上,然而人身無論 那一部份,多少都蒙上帝的榮光所被;上帝的榮光當然在世界的每一部份都很顯 著;因此我們可以斷定,《聖經》上所說上帝的形像顯在人身上,這是暗指一個對 比,就是把人提高到一切動物之上,仿佛把他和獸群分開。天使也是照上帝的形像 所造,這是不容否認的,因為按照基督所說,我們最高的完全,是要和他們一樣 (參太 22: 30)。然而摩西以上帝形像這特殊的標記,來頌揚上帝對我們的恩 惠,不是沒有意義的,特別因為他只把人和有形的受造之物相比較。

太 22: 30

30 當復活的時候,人也不娶也不嫁,乃像天上的使者一樣。

Also, there is no slight quarrel over "image" and "likeness" when interpreters seek a nonexistent difference between these two words, except that "likeness" has been added by way of explanation. First, we know that repetitions were common among the Hebrews, in which they express one thing twice; then in the thing itself there is no ambiguity, simply man is called God's image because he is like God. Accordingly, those who thus philosophize more subtly over these terms appear to be ridiculous: they either apply zelem, that is, image, to the substance of the soul, and demuth, that is, likeness, to its qualities; or they adduce something different. For, when God determined to create man in his image, which was a rather obscure expression, he for explanation repeats it in this phrase, "According to his likeness," as if he were saying that he was going to make man, in whom he would represent himself as in an image, by means of engraved marks of likeness. Therefore Moses, a little after, reciting the same thing, repeats "image of God" twice, without mentioning "likeness." Osiander's objection is trivial, that not a part of man – say, the soul with its endowments – is called God's image, but the whole Adam, whose name was given him from the earth whence he was taken. Trivial, I say, all readers of sound mind will deem it. For, while the whole man is called mortal, the soul is not thereby subjected to death; nor does reason or intelligence belong to the body merely because man is called a "rational animal." Therefore, although the soul is not man, yet it is not absurd for man, in respect to his soul, to be called God's image; even though I retain the principle I just now set forward, that the likeness of God extends to the whole excellence by which man's nature towers over all the kinds of living creatures. Accordingly, the integrity with which Adam was endowed is expressed by this wrd, when he had full possession of right understanding, when he had his affections kept within the bounds of reason, all his senses tempered in right order, and he truly referred his excellence to exceptional gifts bestowed upon him by his Maker. And although the primary seat of the divine image was in the mind and heart, or in the soul and its powers, yet there was no part of man, not even the body itself, in which some sparks did not glow. It is sure that even in the several parts of the world some traces of God's glory shine. From this we may gather that when his image is placed in man a tacit antithesis is introduced which raises man above all other creatures and, as it were, separates him from the common mass. And indeed, we ought not to deny that angels were created according to God's likeness, inasmuch as our highest perfection, as Christ testifies, will be to become like them [Matt. 22:30]. But by this particular title Moses right commends God's grace toward us, especially when he compares only the visible creatures with man.

# Matt. 22:30

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>30</sup> At the resurrection people will neither marry nor be given in marriage; they will be like the angels in heaven.

# 1.15.4 上帝的形像的真相:從《聖經》教導,上帝的形像在基 督惠更新的教義

# THE TRUE NATURE OF THE IMAGE OF GOD IS TO BE DERIVED FROM WHAT SCRIPTURE SAYS OF ITS RENEWAL THROUGH CHRIST 1.15.4

可是, 這形像至今好像還沒有一個完全的定義: 不過在指出人智慧的優點, 和 在什麼方面,人可以看做上帝的光榮的照鏡,就可以把這名稱解釋得更清楚些。這 只能從腐敗人性的補救中,才可以看到。無疑地,亞當因為從他的尊嚴中墮落,所 以和上帝疏遠。我們雖然承認在他裏面的上帝形像沒有完全消滅,但因腐化過甚, 所餘下的,也只有可怕的醜相了。所以,我們的拯救和復原的開始,非借重基督不 可;為著這個原因,祂被稱為第二亞當,因為祂使我們回復到真實與完全的正 直。保羅雖以信徒從基督所得使人活的靈,和亞當在創造時「成了有靈的活人」 (林前 15: 45) 相比,來頌揚那在重生中所表現恩典的程度,優於在創造中表明 的程度,但他對另一要點並沒有反對,以為重生的目的,就是基督要按照上帝的形 像,再造我們。所以他在別的地方又告訴我們:「新人在知識上漸漸更新,正如造 他之主的形像 | (西 3: 10)。這話和下面一節相符合:「穿上新人,這新人是照 著上帝的形像造的,有真理的仁義和聖潔。」(弗4:24)。

# 林前 15:45

45 並且明顯我們是為上帝妄作見證的,因我們見證上帝是叫基督復活了。若死人真 不復活,上帝也就沒有叫基督復活了。

西 3: 10

<sup>10</sup> 穿上了新人。這新人在知識上漸漸更新,正如造他主的形像。

弗 4: 24

24 並且穿上新人; 這新人是照著上帝的形像造的, 有真理的仁義和聖潔。

Nevertheless, it seems that we do not have a full definition of "image" if we do not see more plainly those faculties in which man excels, and in which he ought to be thought the reflection of God's glory. That, indeed, can be nowhere better recognized than from the restoration of his corrupted nature. There is no doubt that Adam, when he fell from his state, was by this defection alienated from God. Therefore, even though we grant that God's image was not totally annihilated and destroyed in him, yet it was so corrupted that whatever remains is frightful deformity. Consequently, the beginning of our recovery of salvation is in that restoration which we obtain through *Christ*, who also is called the Second Adam for the reason that he restores us to true and complete integrity. For even though Paul, contrasting the life-giving spirit that the believers receive from Christ with the living soul in which Adam was created [I Cor. 15:45], commends the richer measure of grace in regeneration, yet he does not remove that other principal point, that the end of regeneration is that Christ should reform us to God's image. Therefore elsewhere he teaches that "the new man is renewed ... according to the image of his Creator" [Col. 3:10 p.]. With this agrees the saying, "Put on the new man, who has been created according to God" [Eph. 4:24, Vg.].

# I Cor. 15:45

<sup>45</sup> So it is written: "The first man Adam became a living being" [e]; the last Adam, a lifegiving spirit.

# Col. 3:10

<sup>10</sup> and have put on the new self, which is being renewed in knowledge in the image of its Creator.

# Eph. 4:24

and to put on the new self, created to be like God in true righteousness and holiness.

試問保羅所說的這個**革新**包含些什麼?**首先他說知識,其次是誠實的仁義和聖潔**;於是我們可以推論,最初上帝的形像,最是顯著在心靈的亮光中,在心底的公正中,和在我們天性各部份的健全中。雖然我承認那說明的方式是一種「提喻法」,即以一部代全體;但在上帝形像革新中佔首要地位的,必與在最初創造中佔首要地位的相同,這是一個不能推翻的原則。使徒在別的經文所指的和這相同,他說:「我們眾人既然敞著臉,得以看見基督的榮光,就變成同樣的形像」(林後3:18)。我們現在知道,基督所具的是上帝最完全的形像,我們按照上帝的形像恢復以後,就在真實的虔敬,仁義,純潔,和理解上有上帝形像,

# 林後3:18

<sup>18</sup> 我們眾人既然敞著臉得以看見主的榮光,好像從鏡子裏返照,就變成主的形狀,榮上加榮,如同從主的靈變成的。

Now we are to see what Paul chiefly comprehends under this renewal. In the first place he posits knowledge, then pure righteousness and holiness. From this we infer that, to begin with, God's image was visible in the light of the mind, in the upright of the heart, and in the soundness of all the parts. For although I confess that these forms of speaking are synecdoches, yet this principle cannot be overthrown, that what was primary in the renewing of God's image also held the highest place in the creation itself. To the same pertains what he teaches elsewhere, that "we ... with unveiled face beholding the glory of Christ are being transformed into his very image" [II Cor. 3:18]. Now we see how Christ is the most perfect image of God; if we are conformed to it, we are so restored that with true piety, righteousness, purity, and intelligence we bear God's image.

II Cor. 3:18

<sup>18</sup> And we, who with unveiled faces all reflect<sup>[a]</sup> the Lord's glory, are being transformed into his likeness with ever-increasing glory, which comes from the Lord, who is the Spirit.

這個立場一經確定,阿西安得爾關於肉體形像的想像,就會立刻消失。保羅稱男子為「上帝的形像和榮光」(林前 11: 7),不讓女人有同等的尊榮那一節,照上下文看起來,是限於政治上的隸屬而言。可是所說的形像是關於精上帝的,和永恆的生命,這意見現在已經充份證明了。約翰也證實了這一點,他說在上帝永恆之道中的生命,就是人的光(參約 1: 4)他意在稱頌上帝非常的恩惠,因為上帝把人的地位提高,超乎其它一切動物之上;將人與普通萬物分別,因為他所達到的不是庸俗的生命,乃是一種與智慧和理性的亮光相連的生命;約翰同時也表示人是怎樣照上帝的形像造的。所以上帝的形像是尚未變壞的優美人性,就是亞當在叛道以前所有的人性,可是以後趨於極端腐化,幾乎是上述性質都消滅了,所遺留的都是糊塗混亂,支離破碎,和污穢不堪的;這形像現在在選民當中還可以看出多少,

# 因為他們藉著聖靈重生,不過要等他們到天上以後才能顯出充分的榮光。

When this has been established, Osiander's fancy concerning the shape of the body readily vanishes of itself. But the statement in which man alone is called by Paul "the image and glory of God" [I Cor. 11:7, Vg.] and woman excluded from this place of honor is clearly to be restricted, as the context shows, to the political order. Yet I now consider it sufficiently proved that whatever has to do with spiritual and eternal life is included under "image," mention of which has been made. John confirms this same point in other words, declaring that "the life" which was from the beginning in God's Eternal Word "was the light of men" [John 1:4]. It was his intent to praise God's singular grace, wherein man excels the remaining living creatures, in order to separate him from the multitude because he attained no common life, but one joined with the light of understanding. Accordingly, he shows at the same time how man was created in God's image. Now God's image is the perfect excellence of human nature which shone in Adam before his defection, but was subsequently so vitiated and almost blotted out that nothing remains after the ruin except what is confused, mutilated, and disease-ridden. Therefore in some part it now is manifest in the elect, in so far as they have been reborn in the spirit; but it will attain its full splendor in heaven.

我們為要知道這**形像**的詳細,必須研究靈魂的智慧。奧古斯丁以為靈魂是三位一體的明鏡,因它包含知識、意志、和記憶,他這種推考,並不可靠。還有人以為人之有上帝的形像是在於上帝所賦予人的主權之內,這也是不可能的,因為這無異是說,人之類似上帝,是因為他是萬物的繼承人和所有人;其實這形像只能求諸人的內心,而不能求諸外表;**它是靈魂內在的優美**。

Yet in order that we may know of what parts this image consists, it is of value to discuss the faculties of the soul. For that speculation of Augustine, that the soul is the reflection of the Trinity because in it reside the understanding, will, and memory, is by no means sound. Nor is there any probability in the opinion of those who locate God's

likeness in the dominion given to man, as if in this mark alone he resembled God, that he was established as heir and possessor of all things; whereas God's image is properly to be sought within him, not outside him, indeed, it is an inner good of the soul.

# 1.15.6 靈魂與它的官能

# THE SOUL AND ITS FACULTIES 1.15.6

從異教的哲學家中尋找對靈魂的定義,是愚笨不過的事;在他們當中,柏拉圖幾乎是唯一明認靈魂為不朽實體的人。其他如蘇格拉底的門人,對此亦有所提及,但存很大懷疑;沒有人能夠明確地闡述一種為自己所不信的道理。所以柏拉圖的意見比較正確,因為他認為上帝的形像是在靈魂裏面。其他各派,都把靈魂的技能和智慧,限於今世的生命,甚至於除去肉體以外,就不剩下什麼了。

It would be foolish to seek a definition of "soul" from the philosophers. Of them hardly one, except Plato, has rightly affirmed its immortal substance. Indeed, other Socratics also touch upon it, but in a way that shows how nobody teaches clearly a thing of which he has not been persuaded. Hence Plato's opinion is more correct, because he considers the image of God in the soul. Others so attach the soul's powers and faculties to the present life that they leave nothing to it outside the body.

但以前我們根據《聖經》說過,**靈魂是無形的本質**,現在又要附帶的說明;嚴格來說,它雖然不是在一個固定的地方,**然而它是以肉體為寓所,不但使身體各部份有生氣,使各部份互相配合協調,運用得宜,而且是管理整個生命的主腦;不但關懷塵世的生命,且亦激發人敬拜上帝。**不過最後這一點在墮落的情況中不甚顯著,但在我們的邪惡當中,仍然留有某些痕跡。人類若不是因為有羞惡之心,怎會顧念到自己的名譽呢?若非因敬重道德,怎能有羞惡之心呢?這種心情的主因在乎他們明瞭人為培養仁義而生;在仁義中已包含著宗教的種子。人為要希望達到天上的生活才被創造,這既然是無可爭論的事,所以那生活的知識,必定是已經印入靈魂中了。(其實人若不知道這幸福的可能,就等於是缺少了他的知能的最主要使用;這幸福的成全在乎與上帝合一)。因此,靈魂的主要運用是追求這個幸福。所以一個人越努力求與上帝親近,越足以證明他是一個理性的動物。

Indeed, from Scripture we have already taught that the soul is an incorporeal substance; now we must add that, although properly it is not spatially limited, still, set in the body, it dwells there as in a house; not only that it may animate all its parts and render its organs fit and useful for their actions, but also that it may hold the first place in ruling man's life, not alone with respect to the duties of his earthly life, but at the same time to arouse him to honor God. Even though in man's corruption this last point is not clearly perceived, yet some vestige remains imprinted in his very vices. For whence comes such concern to men about their good name but from shame? And whence comes shame but from regard for what is honorable? The beginning and cause of this is that they understand themselves to have been born to cultivate righteousness, in which the seed of religion is enclosed. But, without controversy, just as man was made for meditation upon the heavenly life, so it is certain that the knowledge of it was engraved upon his soul. And if human happiness, whose perfection it is to be united with God, were hidden from man, he would in fact be bereft of the principal use of his understanding. Thus, also, the chief activity of the soul is aspire thither. Hence the

more anyone endeavors to approach to God, the more he proves himself endowed with reason.

有些人以為一個人不只有一個靈魂,他有一個感官的靈魂,還有一個理性的靈魂;雖然他們所引證的似乎有理,但他們的論據毫不可靠。若我們自己不願為無價值的事所苦惱,我們就不得不拒絕這種主張。他們說靈魂中的理性部份與器官的動作之間,有很大的矛盾。其實理性本身也不是一致的,它的一些忠告,和它另外的一些忠告往往彼此衝突,如敵對的軍隊一般,但這種混亂是出於天性的墮落,所以不能因為智慧彼此的不協調,就說有兩個靈魂。

We ought to repudiate those persons who would affirm more than one soul in man, that is, a sensitive and a rational soul, because there is nothing firm in their reasonings, even though they seem to be asserting something probable, unless we want to torture ourselves in trivial and useless matters. They say that there is great disagreement between organic motions and the soul's rational part. As if reason itself did not also disagree with itself and were not at cross-purposes with itself, just like armies at war. But since this disturbance arises out of depravity of nature, it is wrong to conclude from this that there are two souls, just because the faculties do not agree among themselves in befitting proportion.

關於智慧的討論,我都讓給哲學家好啦,為虔敬的成就,有一個簡單的定義就夠了。其實我承認他們所教的是真實的,不但饒有興味,而且有用,這也是他們所通曉的題目;我也不禁止那些願意學習的人向他們學習。首先我承認有五種官感,即柏拉圖所稱的感官,藉著它們,一切物體進入於共同的感覺,如同進入共同的倉庫一般;其次有想像,辨別共同的感覺所認識的事物;再其次有理性,一般的判斷屬之;最後有心,對理性所考慮的事物,再加以冷靜的沉思。心(mens),理性(ratio),想像(phantasia)是靈魂的三種智能,這三種智能,相當於三種慾望:意,它的功能是選擇心和理性所提供的事實;情,它的功能是包括理性和想像所提供的事物。

But I leave it to the philosophers to discuss these faculties in their subtle way. For the upbuilding of godliness a simple definition will be enough for us. I, indeed, agree that the things thy teach are true, not only enjoyable, but also profitable to learn, and skillfully assembled by them. And I do not forbid those who are desirous of learning to study them. Therefore I admit in the first place that there are five senses, which Plato preferred to call organs, by which all objects are presented to common sense, as a sort of receptacle. (Plato, *Theaetetus* 184 D (LCL Plato II. 156 f.).) There follows fantasy, which distinguishes those things which have been apprehended by common sense; then reason, which embraces universal judgment; finally understanding, which in intent and quiet study contemplates what reason discursively ponders. Similarly, to understanding, reason, and fantasy (the three cognitive faculties of the soul) correspond three appetitive faculties: will, whose functions consist in striving after what understanding and reason present; the capacity for anger, which seizes upon what is offered to it by reason and fantasy; the capacity to desire inordinately, which apprehends what is set before it by fantasy and sense.

雖然這些事是實在的,或至少是可能的,但恐怕它們非但不能幫助我們,且將使我們轉入曖昧的漩渦,所以我想應該把它們略去。如果有人要把靈魂的能力,作不同的區分,以為有一種是慾望,它服從理性,卻本身不是理性;另一種是知識,知識是理性的一部份,我對這種區分不會十分反對。我對亞裏斯多德的意見,也不願加以攻擊,他以為活動的原則有三:即感覺、知識、和慾望。

Although these things are true, or at least are probable, yet since I fear that they may involve us in their own obscurity rather than help us, I think they ought to be passed over. I shall not strongly oppose anyone who wants to classify the powers of the soul in some other way: to call on appetitive, which, even though without reason, if directed elsewhere, yet obeys reason, to call the other intellective, which is through itself participant in reason. Nor would I refute the view that there are three principles of action: sense, understanding, appetite.

但讓我們選擇一種區別,是人人都能懂得的,這區別不是在哲學家中所能找出來的。當他們要以最簡單的方式敍述的時候,他們就把靈魂分為慾望與知識,而這二者又有兩面。他們說後者有時候是冥想的,僅以知識為滿足,沒有行為的傾向,西色柔稱它為「內在的品質」(ingenium);有時候是實際的,而影響到意志,或行善,或行惡。這種區分,是以公正和合乎道德的方式,包含生命的知識。他們又把慾望區分為意志與情慾;凡服從理智的慾望就稱為「意志」;如一旦脫離理智的管制,慾望就成為放縱,於是稱它為「情慾」。因此他們推想,一個人常有充份的理由,足以控制自己。

But let us rather choose *a division within the capacity of all*, which cannot be successfully sought from the philosophers. For they, while they want to speak with utter simplicity, divide the soul in to appetite and understanding, but make both double. They say the latter is sometimes contemplative because, content with knowledge alone, it has no active motion (a thing that Cicero thought to be designated by the term "genius"); sometimes practical because by the apprehension of good or evil it variously moves the will. In this division is included the knowledge of how to live well and justly. The former part (I mean the appetitive) they also divide, into will and concupiscence; and as often as appetite, which they call boulesis ( $\beta o \nu \lambda \eta \sigma \iota \sigma$ ), obeys reason, it is horme ( $o \rho \mu \eta$ ); but it becomes pathos ( $\pi \alpha \theta \sigma \sigma$ ) when the appetite, having thrown off the yoke of reason, rushes off to intemperance. Thus they always imagine reason in man as that faculty whereby he may govern himself aright

# 1.16.1 卷一 第十六章: 上帝以祂的權能保存並支持宇宙,又按祂的旨意統治宇宙的一切創造與護理不可分開

# Chapter XVI - GOD BY HIS POWER NOURISHES AND MAINTAINS THE WORLD CREATED BY HIM, AND RULES ITS SEVERAL PARTS BY HIS PROVIDENCE: CREATION AND PROVIDENCE INSEPARABLY JOINED 1.16.1

把上帝當作一時的創造主,以為祂在片刻間就完成了一切的工作,這種看法沒有多大的意義。在這裏我們應該和異教徒特別不同,好叫上帝權能,在宇宙間永久的向我們顯現,如同在最初創造的時候一樣。甚至不信的人,只要一想到天地,也不能不想到一位造物的主宰。可是信心本身有特別的方法,可把一切創造的讚美,都歸於上帝。使徒說過:唯獨「我們憑著信,知道諸世界是憑上帝的話所造的」(來 11: 3),這種講法有同樣的意思。除非我們本乎祂的天命,否則不論我們似乎在思想上認識,在口頭上承認,我們對「上帝是造物的主宰」一語的意義,總不能有正確的觀念。肉體的感覺,當一旦在創造中看到了上帝的權能,立即停止;它所能達到的最深之處,也不過考慮到創造者在造物中的智慧、權能、和良善;這些,即令是那些不願瞭解的人,也是不得不承認的。其次,肉體的感覺對上帝怎樣在保存這世界,並以動力統治這個世界的運行,亦能有所瞭解。最後它以為上帝在當初所賦予萬物的生機,足以支持它們以後的生存。

Moreover, to make God a momentary Creator, who once for all finished his work, would be cold and barren, and we must differ from profane men especially in that we see the presence of divine power shining as much in the continuing state of the universe as in its inception. For even though the minds of the impious too are compelled by merely looking upon earth and heaven to rise up to the Creator, yet faith has its own peculiar way of assigning the whole credit for Creation to God. To this pertains that saying of the apostle's to which we have referred before, that only "by faith we understand that the universe was created by the word of God" [Heb. 11:3]. For unless we pass on to his *providence* – however we may seem both to comprehend with the mind and to confess with the tongue - we do not yet properly grasp what it means to say: "God is Creator." Carnal sense, once confronted with the power of God in the very Creation, stops there, and at most weighs and contemplates only the wisdom, power, and goodness of the author in accomplishing such handiwork. (These matters are self-evident, and even force themselves upon the unwilling.) It contemplates, moreover, some general preserving and governing activity, from which the force of motion derives. In short, carnal sense thinks there is an energy divinely bestowed from the beginning, sufficient to sustain all things.

但信仰更能深入一層, 既然知道上帝是萬物的創造者, 就應當立時相信祂也就是 世界萬物永遠的主宰和保存者, 祂支持, 養活祂所創造的萬物, 不是憑一種普通的 運動, 以操縱整個宇宙的機構, 和它的各部份, 乃是由於特殊的天命。大衛述說上

帝創造宇宙以後,立刻提到祂繼續不息的天命,說:「諸天藉主的命而造,萬象藉 祂口中的氣而成」(詩 33:6);他以後又加上一句「主看見一切的世人」(詩 33:13)。如果不相信上帝是宇宙的創造者,就不會相信祂關心人的事;而沒有一 個相信上帝創造了世界的人,會不相信祂關懷祂自己的工作; 所以大衛以最好的次 序引導我們,由此及彼,不是沒有理由的。大體說來,哲學家們和一般人的見解, 都以為宇宙的一切是由上帝奧秘的靈感所鼓舞。但他們遠不如大衛所說的透徹,而 一切虔敬的人,都相信他所說的:「這都仰望你,按時給他食物。你給他們,他們 便拾起來: 祢張手, 他們飽得美食: 祢掩面, 他們便驚惶: 祢收回他們的氣, 他們 就死亡歸於塵土。祢發出祢的靈,他們便受造;祢使地面更換為新」(詩 107: 27-30)。他們雖贊同保羅的意見「我們生活、動作、存留,都在乎上帝」(徒 17:28),但他們和使徒所歌頌上帝恩的意義,相距甚遠;因為他們對上帝特別的 照顧並不瞭解,這個「照顧|即是祂的父愛的表現。

# 馬 10: 29

<sup>29</sup> 兩個麻雀不是賣一分銀子嗎?若是你們的父不許,一個也不能掉在地上;

# 詩 32: 6

6 我向祢陳明我的罪,不隱瞞我的惡。我說:我要向耶和華承認我的過犯,祢就 赦免我的罪惡。(細拉)

# 詩 33: 6, 13-14

- 6 諸天藉耶和華的命而造;萬象藉他口中的氣而成。
- 13 耶和華從天上觀看: 祂看見一切的世人。
- 14 從祂的居所往外察看地上一切的居民—

# 詩 107: 27-30

- 27 這都仰望你按時給他食物。
- 28 祢給他們,他們便拾起來;祢張手,他們飽得美食。
- <sup>29</sup> 祢掩面,他們便驚惶; 祢收回他們的氣,他們就死亡,歸於塵土。
- ◎ 祢發出祢的靈,他們便受造;祢使地面更換為新。

# 徒 17: 28

28 我們生活、動作、存留,都在乎祂。就如你們作詩的,有人說:我們也是祂所生 的。

But faith ought to penetrate more deeply, namely, having found him Creator of all, forthwith to conclude he is also everlasting Governor and Preserver – not only in that he drives the celestial frame as well as its several parts by a universal motion, but also in that he sustains, nourishes, and cares for, everything he has made, even to the least sparrow [cf. Matt. 10:29]. Thus David, having briefly stated that the universe was created by God, immediately descends to the uninterrupted course of His providence, "By the word of Jehovah the heavens were made, and all their host by the breath of his mouth" [Ps. 33:6; cf. Ps. 32:6, Vg.]. Soon thereafter he adds. "Jehovah has looked down upon the sons of men" [Ps. 33:13], and what follows is in the same vein. For although all men do not reason so clearly, yet, because it would not be believable that human affairs are cared for by God unless he were the Maker of the universe, and nobody seriously believes the universe was made by God without being persuaded that he takes care of his works, David not inappropriately leads us in the best order from the one to the other. In general, philosophers teach and human minds conceive that all parts of the universe are quickened by God's secret inspiration. Yet they do not reach as far as David is carried, bearing with him all the godly, when he says: "These all look to thee, to give them their food in due season; when thou givest to them, they gather it up; when thou openest thy hand, they are filled with good things; when thou hidest thy face, they are dismayed; when thou takes away their breath, they die and return to the earth. If thou sendest forth thy spirit again, they are created, and thou renewest the face of the earth" [Ps. 104:27-30 p.]. Indeed, although they subscribe to Paul's statement that we have our being and move and live in God [Acts 17:28], yet they are far from that earnest feeling of grace which he commends, because they do not at all taste God's special care, by which alone his fatherly favor is known.

# Matt. 10:29

Are not two sparrows sold for a penny [d]? Yet not one of them will fall to the ground apart from the will of your Father.

# Ps. 33:6, 13, 14

- <sup>6</sup> By the word of the LORD were the heavens made, their starry host by the breath of his mouth.
- <sup>13</sup> From heaven the LORD looks down and sees all mankind;
- 14 from his dwelling place he watches all who live on earth-

# Ps. 32:6

Therefore let everyone who is godly pray to you while you may be found; surely when the mighty waters rise, they will not reach him.

# Ps. 104:27-30

- <sup>27</sup> These all look to you to give them their food at the proper time.
- When you give it to them, they gather it up; when you open your hand, they are satisfied with good things.
- <sup>29</sup> When you hide your face, they are terrified; when you take away their breath, they die and return to the dust.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>30</sup> When you send your Spirit, they are created, and you renew the face of the earth.

Acts 17:28
<sup>28</sup> 'For in him we live and move and have our being.' As some of your own poets have said, 'We are his offspring.'

# 1.16.2 沒有命運,沒有偶然的事

# THERE IS NO SUCH THING AS FORTUNE OR CHANCE

1.16.2

為求這種區別的更明確表現,*就當知道《聖經》上所講天命,和幸運或偶然之事,是相反的。*在各時代(今日亦然),一般的共同見解都認為一切事物的發生是偶然的,因這一錯誤的觀念,以致關於天道正確的意見,幾乎煙沒無存。如果有人為強盜劫持,或遇猛獸;或在海洋中遇風覆舟;或因房屋樹木的傾倒而喪生;另外有人或迷途沙漠,絕處逢生,或從驚濤駭浪中,遇救抵岸,按照一般屬世的見解,都要將這一切幸與不幸的遭遇,歸於命運。但凡受過基督薰陶的人,知道「他的頭髮也都被數過了」(太 10: 30),必然對一切遭遇,另找原因,並斷言*萬事都是由上帝奧秘的旨意所統治的。*至於*無生命之物,*雖具有特殊的屬性,但它們所行使的權力,*亦無一不在上帝的掌握之中。所以他們都是上帝的工具,上帝按照自己的旨意,喜歡賦予它們多少效能,就叫它們按照祂的旨意活動。* 

太 10:30

30 就是你們的頭髮也都被數過了。

That this difference may better appear, we must know that God's providence, as it is taught in Scripture, is opposed to fortune and fortuitous happenings. Now it has been commonly accepted in all ages, and almost all mortals hold the same opinion today, that all things come about through chance. What we ought to believe concerning providence is by this deprayed opinion most certainly not only beclouded, but also buried. Suppose a man falls among thieves, or wild beasts; is shipwrecked at sea by a sudden gale; is killed by a falling house or tree. Suppose another man wandering through the desert finds help in his straits; having been tossed by the waves, reaches harbor; miraculously escapes death by a finger's breadth. Carnal reason ascribes all such happenings, whether prosperous or adverse, to fortune. But anyone who has been taught by Christ's lips that all the hairs of his head are numbered [Matt. 10:30] will look farther afield for a cause, and will consider that all events are governed by God's secret plan. And concerning inanimate objects we ought to hold that, although each one has by nature been endowed with its own property, yet it does not exercise its own power except in so far as it is directed by God's ever-present hand. These are, thus, nothing but instruments to which God continually imparts as much effectiveness as he wills, and according to his own purpose bends and turns them to either one action or another. Matt. 10:30

<sup>30</sup> And even the very hairs of your head are all numbered.

在一切被造之物中,沒有一件東西的能力,比太陽的更奇特顯著了。它除了以陽光普照世界以外,又以它的熱,養活各種動物;以它的光線,使地生養眾多;使種子受熱而開花;遍地綠草如茵,樹木向榮,由開花而結果!可是,上帝為自己保

留一切的稱讚,所以在創造太陽以前,特意叫光存在,又使地充滿各種草木和果實。一個誠實的人不會把太陽看作是那些在太陽被造以前即以存在的東西的主要原因,只看它為上帝隨意所使用的工具。若沒有太陽的話,上帝的行動並不因此增加困難。我們讀過《聖經》,知道因為約書亞的祈禱,太陽在一個地方停留了兩天(參書 10: 13)為希西家王的緣故,太陽的影子,向後退了十度(參王下 20: 11)。上帝藉這些異跡,鄭重聲明,太陽每日的出落,不是自然界盲目的運行,乃是祂自己所控制的,使我們重新想到祂的父愛。冬去春來,春歸夏至,夏完秋繼,宇宙間沒有什麼比四季迴圈更自然的了。但在這個順序中,有很大的差別,可見每一年,每一月,和每一日,都是在上帝的新而特殊之旨意的管治下。

# 創1:3,11,14

- <sup>3</sup> 上帝說:要有光,就有了光。
- <sup>11</sup> 上帝說: 地要發生青草和結種子的菜蔬,並結果子的樹木,各從其類,果子都包 著核。事就這樣成了。
- 14 上帝說:天上要有光體,可以分晝夜,作記號,定節令、日子、年歲,

# 書 10:3

<sup>3</sup> 於是日頭停留,月亮止住,直等國民向敵人報仇。這事豈不是寫在雅煞珥書上 嗎?日頭在天當中停住,不急速下落,約有一日之久。

# 王下 20: 11

<sup>11</sup> 先知以賽亞求告耶和華, 耶和華就使亞哈斯的日晷向前進的日影, 往後退了十度。

# 賽 38: 8

<sup>8</sup> 就是叫亞哈斯的日晷,向前進的日影往後退十度。於是,前進的日影果然在日 晷上往後退了十度。

No creature has a force more wondrous or glorious than that of the sun. For besides lighting the whole earth with its brightness, how great a thing is it that by its heat it nourishes and quickens all living things! That with its rays it breathes fruitfulness into the earth! That it warms the seeds in the bosom of the earth, draws them forth with budding greenness, increases and strengthens them, nourishes them anew, until they rise up into stalks! That it feeds the plant with continual warmth, until it grows into flower, and from flower into fruit! That then, also, with baking heat it brings the fruit to maturity! That in like manner trees and vines warmed by the sun first put forth buds and leaves, then put forth a flower, and from the flower produce fruit! Yet the Lord, to claim the whole credit for all these things, willed that, before he created the sun, light should come to be and earth be filled with all manner of herbs and fruits [Gen. 1:3, 11, 14]. Therefore a godly man will not make the sun either the principal or the necessary cause of these things which existed before the creation of the sun, but merely the instrument that God uses because he so wills; for which no more difficulty he might abandon it, and act through himself. Then when we read that at Joshua's prayers the sun stood still in one

degree for two days [Josh. 10:13], and that its shadow went back ten degrees for the sake of King Hezekiah [II Kings 20:11 or Isa. 38:8], God has witnessed by those few miracles that the sun does not daily rise and set by a blind instinct of nature but that he himself, to renew our remembrance of his fatherly favor toward us, governs its course. Nothing is more natural than for spring to follow winter; summer, spring; and fall, summer – each in turn. Yet in this series one sees such great and uneven diversity that it readily appears each year, month, and day is governed by a new, a special, providence of God.

# Gen. 1:3, 11, 14

- <sup>3</sup> And God said, "Let there be light," and there was light.
- <sup>13</sup> And there was evening, and there was morning—the third day.
- And God said, "Let there be lights in the expanse of the sky to separate the day from the night, and let them serve as signs to mark seasons and days and years,

# Josh. 10:13

So the sun stood still, and the moon stopped, till the nation avenged itself on bits enemies, as it is written in the Book of Jashar. The sun stopped in the middle of the sky and delayed going down about a full day.

# II Kings 20:11

Then the prophet Isaiah called upon the LORD, and the LORD made the shadow go back the ten steps it had gone down on the stairway of Ahaz.

# Isa. 38:8

I will make the shadow cast by the sun go back the ten steps it has gone down on the stairway of Ahaz.' "So the sunlight went back the ten steps it had gone down.

# 1.16.4 護理的本質 THE NATURE OF PROVIDENCE 1.16.4

讀者應該知道,*所謂天命,*不是指上帝高居天上,清閒自在地注視著下面人 間所發生的故事, *乃是說上帝掌握了宇宙的樞紐,統治一切。*所以祂以手統治, 不下於以眼觀看。亞伯拉罕對他的兒子說:「上帝必須自己預備」(創 22: 8), 亞伯拉罕不只是說上帝預知未來的事,而且把他自己所不知道的事都付託於那位常 常排除困惑和紛亂的上帝。這即是說, *天命與行動不能分離*;因為空談預知是沒 有什麼價值的,而且近於胡鬧。有些人把一種混雜的統治歸於上帝,承認上帝以普 遍的動力,轉動宇宙各部的機構,但不單獨支配每一個受造者的行動,這雖不算是 很大的錯誤,亦是不能容忍的。因為他們認為這所謂普遍天命,既不妨礙一切被造 物之偶然的被推動,亦不妨礙人按自由的意志選擇。他們在上帝人中間,劃出這樣 的一條鴻溝: **上帝以祂的權能,叫人依照他們稟賦的天性傾向而行,**但人卻以自 己行動的選擇,管理自己的行動。(\*\*重譯: *但祂卻以祂旨意的計劃管理祂自己* **的作為。**)總之,我們認為世界,人事,和人自己,都受上帝權能所普遍地統治 著,但卻不是經過祂的個別的安排。我所說的並不是指以彼古羅派,這一派人時常 擾害世界, 夢想上帝為好逸偷閒的; 還有一班人, 犯同樣大的錯誤, 他們以前詭稱 上帝的統治只及於太空的中層,而將下層的事物歸之於命運,這些人我也不必說, 因為那不能言語的生物,已足夠反對那明顯的愚笨。

創 22:8

8 亞伯拉罕說:我兒,上帝必自己預備作燔祭的羊羔。於是二人同行。

At the outset, then, let my readers grasp that providence means not that by which God idly observes from heaven what takes place on earth, but that by which, as keeper of the keys, he governs all events. Thus it pertains no less to his hands than to his eyes. And indeed, when Abraham said to his son, "God will provide" [Gen. 22:8], he meant not only to assert God's foreknowledge of a future event, but to cast the care of a matter unknown to him upon the will of Him who is wont to give a way out of things perplexed and confused. Whence it follows that providence is lodged in the act; for many babble too ignorantly of bare foreknowledge. Not so crass is the error of those who attribute a governance to God, but of a confused and mixed sort, as I have said, namely, one that by a general motion revolves and drives the system of the universe, with its several parts, but which does not specifically direct the action of individual creatures. Yet this error, also, is not tolerable; for by this providence which they call universal, they teach that nothing hinders all creatures from being contingently moved, or man from turning himself hither and thither by the free choice of his will. And they so apportion things between God and man that God by His power inspires in man a movement by which he can act in accordance with the nature implanted in him, but He regulates His own actions by the plan of His will. Briefly, they mean that the universe, men's affairs, and men themselves are governed by God's might but not by His determination. I say nothing of the Epicureans (a pestilence that has always filled the world) who imagine that God is idle and indolent; and others just as foolish, who of old fancied that God so ruled above the middle region of the air that he left the lower regions to fortune. As if the dumb creatures themselves do not sufficiently cry out against such patent madness!

("General" and "special" providence)

Gen. 22:8

<sup>8</sup> Abraham answered, "God himself will provide the lamb for the burnt offering, my son." And the two of them went on together.

我現在的目的是要駁斥那流行一時的意見,那意見僅僅承認上帝有盲目而不確定的運動,卻把祂的主要任務剝奪了;這主要的任務,就是以祂不可思議的智慧,管理和安置萬物,使它們各得其所;這樣,既然不承認上帝統治世界,自然使祂徒擁主宰的虛名,而無主宰之實。試問所謂統治,不就是以一定的命令,管制你所支配的人嗎?假若他們承認上帝統治世界,不但因為祂要保存祂所安置自然界的秩序,乃是因祂對所造的每一事工,都有特別的關懷,這樣,我對於他們所謂普遍的天命,並不完全反對。不錯,萬物都是為自然界奧妙的本能所推動,仿佛他們服從上帝永恆的命令,而且上帝從前所指定的,好像現在是出於被造之物自動的傾向。

For now I propose the refute the opinion (which almost universally obtains) that concedes to God some kind of blind and ambiguous motion, while taking from him the chief thing: that he directs everything by his incomprehensible wisdom and disposes it to his own end. And so in name only, not in fact, it makes God the Ruler of the universe because it deprives him of his control. What, I pray you, is it to have control but so to be in authority that you rule in a determined order those things over which you are placed? Yet I do not wholly repudiate what is said concerning universal providence, provided they in turn grant me that the universe is ruled by God, not only because he watches over the order of nature set by himself, but because he exercises especial care over each of his works. It is, indeed, true that the several kinds of things are moved by a secret impulse of nature, as if they obeyed God's eternal command, and what God has once determined flows on by itself.

這可以引伸基督的聲明,祂說祂和父從最初一同工作(參約 5: 17)。保羅也說過:「我們生活,動作,存留,都在乎祂」(徒 17: 28),而且希伯來人書的作者也證明了基督是上帝用權能的命令,托住萬有(參來 1: 3)。但他們藉以上的經文為隱諱特殊天命教義的藉口,這是不應該的;這個教義有《聖經》的明顯見證,竟然還有人懷疑,真是叫人希奇了。他們以我所說過的為藉口,來隱藏上帝特別的天命,卻不能不補充一句,以糾正自己:承認許多事情的發生是由於上帝特別的關懷。不過他們錯誤地把上帝的這關懷限於某些特殊的行動。因此,我們必要證明,上帝從事統治一切特殊的事,而一切都是出自上帝一定的旨意;因此,沒有什麼事是出於偶然的。

約5:17

『耶穌就對他們說:我父做事直到如今,我也做事。

# 徒 17: 28

<sup>28</sup> 我們生活、動作、存留,都在乎他。就如你們作詩的,有人說:我們也是他所生的。

# 來 1: 3

他是上帝榮耀所發的光輝,是上帝本體的真像,常用他權能的命令托住萬有。 他洗淨了人的罪,就坐在高天至大者的右邊。

At this point we may refer to Christ's statement that from the very beginning he and the Father were always at work [John 5:17]; and to Paul's teaching that "in him we live, move, and have our being" [Acts 17:28]; also, what the author of The Letter to the Hebrews says, meaning to prove the divinity of Christ, that all things are sustained by his mighty command [Heb. 1:3]. But they wrongly conceal and obscure by this excuse that special providence which is so declared by sure and clear testimonies of Scripture that it is a wonder anyone can have doubts about it. And surely they who cast over it the veil of which I spoke are themselves so compelled to add, by way of correction, that many things take place under God's especial care. But they wrongly restrict this to particular acts alone. Therefore we must prove *God so attends to the regulation of individual events, and they all so proceed from his set plan, that nothing takes place by chance*.

### John 5:17

<sup>17</sup> Jesus said to them, "My Father is always at his work to this very day, and I, too, am working."

#### Acts 17:28

<sup>28</sup> 'For in him we live and move and have our being.' As some of your own poets have said, 'We are his offspring.'

#### Heb. 1:3

The Son is the radiance of God's glory and the exact representation of his being, sustaining all things by his powerful word. After he had provided purification for sins, he sat down at the right hand of the Majesty in heaven.

1.17.1 萬國的歷史: 上帝的護理:

教會: 上帝特別的照顧, 保守;

護理:透過方法:不透過方法:違背方法

HISTORY OF NATIONS: PROVIDENCE;

CHURCH, GOD'S SPECIAL CARE;

PROVIDENCE: THROUGH MEANS, WITHOUT MEANS, AGAINST MEANS 1.17.1

卷一 第十七章 這教義須怎樣應用才對我們有益?

Chapter 17 – How we may apply this doctrine (providence) to our greatest benefit

(Interpretation of divine providence with reference to the past and the future, 1-5)

# 1.17.1 上帝的道路的意義

The meaning of God's ways 1.17.1

人類思想既然傾向虚幻,所以不懂得這教義之適當應用的人,常自陷於困惑中。因此,關於《聖經》為何教訓我們萬物為上帝安排,必須加以簡單的敍述。

Moreover, as men's dispositions are inclined to vain subtleties, any who do not hold fast to a good and right use of this doctrine can hardly avoid entangling themselves in inscrutable difficulties. Therefore it is expedient here to discuss briefly *to what end* Scripture teaches that *all things are divinely ordained*.

首先要說明的,即是上帝的管理也及於未來,而不只關於過去。其次,上帝統治萬物,有時用工具,有時不用工具,有時與一切的工具相反。最後,上帝的管理是表明上帝關懷全人類,尤其是對於教會的治理,倍加注意與關懷。另一點也要注意的是:在上帝的管理之全部歷程中,雖然祂的父愛與仁慈,或祂嚴明的公義,經常都是顯著的;可是有時事物的原因隱而不露,因而疑實叢生,以為人事的變更,是由於盲目行動的幸運;或者肉身受唆使而埋怨上帝,說祂把我們當作球戲來玩弄取樂。其實,如果我們以冷靜的頭腦去學習,就知道最後的結果,足夠證明上帝的

計畫,是出於最完備的理性;也知道祂的計畫若非為著要教訓祂的子民學習忍耐,就是要糾正他們腐化頹廢的感情,克服他們放縱的慾望,或者要教他們實行克己,激發他們振作奮勉;在另一方面,祂挫抑驕傲的人,壓抑邪惡之人的詭計,和打破他們的陰謀。我們對原因雖無從觀察或瞭解,但我們必須承認原因是隱藏在上帝裏面的,所以必須和大衛發出同一的呼聲:「主我的上帝啊,你所行的奇事,並你向我們所懷的意念甚多,不能向你陳明,若要陳明,其事不可勝數」(詩 40:5)。雖然我們的悲苦應當常叫我們想到自己的罪惡,懲罰也應當促使我們悔改,可是基督對於降災於人的事,把更多的權威歸於上帝的旨意,而不是要求祂按照各人的過失處罰人。所以,祂論到一個生而失明的人,說:「不是這人犯了罪,也不是他的父母犯了罪,是要在他的身上,顯出上帝的作為來」(約 9:3)。對於與生俱來的災殃,人之常情就會抱不平,認為像這樣加害無辜,確是有損上帝的寬大。但基督聲明,若我們的眼看得清楚,父的榮光就是表現在這宗事上。

# 詩 40:5

<sup>5</sup> 耶和華—我的上帝啊,你所行的奇事,並你向我們所懷的意念甚多,不能向你 陳明。若要陳明,其事不可勝數。

#### 約9:3

<sup>3</sup> 耶穌回答說:也不是這人犯了罪,也不是他父母犯了罪,是要在他身上顯出上 帝的作為來。

Three things, indeed, are to be noted. First, God's providence must be considered with regard to the future as well as the past. Secondly, it is the determinative principle of all things in such a way that sometimes it works through an intermediary, sometimes without an intermediary, sometimes contrary to every intermediary. Finally, it strives to the end that God may reveal his concern for the whole human race, but especially his vigilance in *ruling the church*, which he deigns to watch more closely. Now this, also, ought to be added, that although either fatherly favor and beneficence or severity of judgment often shine forth in the whole course of providence, nevertheless sometimes the causes of the events are hidden. So the thought creeps in that human affairs turn and whirl at the blind urge of fortune; or the flesh incites us to contradiction, as if God were making sport of men by throwing them about like balls. It is, indeed, true that if we had quiet and composed minds ready to learn, the final outcome would show that God always has the best reason for his plan: either to instruct his own people in patience, or to correct their wicked affections and tame their lust, or to subjugate them to self-denial, or to arouse them from sluggishness; again, to bring low the proud, to shatter the cunning of the impious and to overthrow their devices. Yet however hidden and fugitive from our point of view the causes may be, we must hold that they are surely laid up with him, and hence we must exclaim with David: "Great, O God, are the wondrous deeds that thou has done, and thy thoughts toward us cannot be reckoned; if I try to speak, they would be more than can be told" [Ps. 40:5]. For even though in our miseries our sins ought always to come to mind, that punishment itself may incite us to repentance, yet we see how Christ claims for the Father's secret plan a broader justice than simply

punishing each one as he deserves. For concerning the man born blind he says: "Neither he nor his parents sinned, but that God's glory may be manifested in him" [John 9:3 p.]. For here our nature cries out, when calamity comes before birth itself, as if God with so little mercy thus punished the undeserving. Yet Christ testifies that in this miracle the glory of his Father shines, provided our eyes be pure.

#### Ps. 40:5

<sup>5</sup> Many, O LORD my God, are the wonders you have done. The things you planned for us no one can recount to you; were I to speak and tell of them, they would be too many to declare.

### John 9:3

<sup>3</sup> "Neither this man nor his parents sinned," said Jesus, "but this happened so that the work of God might be displayed in his life.

但我們務須以謙虛謹慎詢問,不要責難上帝;要尊敬祂暗中的判斷,並相信祂的旨意是祂所行一切事最公正的原因。當密雲蔽天,暴風雨來臨的時候,為了濃霧當前,雷聲震耳,恐怖使我們的一切官能失了知覺,這一切的事,在我們看來都是亂無條理的;然而在這整個時間,諸天始終明朗如舊。同樣,我們可以推論,世界局勢洶洶,剝奪了我們的判斷力,**然而上帝還是以祂自己公義和智慧的亮光,在紛亂中使一切井井有條,各歸正途**。有許多瘋狂得非常可怕的人,膽敢責難上帝的工作,批評祂奧妙的旨意,甚至對未知的事物,也敢匆促定讞,比判斷必朽之人的行為更加放肆。我們對同類尚且保持謙厚,不敢妄下斷語,免得因輕率而受責難,卻對那應受歌頌尊敬的上帝的奧秘判斷,反加以無禮的侮辱,豈不是荒謬之極嗎?

But we must so cherish moderation that we do not try to make God render account to us, but so reverence his secret judgments as to consider his will the truly just cause of all things. When dense clouds darken the sky, and a violent tempest arises, because a gloomy mist is cast over our eyes, thunder strikes our ears and all our senses are benumbed with fright, everything seems to us to be confused and mixed up; but all the while a constant quiet and serenity ever remain in heaven. So must we infer that, while the disturbances in the world deprive us of judgment, God out of the pure light of his justice and wisdom tempers and directs these very movements in the best-conceived order to a right end. And surely on this point it is sheer folly that many dare with greater license to call God's works to account, and to examine his secret plans, and to pass as rash a sentence on matters unknown as they would on the deeds of mortal men. For what is more absurd than to use this moderation toward our equals, that we prefer to suspend judgment rather than be charged with rashness; yet haughtily revile the hidden judgments o God, which we ought to hold in reverence?

# 1.17.6 上帝的護理是信徒的安慰 GOD'S PROVIDENCE AS SOLACE OF BELIEVERS 1.17.6

(Meditating on the ways of God in providence: the happiness of recognizing acts of providence, 6-11)

這樣的吹毛求疵,或過份的狂亂,只要信徒**對上帝意有敬虔與聖潔的沉思**,就不難廓清;我們沉思,是受**虔誠的心**所主使,好叫我們從中得著快樂和利益。 所以基督徒若相信一切事物的發生,是由於上帝的安排,決非出自偶然,就必定 會承認祂萬有終極的原因,也會循序考慮次要的原因。他不會懷疑,上帝的特殊 旨意是要照顧他的生存,凡對他的利益和安全有妨礙的事物,祂決不會容許。但他 所想到的,第一是人,第二是其他生命,他就會確知上帝安排一切。他要承認,人 類不論善惡,他們的籌畫,意志,努力和一切權力都在上帝控制之下,上帝隨意 引導他們怎樣,便要怎樣,要約束他們,便約束他們。

But these calumnies, or rather ravings of distracted men, will be easily dispersed by *pious and holy meditation on providence*, which the rule of piety dictates to us, so that from this we may receive the best and sweetest fruit. Therefore *the Christian heart*, since it had been thoroughly persuaded that all things happen by God's plan, and that nothing takes place by chance, will ever *look to him as the principal cause of things, yet will give attention to the secondary causes in their proper place*. Then the heart will not doubt that God's singular providence keeps watch to preserve it, and will not suffer anything to happen but what may turn out to its good and salvation. But since God's dealings are first with man, then with the remaining creatures, the heart will have assurance that God's providence rules over both. As far as *men* are concerned, whether they are good or evil, the heart of the Christian will know that their *plans, wills, efforts, and abilities are under God's hand;* that it is within his choice to bend them whither he pleases and to constrain them whenever he pleases.

上帝的旨意對信徒的安全特別照顧,有無數顯著的應許可資證明:「你要把你的重擔卸給耶和華,祂必撫養你,祂永不叫義人動搖」(詩 55: 22)。「住在至高隱密處的,必住在全能者的蔭下」(詩 91: 1)。「摸你們的,就是摸祂眼中的瞳人」(亞 2: 8)。「我們有堅固的城,耶和華要將救恩定為城牆,為外郭」(賽 26: 1)。「即或婦人忘記她吃奶的嬰孩,我卻不忘記你」(賽 49: 15)。再者,《聖經》歷史的主要目的是告訴我們,主如何周詳地保護聖徒們,甚至免得「他們的腳,碰在石頭上」(詩 91: 12)。 詩 55: 22

# 詩 90: 1

<sup>2</sup> 你要把你的重擔卸給耶和華,他必撫養你;他永不叫義人動搖。

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>23</sup> 上帝啊,你必使惡人下入滅亡的坑;流人血、行詭詐的人必活不到半世,但我要 倚靠你。

<sup>1 (</sup>上帝人摩西的祈禱) 主啊,你世世代代作我們的居所。

# 詩 91: 1, 12

- 1 住在至高者隱密處的,必住在全能者的蔭下。
- 12 他們要用手托著你,免得你的腳碰在石頭上。

# 彼前5:7

"你們要將一切的憂慮卸給上帝,因為他顧念你們。

#### 創 15: 1

<sup>1</sup> 這事以後,耶和華在異象中有話對亞伯蘭說:亞伯蘭,你不要懼怕!我是你的 盾牌,必大大的賞賜你。

#### 耶 15: 20

<sup>20</sup> 我必使你向這百姓成為堅固的銅牆;他們必攻擊你,卻不能勝你;因我與你同 在,要拯救你,搭救你。這是耶和華說的。

# 亞 2: 8

\* 我說:你往那裏去?他對我說:要去量耶路撒冷,看有多寬多長。

# 賽 49: 15

- <sup>15</sup> 婦人焉能忘記他吃奶的嬰孩,不憐恤他所生的兒子;即或有忘記的,我卻不忘記你。
- <sup>23</sup> 列王必作你的養父; 王后必作你的乳母。他們必將臉伏地,向你下拜,並舔你腳上的塵土。你便知道我是耶和華; 等候我的必不致羞愧。

There are very many and very clear promises that testify that God's singular providence watches over the welfare of believers: "Cast your care upon the Lord, and he will nourish you, and will never permit the righteous man to flounder" [Ps. 55:22 p.]. For he takes care of us. [I Peter 5:7 p.] "He who dwells in the help of the Most High will abide in the protection of the God of heaven." [Ps. 91:1; 90:1, Vg.] "He who touches you touches the pupil of mine eye." [Zech. 2:8 p.] "I will be your shield" [Gen. 15:1 p.], "a brazen wall" [Jer. 15:20]; "I will contend with those who contend with you" [Isa. 49:25]. "Even though a mother may forget her children, yet will I not forget you." [Isa. 49:15 p.] Indeed, the principal purpose of Biblical history is to teach that the Lord watches over the ways of the saints with such great diligence that they do not even stumble over a stone [cf. Ps. 91:12].

### Ps. 55:22

<sup>22</sup> Cast your cares on the LORD and he will sustain you; he will never let the righteous fall.

# I Peter 5:7

<sup>7</sup> Cast all your anxiety on him because he cares for you.

#### Ps. 91:1,12

- <sup>1</sup> He who dwells in the shelter of the Most High will rest in the shadow of the Almighty.
- <sup>12</sup> they will lift you up in their hands, so that you will not strike your foot against a stone.

#### Ps. 90:1,

<sup>1</sup> Lord, you have been our dwelling place throughout all generations.

#### Zech. 2:8

<sup>8</sup> For this is what the LORD Almighty says: "After he has honored me and has sent me against the nations that have plundered you—for whoever touches you touches the apple of his eve-

#### Gen. 15:1

After this, the word of the LORD came to Abram in a vision: "Do not be afraid, Abram. I am your shield, [a] your very great reward. [b] "

#### Jer. 15:20

<sup>20</sup> I will make you a wall to this people, a fortified wall of bronze; they will fight against you but will not overcome you, for I am with you to rescue and save you," declares the LORD.

#### Isa. 49:15, 25

- 15 "Can a mother forget the baby at her breast and have no compassion on the child she has borne? Though she may forget, I will not forget you!
- <sup>25</sup> But this is what the LORD says: "Yes, captives will be taken from warriors, and plunder retrieved from the fierce: I will contend with those who contend with you, and your children I will save.

我們在不久以前曾經駁倒了好些人的意見,他們以為上帝的安排只及於綱要的 事,不會特別關懷每一個人;現在我們必須把祂特別關懷我們的事實,加以深思, 因此,基督曾說過,最卑賤的麻雀落在地上,也是上帝的旨意(太 10: 29-30)這 句話以後,立刻就推論說:我們的價值,高於麻雀,上帝對我們也越關懷: 祂甚至 說,我們的頭髮都是數過的。既然沒有上帝的旨意,我們的頭髮一根也不會失落, 那麼我們還有什麼奢望呢? 我並不單指人類而說,因為**祂既選擇了教會做祂的居 所**,無疑地會特別表示祂在教會的管理中是顯現**祂的父愛**。

#### 太 10: 29-30

- 29 兩個麻雀不是賣一分銀子嗎?若是你們的父不許,一個也不能掉在地上;
- 30 就是你們的頭髮也都被數過了。
- 31 所以,不要懼怕,你們比許多麻雀還貴重!

Therefore, as we rightly rejected a little above the opinion of those who imagine a universal providence of God, which does not stoop to the especial care of any particular creature, yet first of all it is important that we recognize this special care toward us. Whence Christ, when he declared that not even a tiny sparrow of little worth falls to earth without the Father's will [Matt. 10:29], immediately applies it I this way: that since we are of greater value than sparrows, we ought to realize that God watches over us with all the closer care [Matt. 10:31]; and he extends it so far that we may trust that the hairs of our head are numbered [Matt. 10:30]. What else can we wish for ourselves, if not even one hair can fall from our head without his will? I speak not only concerning mankind; but, because *God has chosen the church to be his dwelling place*, there is no doubt that he shows by singular proofs *his fatherly care in ruling it*.

Matt. 10:29, 30, 31

Are not two sparrows sold for a penny<sup>[d]</sup>? Yet not one of them will fall to the ground apart from the will of your Father.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>30</sup> And even the very hairs of your head are all numbered.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>31</sup> So don't be afraid; you are worth more than many sparrows.

# 1.17.11 教會: 不是上帝護理的目標; 上帝才是護理的目標 CHURCH: NOT END OF GOD'S PROVIDENCE; GOD = END

# 確實知道上帝的護理,使我們心中充滿喜樂,信靠上帝 Certainty about God's providence puts joyous trust toward God inour hearts 1.17.11

反之當上帝照顧的這亮光一旦照在虔誠信徒的心裹,他以前所有極度的憂慮恐怖,和一切的掛念都會消除了。他既一面恐懼命運,就一面勇敢地把自己交托上帝。他的安慰是在於明白天父以祂的權能約束一切,以祂的旨意統治一切,以祂智慧規定一切,因此,**除非祂所指定的,什麼事都不能發生**。再者,上帝既親自保護他,將他交付天使照顧,好叫他不受水火刀兵的傷害;在上帝統治所許可的範圍以內,他的安全決無問題。因此詩人歌唱說:「祂必救你脫離捕鳥人的網羅,和毒害的瘟疫。祂必用自己的翎毛遮蔽你;你要投靠在祂的翅膀底下;祂的誠實,是大小的盾牌。你必不怕黑夜的驚駭,或是白日飛的箭;也不怕黑夜行的瘟疫,或是午間滅人的毒病」(詩 91: 3-6)。

# 詩 91: 3-6

- 3 他必救你脫離捕鳥人的網羅和毒害的瘟疫。
- 4 他必用自己的翎毛遮蔽你,你要投靠在他的翅膀底下,他的誠實是大小的盾牌。
- 5 你必不怕黑夜的驚駭,或是白日飛的箭,
- 6 也不怕黑夜行的瘟疫,或是午間滅人的毒病。

# 詩 90: 3-6

- 3 你使人歸於塵土,說:你們世人要歸回。
- 4 在你看來,千年如已過的昨日,又如夜間的一更。
- 5 你叫他們如水沖去;他們如睡一覺。早晨,他們如生長的草,
- 6 早晨發芽生長,晚上割下枯乾。

Yet, when that light of divine providence has once shone upon a godly man, he is then relieved and set free not only from the extreme anxiety and fear that were pressing him before, but from every care. For as he justly dreads fortune, so he fearlessly dares commit himself to God. His solace, I say, is to know that his Heavenly Father so holds all things in his power, so rules by his authority and will, so governs by his wisdom, that nothing can befall except he determine it. Moreover, it comforts him to know that he has been received into God's safekeeping and entrusted to the care of his angels, and that neither water, nor fire, nor iron can harm him, except in so far as it pleases God as governor to give them occasion. Thus indeed the psalm sings: "For he will deliver you from the snare of the fowler and from the deadly pestilence. Under his wings will he protect you, and in his pinions you will have assurance; his truth will be your shield. You

will not fear the terror of night, nor the flying arrow by day, nor the pestilence that stalks in darkness, nor the destruction that wastes at midday" [Ps. 91:3-6; cf. Ps. 90:3-6, Vg.; cf. Comm.1.

### Ps. 91:3-6

- <sup>3</sup> Surely he will save you from the fowler's snare and from the deadly pestilence.
- <sup>4</sup> He will cover you with his feathers, and under his wings you will find refuge; his faithfulness will be your shield and rampart.
- <sup>5</sup> You will not fear the terror of night, nor the arrow that flies by day,
- <sup>6</sup> nor the pestilence that stalks in the darkness, nor the plague that destroys at midday.

# Ps. 90:3-6

- <sup>3</sup> You turn men back to dust, saving, "Return to dust, O sons of men."
- <sup>4</sup> For a thousand years in your sight are like a day that has just gone by, or like a watch in the night.
- <sup>5</sup> You sweep men away in the sleep of death; they are like the new grass of the morning-
- <sup>6</sup> though in the morning it springs up new, by evening it is dry and withered.

因此在聖徒們的心裏也發出歸榮上帝的信任:「有主説明我,我必不懼怕;人 能把我怎麼樣呢? 主是我性命的力量; 我還懼誰呢? 雖有軍兵安營攻擊我, 我雖然 行過死蔭的幽谷,也不怕遭害」(詩 118: 6; 27: 1, 3; 23: 4)。在全世界似乎 是動亂的時候,為什麼他們還有安全感呢?這豈不因為他們相信主是普遍地在運 行,而祂的運行對他們有益嗎?當他們的安全遭受魔鬼與壞人的威脅,如果他們不 因想到上帝的照顧而得著支援, 他們勢必立感沮喪。但信徒一想到魔鬼和這一大批 壞人,任何方面都受上帝權能所約束:除非經上帝認可和吩咐,他們既不能蓄意 陷害我們,即令有陰謀,也不能設計完成,或動一個指頭去執行這些計畫;他們 不但為他的鎖鏈所捆綁,而且必須為他奔走服務,——信徒們一想到這一點,便有 無窮的安慰。因為既是主激動他們的怒氣,並隨意指導它們所達到的目的,也是祂 限制怒氣,不許他們按自己的意志享有無限的勝利。

#### 詩 118: 6

6 有耶和華幫助我,我必不懼怕,人能把我怎麼樣呢?

# 詩 27: 1, 3

(大衛的詩。) 耶和華是我的亮光,是我的拯救,我還怕誰呢? 耶和華是我性命 的保障(或譯:力量),我還懼誰呢?

3 雖有軍兵安營攻擊我,我的心也不害怕;雖然興起刀兵攻擊我,我必仍舊安穩。

### 詩 26: 1, 3

- <sup>1</sup> (大衛的詩。) 耶和華啊,求你為我伸冤,因我向來行事純全,我又倚靠耶和華,並不搖動。
- 3 因為你的慈愛常在我眼前,我也按你的真理而行。

# 詩 22: 4

4 我們的祖宗倚靠你;他們倚靠你,你便解救他們。

### 詩 23: 4

<sup>4</sup> 我雖然行過死蔭的幽谷,也不怕遭害,因為你與我同在;你的杖,你的竿,都 安慰我。

# 詩 56: 4, 5

- 4 我倚靠上帝,我要讚美他的話,我倚靠上帝,必不懼怕。血氣之輩能把我怎麼樣呢?
- 5 他們終日顛倒我的話;他們一切的心思都是要害我。

# 詩 55: 4, 5

- 4 我心在我裏面甚是疼痛; 死的驚惶臨到我身。
- 5 恐懼戰兢歸到我身; 驚恐漫過了我。

# 詩 71: 14

14 你曾砸碎鱷魚的頭, 把他給曠野的禽獸(禽獸: 原文是民)為食物。

From this, also, arises in the saints the assurance that they may glory. "The Lord is my helper" [Ps. 118:6 Vg.]; "I will not fear what flesh can do against me" [Ps. 56:4; 55:5, Vg.]. "The Lord is my protector; what shall I fear?" [Ps. 27:1; cf. Ps. 26:1, Vg.] "If armies should stand together against me" [Ps. 27:3; cf. Ps. 26:3 Vg.], "if I should walk in the midst of the shadow of death" [Ps. 22:4, Vg.; Ps. 23:4, EV], "I will not cease to have good hope" [Ps. 56:5; 55:4, Vg.; 71:14; Vg.]. Whence, I pray you, do they have this never-failing assurance but from knowing that, when the world appears to be aimlessly tumbled about, the Lord is everywhere at work, and from trusting that his work will be for their welfare? Now if their welfare is assailed either by the devil or by wicked men, then indeed, unless strengthened through remembering and meditating upon providence, they must needs quickly faint away. But let them recall that the devil and the whole cohort of the wicked are completely restrained by God's hand as by a bridle, so that they are unable either to hatch any plot against us or, having hatched it, to make preparations or, if they are fully planned it, to stir a finger toward carrying it out, except so far as he has permitted, indeed commanded. Let them, also, recall that the devil and his crew are not only fettered, but also curbed and compelled to do service. Such thoughts will provide them abundant comfort. For as it belongs to the Lord to arouse their fury and turn and direct it whither he pleases; so, also, is it his to set a measure and limit, lest they licentiously exult in their own lust.

#### Ps. 118:6

<sup>6</sup> The LORD is with me; I will not be afraid. What can man do to me?

#### Ps. 56:4-5

- In God, whose word I praise, in God I trust; I will not be afraid. What can mortal man do to me?
- <sup>5</sup> All day long they twist my words; they are always plotting to harm me.

#### Ps. 55:4-5

- <sup>4</sup> My heart is in anguish within me; the terrors of death assail me.
- <sup>5</sup> Fear and trembling have beset me; horror has overwhelmed me.

# Ps. 27:1, 3,

- The LORD is my light and my salvation—whom shall I fear? The LORD is the stronghold of my life—of whom shall I be afraid?
- <sup>3</sup> Though an army besiege me, my heart will not fear; though war break out against me, even then will I be confident.

# Ps. 26:1, 3

- <sup>1</sup> Vindicate me, O LORD, for I have led a blameless life; I have trusted in the LORD without wavering.
- <sup>3</sup> for your love is ever before me, and I walk continually in your truth.

# Ps. 22:4

<sup>4</sup> In you our fathers put their trust; they trusted and you delivered them.

# Ps. 23:4,

<sup>4</sup> Even though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, <sup>[a]</sup>I will fear no evil, for you are with me; your rod and your staff, they comfort me.

#### Ps. 71:14

<sup>14</sup> But as for me, I will always have hope; I will praise you more and more.

保羅堅持這個信念,所以有一處認為某次旅行是因為上帝的許可,而在另一處地方,聲明是受撒但所阻擋(參林前 16:7;帖前 2:18)。假如他只說撒但是障礙的話,就**似乎把撒但的權能看得太重**,仿佛牠能破壞上帝的旨意一般;但他說上帝是最高的決定者,一切行程都由祂定奪;他也就是說,**撒但雖有各種陰謀,可是不經上帝的准許,就將一籌莫展**。因此,大衛鑒於人生的變幻無常,而委身於這庇蔭所——「我終身的事在你手中」(詩 31:15)。他盡可以用單數說明生

命的過程和時間,他用復數的「時機」(tempora)這名詞的用意,是想說明人的境遇,雖變化無常,但一切興衰都受上帝統治。因此,利泛和以色列王在會師攻擊猶大以後,好像燃著的火把要毀滅那地,而先知卻稱他們為「冒煙的火把」(賽7:4),除冒煙以外,就不能作別的事。法老的財富,權力和眾多的軍隊,雖然無人能敵,但他卻被稱為海裹的怪物,他的軍隊被比做魚(參結 29:3,4)。所以上帝譴責他,說,要用他的鉤鉤住他的隊長和軍隊,又任意引他們到任何地方去。最後,為免詳述本題這一部分起見,你一查考便不難知道,對上帝安排一切的這教義,蒙昧無知的人,乃是最大的不幸,若是瞭解這教義,就是最高的福祉。

# 林前 16:7

<sup>7</sup> 我如今不願意路過見你們;主若許我,我就指望和你們同住幾時。

# 帖前 2: 18

18 所以我們有意到你們那裏;我保羅有一兩次要去,只是撒但阻擋了我們。

#### 詩 31: 15

15 我終身的事在你手中; 求你救我脫離仇敵的手和那些逼迫我的人。

# 賽7:4

<sup>4</sup> 對他說: 你要謹慎安靜,不要因亞蘭王利汛和利瑪利的兒子這兩個冒煙的火把頭 所發的烈怒害怕,也不要心裹膽怯。

# 結 29: 3, 4

- 說主耶和華如此說:埃及王法老啊,我與你這臥在自己河中的大魚為敵。你曾說:這河是我的,是我為自己造的。
- 4 我—耶和華必用鉤子鉤住你的腮頰,又使江河中的魚貼住你的鱗甲,我必將你和所有貼住你鱗甲的魚,從江河中拉上來,

Paul, supported by this conviction, after saying in one passage that his journey had been hindered by Satan [I Thess. 2:18], states elsewhere that with God's permission he determined to set out [I Cor. 16:7]. If he had said only that the obstacle was from Satan, he would have seemed to give too much power to him, as if it were in his power to overthrow even the very plans of God; but now when he declares God the Ruler upon whose permission all his journeys depend, he at the same time show that Satan cannot carry out anything that he may contrive except with God's assent. For the same reason, David, on account of the various changes by which the life of men is continually turned, and as it were, whirled about, betakes himself to this refuge: that his "times are in God's hand" [Ps. 31:15]. He could have put here either "course of life" or "time" in the singular, but he chose to express by using the plural times" that however unstable the condition of men may be, whatever changes take place from time to time, they are governed by God. For this reason, although Rezin and the King of Israel, having joined forces to destroy Judah, seemed firebrands kindled to destroy and consume the land, they are called by the prophet "smoking firebrands," that can do nothing but breathe out a little smoke [Isa. 7:4].

Thus Pharaoh, although to all he was fearsome both on account of his riches and strength, and the size of his armies, is himself compared to a sea monster, and his troops to fish [Ezek. 29:4]. God therefore announces that he is going to seize the leader and the army with his hook and drag them where He pleases. In short, not to tarry any longer over this, if you pay attention, you will easily perceive that *ignorance of providence is the ultimate* of all miseries; the highest blessedness lies in the knowledge of it.

18.1 上帝的護理關乎選民,也關乎被遺棄的人; 撒但:在上帝掌管之下,按照上帝的預備=旨運作; 邪惡的勢力都在上帝的掌管之下:對信徒的安慰

PROVIDENCE CONCERNS REPROBATE AS WELL AS
THE ELECT
SATAN – UNDER GOD'S COMMAND, OPERATES BY
GOD'S DECREE
POWERS OF EVIL = AT GOD'S COMMAND:
CONSOLATION TO BELIEVER 18.1

卷一 十八章 上帝利用惡人的行為和心思執行祂的 審 判,自己卻仍然純潔無損

Chapter 18 – God so uses the works of the ungodly, and so bends their minds to carry out his judgments, that he remains pure from every stain

上帝不僅容許事情發生 No mere "permission"! 1.18.1

在其它的經文中,有一個關於上帝按己意利用撒但與一切惡人的更困難問題。因為屬血氣的知識所難以明瞭的,就是祂既利用他們做工具,怎能不沾染他們的罪惡,而且在祂和他們共同擔任的工作中,祂竟然完全沒有過失,而且還要譴責祂所利用的人。因此有人捏造了「實行」與「許可」之分;因為撤但和一切惡人都在上帝權能和管理之下,所以祂可以任意支配他們的惡意,以達到祂的目的,又利用他們的惡行,以執行祂的審判,這在許多人看來乃是難以解說的。那些因這外表近似荒謬而起恐慌的人,若不是想用謊言去維護上帝的正義,他們的好意也許是可原諒的。他們覺得一個人若受上帝的旨意和命令所蒙蔽,嗣後又因蒙蔽受罰,是極不合理的。他們為避免這個困難起見,於是推說這事之所以發生,是由於上帝的許可,而不是由於祂的旨意;但上帝自己毫不含糊地否認這樣的遁辭。無數精確的見證已經證明,若沒有上帝事先的命令和冥冥中的指導,人就不能有所謀算和決定。我們以前所引詩人所說的,「上帝都隨自己的旨意行事」(詩 115:3),無疑是指人的一切行為而言。那段經文肯定地說,上帝毫無例外地是戰爭與和平最高的決定者。這樣,誰敢說人被盲目的偶然勢力所支配,而祂竟毫不知曉,漠然無動於衷?

詩 115: 3

3 然而,我們的上帝在天上,都隨自己的意旨行事。

From other passages, where God is said to bend or draw Satan himself and all the wicked to his will, there emerges a more difficult question. For carnal sense can hardly comprehend how in acting through them he does not contract some defilement from their transgression, and even in a common undertaking can be free of all blame, and indeed can justly condemn his ministers. Hence the distinction was devised between doing and permitting because to many this difficulty seemed inexplicable, that Satan and all the impious are so under God's hand and power that he directs their malice to whatever end seems good to him, and uses their wicked deeds to carry out his judgments. And perhaps the moderation of those whom the appearance of absurdity alarms would be excusable, except that they wrongly try to clear God's justice of every sinister mark by upholding a falsehood. It seems absurd to them for man, who will soon be punished for his blindness, to be blinded by God's will and command. Therefore they escape by the shift that this is done only with God's permission, not also by his will; but he, openly declaring that he is the doer, repudiates that evasion. However, that men can accomplish nothing except by God's secret command, that they cannot by deliberating accomplish anything except what he has already decreed with himself and determines by his secret direction, is proved by innumerable and clear testimonies. What we have cited before from the psalm, that God does whatever he wills [Ps. 115:3], certainly pertains to all the actions of men. If, as is here said, God is the true Arbiter of wars and of peace, and this without any exception, who, then, will dare say that men are borne headlong by blind motion unbeknown to God or with his acquiescence?

# Ps. 115:3

<sup>3</sup> Our God is in heaven; he does whatever pleases him.

但這個問題須有特殊的例證,然後才易於說明。從約伯記第一章我們知道,撒但到上帝面前接受祂的命令,與自動順從上帝的天使是一樣的。當然,牠與天使的方式不同,目的也是兩樣,但若沒有上帝的旨意,牠做不出什麼事來。雖然撒但似乎僅僅得了許可,而加害於聖潔的約伯,但「賞賜的是主,收取的也是主」(伯1:21)這句話既是實在的,我們就可以斷言,上帝是這試煉的發動者,而撒但,可惡的強盜和刺客等,都不過是祂直接的代理人而已,撒但想叫他因失望而變成瘋狂。示巴人貿然侵入,掠奪他人的財產。約伯承認他自己財產完全被剝奪,流為赤貧,都是上帝的旨意。所以人或撒但所行的一切事,仍然為上帝所操縱,藉他們所做的執行祂的審判。上帝要哄騙那不忠的亞哈王,魔鬼自願擔任這件工作,所以牠就被派在眾先知的口中作謊言的靈(王上 22: 20-23)。假如亞哈王受蒙蔽和迷惑是上帝的責罰,那麼,許可的托詞就不能存在了。若一個法官只知許可職屬,而不明定要他們如何執行命令,這實在是笑話。

伯 1: 6, 21

6 有一天,上帝的眾子來侍立在耶和華面前,撒但也來在其中。

21 說:我赤身出於母胎,也必赤身歸回;賞賜的是耶和華,收取的也是耶和華。耶 和華的名是應當稱頌的。

### 伯 2: 1

1 又有一天,上帝的眾子來侍立在耶和華面前,撒但也來在其中。

# 王上 22: 20-22

- ◎ 耶和華說: 誰去引誘亞哈上基列的拉末去陣亡呢;這個就這樣說,那個就那樣
- 22 耶和華問他說: 你用何法呢?他說: 我去,要在他眾先知口中作謊言的靈。耶和 華說:這樣,你必能引誘他,你去如此行吧!

But particular examples will shed more light. From the first chapter of Job we know that Satan, no less than the angels who willingly obey, presents himself before God [Job 1:6; 2:1] to receive his commands. He does so, indeed, in a different way and with a different end; but he still cannot undertake anything unless God so wills. However, even though a bare permission to afflict the holy man seems then to be added, yet we gather that God was the author of that trial of which Satan and his wicked thieves were the ministers, because this statement is true: "The Lord gave, the Lord has taken away; as it has pleased God, so is it done" [Job 1:21, Vg. (p.)]. Satan desperately tries to drive the holy man insane; the Sabaeans cruelly and impiously pillage and make off with another's possessions. Job recognizes that he was divinely stripped of all his property, and made a poor man, because it so please God. Therefore, whatever men or Satan himself may instigate, God nevertheless holds the key, so that he turns their efforts to carry out his judgments. God wills that the false King Ahab be deceived; the devil offers his services to this end; he is sent, with a definite command, to be a lying spirit in the mouth of all the prophets [I Kings 22:20, 22]. If the blinding and insanity of Ahab be God's judgment, the figment of bare permission vanishes: because it would be ridiculous for the Judge only to permit what he wills to be done, and not also to decree it and to command its execution by his ministers.

#### Job 1:6, 21

- One day the angels [a] came to present themselves before the LORD, and Satan [b] also came with them.
- and said: "Naked I came from my mother's womb, and naked I will depart. [c] The LORD gave and the LORD has taken away; may the name of the LORD be praised."

# Job 2:1

<sup>1</sup> On another day the angels <sup>[a]</sup> came to present themselves before the LORD, and Satan also came with them to present himself before him.

# I Kings 22:20, 22

- <sup>20</sup> And the LORD said, 'Who will entice Ahab into attacking Ramoth Gilead and going to his death there?' "One suggested this, and another that.
- " 'By what means?' the LORD asked. " 'I will go out and be a lying spirit in the mouths of all his prophets,' he said. " 'You will succeed in enticing him,' said the LORD. 'Go and do it.'

猶太人設計陷害基督: 彼拉多和他的士兵順從暴行; 但門徒在懇切禱告中承 認,那些惡人所做的都是「上帝的手和祂的旨意所預定必有的事」(徒 4: 28)。 這看法與彼得所傳的相合,「祂既按著上帝的定旨先見,被交與人......把祂釘在十 字架上殺了 | (徒 2: 23) 這好像是說,上帝在最初即預知一切,以明確的認識和 堅決的意志指定猶太人所執行的。正如他在另一處地方說過: 「上帝曾藉眾先知的 口,預言基督將要受害,就這樣應驗了」(徒 3: 18)押沙龍犯了亂倫的罪,沾污 了他父親的床第,但上帝明說,這是祂的工作,「你在暗中行事,我卻要在以色列 眾人和太陽的面前去行」(撒下 12: 16, 16: 22)。凡迦勒底人在猶大所行的一 切殘暴的事,耶利米都認為是上帝的工作(參耶 50: 25);因此,尼布甲尼撒常 被稱為上帝的僕人。上帝常常說, 祂以嗤聲, 號聲和命令激動惡人作戰; 比方說, 祂稱亞述人為他的震怒之棒,和手中所揮的杖。祂將聖都的毀滅與殿的傾頹都稱為 祂自己的工作(參賽 5: 26: 10: 5: 19: 25)。大衛對上帝不發怨言,反而承認 祂是公正的審判官,且認定示每的咒詛是出自上帝的吩咐。他說:「主吩咐他說 『你要咒罵』」(撒下 16: 10)。聖史中常有這樣的記載,凡發生的事都是出自 主。例如十支派的背叛,如以利兒子之死(王上11:31;撒上2:34),以及很多 同樣的事。凡稍識《聖經》的人都不難明白,我所舉的見證不過是九牛之一毛,但 這已足夠證明那些僅以「許可」代替上帝「旨意」的人是何等無聊;仿佛上帝坐在 瞭望臺上期待偶然發生的事,而祂的決定,是以人的意志為轉移的。

#### 徒 4: 28

28 成就你手和你意旨所預定必有的事。

### 徒 2: 23

<sup>23</sup> 他既按著上帝的定旨先見被交與人,你們就藉著無法之人的手,把他釘在十字架上,殺了。

#### 徒 3: 18

18 但上帝曾藉眾先知的口,預言基督將要受害,就這樣應驗了。

#### 耶 1: 15

<sup>15</sup> 耶和華說:看那,我要召北方列國的眾族;他們要來,各安座位在耶路撒冷的城門口,周圍攻擊城牆,又要攻擊猶大的一切城邑。

#### 耶7:14

<sup>14</sup> 所以我要向這稱為我名下、你們所倚靠的殿,與我所賜給你們和你們列祖的地施 行,照我從前向示羅所行的一樣。

#### 耶 50: 25

<sup>25</sup> 耶和華已經開了武庫,拿出他惱恨的兵器;因為主—萬軍之耶和華在迦勒底人之地 有當做的事。

# 耶 25: 9

<sup>9</sup> 我必召北方的眾族和我僕人巴比倫王尼布甲尼撒來攻擊這地和這地的居民,並四圍一切的國民。我要將他們盡行滅絕,以致他們令人驚駭、嗤笑,並且永久荒涼。這是耶和華說的。

#### 耶 27: 6

<sup>6</sup> 現在我將這些地都交給我僕人巴比倫王尼布甲尼撒的手,我也將田野的走獸給他使用。

# 賽 5: 26

<sup>26</sup> 他必豎立大旗,招遠方的國民,發嘶聲叫他們從地極而來,看那,他們必急速奔來。

# 賽 10: 5

5 亞述是我怒氣的棍,手中拿我惱恨的杖。

#### 賽 7: 18

18 那時, 耶和華要發嘶聲, 使埃及江河源頭的蒼蠅和亞述地的蜂子飛來;

# 賽 28: 21

<sup>21</sup> 耶和華必興起,像在毘拉心山;他必發怒,像在基遍谷,好做成他的工,就是非常的工;成就他的事,就是奇異的事。

#### 撒下 16: 10, 11, 22

- <sup>10</sup> 王說: 洗魯雅的兒子, 我與你們有何關涉呢? 他咒罵是因耶和華吩咐他說: 你要咒罵大衛。如此, 誰敢說你為什麼這樣行呢?
- <sup>11</sup> 大衛又對亞比篩和眾臣僕說: 我親生的兒子尚且尋索我的性命,何況這便雅憫人呢,由他咒罵吧! 因為這是耶和華吩咐他的。
- <sup>22</sup> 於是人為押沙龍在宮殿的平頂上支搭帳棚,押沙龍在以色列眾人眼前,與他父的妃嬪親近。

# 王上 11: 31

<sup>11</sup> 對耶羅波安說: 你可以拿十片。耶和華—以色列的上帝如此說: 我必將國從所羅門 手裏奪回,將十個支派賜給你。

#### 撒上 2: 34

34 你的兩個兒子何弗尼、非尼哈所遭遇的事可作你的證據: 他們二人必一日同死。

# 馬 3: 10

10 現在斧子已經放在樹根上,凡不結好果子的樹就砍下來,丟在火裏。

#### 番 2: 1

<sup>1</sup> 不知羞恥的國民那,你們應當聚集! 趁命令沒有發出,日子過去如風前的糠,耶和華的烈怒未臨到你們,他發怒的日子未到以先,你們應當聚集前來。

#### 何 8: 1

<sup>1</sup> 你用口吹角吧! 敵人如鷹來攻打耶和華的家,因為這民違背我的約,干犯我的律法。

The Jews intended to destroy Christ; Pilate and his soldiers complied with their mad desire; yet in solemn prayer the disciples confess that all the impious ones had nothing except what "the hand and plan" of God had decreed [Acts 4:28; cf. Vg.]. So Peter had already preached that "by the definite plan and foreknowledge of God, Christ had been given over" to be killed [Acts 2:23; cf. Vg.]. It is as if he were to say that God, to whom from the beginning nothing was hidden, wittingly and willingly determined what the Jews carried out. As he elsewhere states: "God, who has foretold through all his prophets that Christ is going to suffer, has thus fulfilled it" [Acts 3:18; cf. Vg.]. Absalom, polluting his father's bed by an incestuous union, commits a detestable crime [II Sam. 16:22]; yet God declares this work to be his own; for the words are: "You did it secretly; but I will do this thing openly, and in broad daylight" [II Sam. 12:12 p.]. Jeremiah declared that every cruelty the Chaldeans exercised against Judah was God's work [Jer. 1:15; 7:14; 50:25, and *passim*]. For this reason Nebuchadnezzar is called God's servant [Jer. 25:9; cf. ch. 27:6]. God proclaims in many places that by his hissing [Isa. 7:18 or 5:26], by the sound of his trumpet [Hos. 8:1], by his authority and command, the impious are aroused to war [cf. Zeph. 2:1]. The Assyrian he calls the rod of his anger [Isa. 10:5 p.], and the ax that he wields with his hand [cf. Matt. 3:10]. The destruction of the Holy City and the ruin of the Temple he calls his own work [Isa. 28:21]. David, not murmuring against God, but recognizing him as the just judge, yet confesses that the curses of Shimei proceeded from His command [II Sam. 16:10]. "The Lord," he says, "commanded him to curse." [II Sam. 16:11.] We very often find in the Sacred History that whatever happens proceeds from the Lord, as for instance the defection of the ten tribes [I Kings 11:31], the death of Eli's sons [I Sam. 2:34], and very many examples of this sort. Those who are moderately versed in the Scriptures see that for the sake of brevity I have put forward only a few of many testimonies. Yet from these it is more than evident that they babble and talk absurdly who, in place of God's providence,

substitute bare permission – as if God sat in a watchtower awaiting chance events, and his judgments thus depended upon human will.

#### Acts 4:28

They did what your power and will had decided beforehand should happen.

#### Acts 2:23

<sup>23</sup> This man was handed over to you by God's set purpose and foreknowledge; and you, with the help of wicked men, <sup>[d]</sup> put him to death by nailing him to the cross.

# Acts 3:18

<sup>18</sup> But this is how God fulfilled what he had foretold through all the prophets, saying that his Christ<sup>[a]</sup> would suffer.

# II Sam. 16:10, 11, 22

- But the king said, "What do you and I have in common, you sons of Zeruiah? If he is cursing because the LORD said to him, 'Curse David,' who can ask, 'Why do you do this?' "
- David then said to Abishai and all his officials, "My son, who is of my own flesh, is trying to take my life. How much more, then, this Benjamite! Leave him alone; let him curse, for the LORD has told him to.
- <sup>22</sup> So they pitched a tent for Absalom on the roof, and he lay with his father's concubines in the sight of all Israel.

#### Jer. 1:15

<sup>15</sup> I am about to summon all the peoples of the northern kingdoms," declares the LORD.

"Their kings will come and set up their thrones in the entrance of the gates of Jerusalem; they will come against all her surrounding walls and against all the towns of Judah.

#### Jer. 7:14

<sup>14</sup> Therefore, what I did to Shiloh I will now do to the house that bears my Name, the temple you trust in, the place I gave to you and your fathers.

# Jer. 50:25

The LORD has opened his arsenal and brought out the weapons of his wrath, for the Sovereign LORD Almighty has work to do in the land of the Babylonians.

#### Jer. 25:9

<sup>9</sup> I will summon all the peoples of the north and my servant Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon," declares the LORD, "and I will bring them against this land and its inhabitants and against all the surrounding nations. I will completely destroy <sup>[a]</sup> them and make them an object of horror and scorn, and an everlasting ruin.

### Jer. 27:6

<sup>6</sup> Now I will hand all your countries over to my servant Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon; I will make even the wild animals subject to him.

# Isa. 7:18

<sup>18</sup> In that day the LORD will whistle for flies from the distant streams of Egypt and for bees from the land of Assyria.

### Hos. 8:1

<sup>1</sup> "Put the trumpet to your lips! An eagle is over the house of the LORD because the people have broken my covenant and rebelled against my law.

#### Isa. 5:26

He lifts up a banner for the distant nations, he whistles for those at the ends of the earth. Here they come, swiftly and speedily!

# Zeph. 2:1

<sup>1</sup> Then I looked up—and there before me was a man with a measuring line in his hand!

# Isa. 10:5

<sup>5</sup> "Woe to the Assyrian, the rod of my anger, in whose hand is the club of my wrath!

# Matt. 3:10

<sup>3</sup> This is he who was spoken of through the prophet Isaiah: "A voice of one calling in the desert, 'Prepare the way for the Lord, make straight paths for him.' "<sup>[a]</sup>

#### Isa. 28:21

The LORD will rise up as he did at Mount Perazim, he will rouse himself as in the Valley of Gibeon—to do his work, his strange work, and perform his task, his alien task.

# I Kings 11:31

Then he said to Jeroboam, "Take ten pieces for yourself, for this is what the LORD, the God of Israel, says: 'See, I am going to tear the kingdom out of Solomon's hand and give you ten tribes.

### I Sam. 2:34

<sup>34</sup> " 'And what happens to your two sons, Hophni and Phinehas, will be a sign to you—they will both die on the same day.

### 上帝是公義的;惡人不會「順服」;他們違背上帝的 1.18.4 吩咐

# GOD IS JUST; WICKED DO NOT "OBEY", BUT **VIOLATE GOD'S COMMAND**

就算上帝使用無上帝者的作為來成就祂的旨意,祂還是無可指責 Even when God uses the deeds of the godless for his purposes, he does not suffer reproach 1.18.4

我們要同樣答覆或消除另一種異議,即:若上帝不但利用惡人做祂的工具,而 具管制他們的計畫和情感, 祂就是一切罪惡的發動者; 人若執行祂的命令, 服從祂 的旨意,就不應該受責罰。他們這樣說,乃是把祂的旨意和祂的教訓混為一談;其 實有無數例子證明這兩者間的大差別。因為雖然押沙龍污辱他父親的妃嬪是上帝的 旨意,藉此懲罰大衛犯姦淫的罪(撒下 16: 22), 祂卻沒有吩咐那不孝子亂倫, 除非他所行的,是如大衛所說,示每對他的侮辱是上帝的吩咐一樣(撒下 16: 10-11)。當大衛承認示每的咒詛是出自上帝的吩咐,他決不是贊許示每的順從,仿佛 那魯莽而無價值的人是履行上帝的教訓: 他承認示每的舌即是上帝的鞭, 所以他耐 性地接受這責罵。我們應當記得,上帝雖利用惡人完成祂暗中的命令,但他們既故 意違犯祂的教訓,所以他們還不能算是順從教訓而獲得原諒。

# 撒下 16: 10, 22

- <sup>10</sup> 王說: 洗魯雅的兒子, 我與你們有何關涉呢?他咒罵是因耶和華吩咐他說: 你要 咒罵大衛。如此, 誰敢說你為什麼這樣行呢?
- "大衛又對亞比篩和眾臣僕說:我親生的兒子尚且尋索我的性命,何況這便雅憫人 呢?由他咒罵吧!因為這是耶和華吩咐他的。
- 2 於是人為押沙龍在宮殿的平頂上支搭帳棚;押沙龍在以色列眾人眼前,與他父的 妃嬪親近。

In this way, also, the other objection is solved, or rather vanishes by itself: if God not only uses the work of the ungodly, but also governs their plans and intentions, he is the author o all wickedness; and therefore men are undeservedly damned if they carry out what God has decreed because they obey his will. His will is wrongly confused with his precept: innumerable examples clearly show how utterly different these two are. For even though, when Absalom committed adultery with his father's wives [II Sam. 16:22], God willed to punish David's adultery with this shameful act, yet he did not for this reason bid the wicked son commit incest, unless perhaps with regard to David, as he speaks concerning Shimei's railings. For when he confesses that Shimei curses him at God's command [II Sam. 16:10-11], he does not at all commend his obedience, as if that impudent dog were obeying God's authority. But recognizing his tongue to be a scourge of God, he patiently bears the chastisement. We ought, indeed, to hold fast by this: while God accomplishes through the wicked what he has decreed by his secret judgment, they are not excusable, as if they had obeyed his precept which out of their own lust they deliberately break.

#### I Sam. 16:10-11, 22

- <sup>10</sup> Jesse had seven of his sons pass before Samuel, but Samuel said to him, "The LORD has not chosen these."
- So he asked Jesse, "Are these all the sons you have?" "There is still the youngest," Jesse answered, "but he is tending the sheep." Samuel said, "Send for him; we will not sit down [a] until he arrives."
- Then Saul sent word to Jesse, saying, "Allow David to remain in my service, for I am pleased with him."

上帝在暗中支配壞人的行為,可以耶羅波安被選為王一事為例(王上 12: 20);因為眾百姓擅自更改上帝所立的王統,和背叛大衛家,所以他們的魯莽和昏 迷受到嚴厲的責備(何 8: 4);但我們知道,這宗事正是上帝的旨意。何西阿的 記載似乎也有矛盾:因為在某處上帝說,以色列王國的成立未經祂的允許,而且與 祂的旨意相反;但在另一處說,祂在忿怒中立耶羅波安為王(何 13: 11)。耶羅 波安為王既非上帝的旨意,然而上帝又要叫他為王,這兩宗事如何調和呢?是這樣 的: 當然是因為眾民若背叛大衛的家, 是解脫上帝所加於他們的束縛, 同時, 上 帝也有懲罰那忘恩負義的所羅門的背叛。所以我們可以看出,上帝一面恨不忠的 人,一面卻很公正地為了另一目的而註定了以色列人的背叛。耶羅波安意外地被上 帝膏為王;同樣,《聖經》也說,上帝興起仇敵,剝奪所羅門之子的一部份王國  $(\mp \pm 11: 23)$  .

# 王上 12: 20, 23

- ◎ 以色列眾人聽見耶羅波安回來了,就打發人去請他到會眾面前,立他作以色列眾 人的王。除了猶大支派以外,沒有順從大衛家的。
- 23 你去告訴所羅門的兒子猶大王羅波安和猶大、便雅憫全家,並其餘的民說:

#### 何 8: 4

4 他們立君王,卻不由我;他們立首領,我卻不認。他們用金銀為自己製造偶像, 以致被剪除。

# 何 13: 11

11 我在怒氣中將王賜你,又在烈怒中將王廢去。

Now the choice of King Jeroboam [I Kings 12:20] shows clearly that what men do perversely is of God, and ruled by his hidden providence. In this choice the rashness and insanity of the people is condemned for having perverted the order sanctioned by God, and having faithlessly fallen away from the house of David. And yet we know that he willed him to be anointed. Accordingly in Hosea's statements there likewise occurs a certain appearance of contradiction: for God complained in one place that that kingdom had been established without his knowledge and against his will [Hos. 8:4]; yet elsewhere he proclaims that in his anger he had given King Jeroboam [Hos. 13:11]. How will these statements agree: that Jeroboam did not reign b God's will and yet was appointed king by the same God? The answer is obviously that the people could neither revolt from the house of David without shaking off the divinely imposed yoke, **nor was God himself deprived of the freedom to punish Solomon thus for his ungratefulness.** Therefore we see how God does not will a breach of faith, yet with another end in view, justly wills defection. Hence likewise, contrary to expectation, he compelled Jeroboam with sacred anointing to become king. In this way the Sacred History says that an enemy was raised up by God [I Kings 11:23] to divest Solomon's son of part of his kingdom.

# I Kings 12:20, 23

- When all the Israelites heard that Jeroboam had returned, they sent and called him to the assembly and made him king over all Israel. Only the tribe of Judah remained loyal to the house of David.
- <sup>23</sup> "Say to Rehoboam son of Solomon king of Judah, to the whole house of Judah and Benjamin, and to the rest of the people,

# Hos. 8:4

<sup>4</sup> They set up kings without my consent; they choose princes without my approval. With their silver and gold they make idols for themselves to their own destruction.

#### Hos. 13:11

<sup>11</sup> So in my anger I gave you a king, and in my wrath I took him away.

讀者應當仔細考慮這兩件事:上帝的心願原是要眾百姓受一個王的統治,所以把國分裂為二,是違反祂的旨意;然而這分裂卻是導源於祂的旨意。先知以預言和達油式,在那從無做王之念的耶羅波安心裹引起了繼承王國的希望,那麼,若是上帝不知道或是不願意的話,這事決無成功的希望,因為這事的成就是出於上帝的吩咐。但眾民的背叛也受了公正的斥責,因為他們叛離大衛的後代是違背上帝旨意的。以後又說,羅波安藐視人民的原因是出於上帝,為的是要應驗祂藉祂的僕人亞希雅而說的話(參王上12:5;代下10:15)。試想,以色列十二支派的聯邦因違反上帝的旨意而分裂,然而十支派和所羅門的兒子疏遠,也是由於上帝的旨意。我們可以再舉一個相似的例子:亞哈的眾子被殺與後代被滅絕是有人民的同意和援助的(參王下10:7-10)。耶戶知道「主的話一句也沒有落空,」而且「祂藉著祂僕人以利亞所說的話都完成了。」然而祂同時很公正地斥責撒瑪利亞的人,因為他們在殺戮亞哈子孫的事上有份;他說:「你們都是公義的嗎?看啊,我背叛了我的 主人,將他殺了;可是,這些人卻是誰殺的呢?」假如我沒有看錯的話,我想我現在已經解釋明白,一件事怎樣能夠同時表現人的罪惡,和上帝的公義。

#### 王上12:5

5 羅波安對他們說:你們暫且去,第三日再來見我。民就去了。

### 王下 10: 7-10

- 7 大衛聽見了,就差派約押統帶勇猛的全軍出去。
- <sup>8</sup> 亞捫人出來,在城門前擺陣, 瑣巴與利合的亞蘭人、陀伯人,並瑪迦人,另在郊 野擺陣。
- <sup>9</sup> 約押看見敵人在他前後擺陣,就從以色列軍中挑選精兵,使他們對著亞蘭人擺 陣。
- 10 其餘的兵交與他兄弟亞比篩,對著亞捫人擺陣。

Let my readers weigh both these things with care. Because it had please God that his people be governed under the hand of one king, when the nation is split into two parts, it is done against his will. And yet the beginning of the separation came from the will of the same God. For surely when the prophet both by word of mouth and by the token of anointing stirred Jeroboam, who was thinking of no such thing, to the expectation of the kingdom, this was not done without the knowledge or against the will of God, who so commanded it to be done. And yet the rebellion of the people is rightly condemned because against God's will they revolted from David's descendants. For this reason, also, it is afterward added that Rehoboam haughtily despised the petitions of the people and that this was done by God to establish the Word which he had proclaimed through the hand of Ahijah his servant [I Kings 12:15]. Note how it is against God's will that the sacred unity is broken, and yet how by his same will the ten tribes are estranged from Solomon's son. Besides this, there is another similar example, where with the people's consent - indeed, with them lending a hand - the sons of King Ahab are murdered, and all his posterity exterminated [II Kings 10:7]. Indeed, Jehu rightly repots that "nothing of God's words has fallen to the ground, but he has done what he said by the hand of his servant Elijah" [II Kings 10:10 p.]. And yet not without cause did he rebuke the citizens of Samaria because they had given assistance. "Are you righteous?" he asks; "if I conspired against my master, who killed all these?" [II Kings 10:8; II Kings 10:9; Vg.] I have, unless I am mistaken, already clearly explained how in the same act as man's evil deed shows itself, so God's justice shines forth.

# I Kings 12:15

<sup>15</sup> So the king did not listen to the people, for this turn of events was from the LORD, to fulfill the word the LORD had spoken to Jeroboam son of Nebat through Ahijah the Shilonite.

# II Kings 10:7, 8, 9, 10

- When the letter arrived, these men took the princes and slaughtered all seventy of them. They put their heads in baskets and sent them to Jehu in Jezreel.
- <sup>8</sup> When the messenger arrived, he told Jehu, "They have brought the heads of the princes." Then Jehu ordered, "Put them in two piles at the entrance of the city gate until morning."

- The next morning Jehu went out. He stood before all the people and said, "You are innocent. It was I who conspired against my master and killed him, but who killed all these?
- Know then, that not a word the LORD has spoken against the house of Ahab will fail. The LORD has done what he promised through his servant Elijah."

對謙虛的人,奧古斯丁的答覆常是足夠的;他說:「既然上帝**交付**了基督,基督交付了祂自己的身體,而猶大又交付了主;在這交付中,為什麼上帝是公義的,而人是有罪的呢?因為他們的**行為**雖同,**動機**卻不同。」關於我們所說,人雖在祂公義的支配之下做非法的事,與上帝的意旨還是不能一致。如果有人覺得這意見更難接受,那麼,要解答這個矛盾,就當記得奧古斯丁在別處所說的:「上帝雖在惡人的心中隨意而行,然而還是按他們的罪報應他們,所以,誰能不恐懼那些審判呢?」祂雖令猶大出賣他的兒子,以致兒子受死,但是,把猶大的不忠歸之於上帝,正如把救贖的歌頌歸之於猶大一樣,都是不合的。所以奧古斯丁在別處又告訴我們,上帝在審查中所追究的,不是人可能做了什麼,也不是他們已經做了什麼,乃是他們企圖要做什麼,為的是**要察看人心中的計畫和意志**。

And for modest minds this answer of Augustine will always be enough: "Since the Father delivered up the Son, and Christ, his body, and Judas, his Lord, why in this delivering up is God just and man guilty, unless because in the one thing they have done, the cause of their doing it is not one?" But if some people find difficulty in what we are now saying – namely, that there is no agreement between God and man, where man does by God's just impulsion what he ought not to do – let them recall what the same Augustine points out in another passage: "Who does not tremble at these judgments, where God works even in evil men's hearts whatever he wills, yet renders to them according to their deserts?" And surely in Judas' betrayal it will be no more right, because God himself both willed that his Son be delivered up and delivered him up to death, to ascribe the guilt of the crime to God than to transfer the credit for redemption to Judas. Therefore the same writer correctly points out, elsewhere, that in this examination God does not inquire into what men have been able to do, or what they have done, but what they have willed to do, so that purpose and will may be taken into account.

凡覺得這種作法近於苛刻的人,當想一想自己的頑固是何等的不可容忍,因為他們對《聖經》多次很明白證實的真理,為著超過了他們的理解而橫加反對;可是他們所反對的這種真理,若不是上帝明知是對我們有益的話,就不會吩咐先知和使徒們宣揚出來。我們若能虛懷若谷地接受《聖經》上所交付的一切教訓,不容稍有例外,就有智慧了。但那些存心驕傲狂妄,反對這教義的人,顯然是反對上帝,所以不值得多加駁斥了。

Let those for whom this seems harsh consider for a little while how bearable their squeamishness is in refusing a thing attested by clear Scriptural proofs because it exceeds their mental capacity, and find fault that things are put forth publicly, which if God had not judged useful for men to know, he would never have bidden his prophets and apostles

to teach. For our wisdom ought to be nothing else than to embrace with humble teachableness, and at least without finding fault, whatever is taught in Sacred Scripture. Those who too insolently scoff, even though it is clear enough that they are prating against God, are not worthy of a longer refutation.